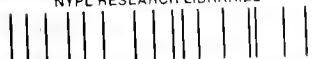


NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 06249823 7

18



1000

1000
(Stat. Table)

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



Franklin

MORRIS'S
MEMORIAL HISTORY
OF
STATEN ISLAND

NEW YORK

VOLUME I

IRA K. MORRIS

MEMORIAL PUBLISHING COMPANY
132 NASSAU STREET
NEW YORK



Copyright 1898

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

PAGE

AQUEHONGA MAN-ACK-NONG.	1
---------------------------------	---

Staten Island Before Its Discovery—Glacial Period—Hunting Grounds of Various Tribes of Indians—Key to the Western Continent—Topography of the Island—Grand Scenery—Length and Width of the Island—The Narrows—The Kills—Springs, Rocks, etc.—The Climate—Indian Stone-head—Resources.

CHAPTER II

THE NATIVE INDIANS.	10
-----------------------------	----

Origin of Various Tribes—Opinions of Early Writers—The Indian Languages—Traditions—Accepted Theory—Savages Occupied the Island—Subject to Mohawks—The Raritans—The Brainards—Burial Places—Billopp Burying Ground—Articles of Cultivation—Dress—Implements—Indian Year—Wampum—Burials—Last of the Aquehongas.

CHAPTER III

DISCOVERY OF THE ISLAND.	20
----------------------------------	----

Christopher Columbus—The Northmen—Geographical Boundaries—Sebastian Cabot—First Expedition—Sir Thomas Pert—Jean de Verrazano—Hudson Anchored Near Staten Island—His Return to Sea—Expedition Into the Kills—Attacked by Indians—John Coleman—Half-Moon at Anchor in the Kills—First Indian Shot—Hudson in the North River—Trading With Indians—Indian Attacks—Dutch East India Company—Signal Stations.

CHAPTER IV

SETTLEMENT OF STATEN ISLAND.	25
--------------------------------------	----

Fur Ship Here, 1610—Anchored in the Narrows—An Attempt to Land—Hendrick Cortiansen—Successful Expedition—Other Enterprises—Grant Expired, 1617—Trade of New Netherlands—Intentions of First Settlers—Province Organized—Peter Minuet—Walloons Arrive, 1624—George Jansen de Rapelje—Rapsie—First Child Born—Indian Traffic—The Patroons—Michael Pauw—Extinguishing Indian Titles—David Pietersen de Vries—Block Fort—Huts—Wouter Van Twiller—Ship Eyckenboom—Cornelis Melyn—Other Attempts at Settlement—Island Again Purchased—Original Deed.

CHAPTER V

THE DUTCH AT OUDE DORP.	32
---------------------------------	----

First Settlement—Seven Holland Huts—Farming and Fur Trading—The Dutch Character—Siege of Harlem—Superb Soldiers—Conflict of Races—Director Van Twiller's Maladministration—Stealing Hogs Leads to War—Indians Taxed—Kieft's Distillery—Indians Given Rum—Murder Common—The Island Invaded—Oude Dorp Destroyed—Roger Williams—Oude Dorp Rebuilt and Destroyed—Race War—Mohawks Lay Tribute—Indians Murdered—Indian Villages Burned—Oude Dorp Again Built and Destroyed—The Peach War.

CHAPTER VI

PAGE

THE WALDENSES AT STONY BROOK.	40
---------------------------------------	----

Block Fort—Better Understanding Between Natives—Stony Brook, 1658—First County Seat—Waldensian Church—Old Dwellings—Religion of the Waldenses—Story of Their Persecution—Old Cemetery—Waldensian Industries—Peter Waldo—Romance Language—Ancient Description—Chief Lo-ha-taet-tah—Old Families—Rose and Crown—First Marriage—First Natural Death—First Court House and County Jail.

CHAPTER VII

STORY OF THE HUGUENOTS.	46
---------------------------------	----

Persecutions and Struggles—Meaning of the Term—Gaul—Clovis and Clotilda—French Converted—The Reformation—Church Polity—The Bible, 1224—Charles VIII—Burning the Martyrs—Duke of Orleans—Period of Terror—Gate of Fourgon—Hugh Capet—Exiled Settlers—Massacre of St. Bartholomew—Paris Ravished—Louis XIV—Edict of Nantes—Henry XIV—Religious Worship—Waldensian Church—Early Record—Old French Church—Seaman Estate—Historic Bridge—French Graveyard—Huguenot Sabbath.

CHAPTER VIII

UNDER DUTCH RULE.	54
---------------------------	----

New Netherlands—Dutch Aggressiveness—New Amsterdam—Trading Posts—Discoveries—Captain Hendrickson—Five Nations—The Puritans—War—Dutch West India Company—Peter Minuet—Schout Fiscal—Exports, 1626—Killian Van Rensselaer—Michael Pauw—Pavonia—Minnet Recalled—Dominie Evaradus Bogardus—English Colonies—Restrictions Taken Off—Dutch Owners Assaulted—Emigrants from Lynn—Peter Stuyvesant—New Amsterdam Incorporated—Conspiracies—Grant to Duke of York—Arrival of Colonel Nichols.

CHAPTER IX

ENGLISH COLONIAL GOVERNMENT.	67
--------------------------------------	----

Nichols Governor of the Province—Indian Deeds—Johannas de Decker—Elizabethtown Settled—Colonel Francis Lovelace—The Surrender—New Orange, 1670—New Patent—Governor Edmund Andros—Lt.-Governor Broekholst—Governor Thomas Dongan—Duke of York—Printing Press—Jesuit Priests—William of Orange—Jacob Leister—Free Government—French Amoyanee—Governor Ingoldsby—Suppression of Piracy—Colonel Schuyler—The Iroquois—George Clinton—Gen. Robert Monckton.

CHAPTER X

ESTABLISHMENT OF THE COURTS.	77
--------------------------------------	----

Original Dutch Settlers—Directors and Council—Schout Fiscal's Powers—Staten Island Patroons—Court of Appeal—Religion a Law—Suspicious Sects—Persecutions—Political Division—Ridings—Justices of the Peace—Court of Sessions—Court of Assize—Twelve Jurors—Arbitrary Laws—Finanees—Animal Earmarks—Early Court Records—Intoxicating Liquors—John Palmer—First Court—Colonel Aug. Graham's Court—Crimes—Simon Van Name—Documents—County Justices—Execution—Martial Law.

CHAPTER XI

PAGE

STATEN ISLAND SEPARATED FROM NEW JERSEY.	85
--	----

Divided by a Slight River—Our Indians Came from that State—Aretur Kull—Communipaw—Staten Island Dutchmen—Primitive Haunts—Intolerance—Bay of New York—Dutch Negroes—Astrologers—Idea of Holland—Convivial Scenes—Taxes—Three Elements—Plantations—Ruptures—Militia—Duke of York's Decision—Christopher Billopp's Services—Dutch Claims—Dongan's Friendship—The Quakers—Border Troubles—Sectional Hatred—Old Ferries—Hand of Progress.

CHAPTER XII

STATEN ISLAND IN 1676.	93
--------------------------------	----

Labadists—The Hoofden—Exploring Staten Island—"Size" of the Island—Surroundings—A Prophecy—Game—One Hundred Families—No Church—Watering Place—Oude Dorp—Lost in the Woods—Cross Woman—Nieuwe Dorp—Kindly Received—Bad Road—On the Plantations—Pierre Gardinier—Mill Creek.

CHAPTER XIII

THE STORY OF THE DONGANS.	99
-----------------------------------	----

Governor Thomas Dongan—First Assembly—Richmond County—Duke of York King—Persecution of Huguenots—Rumor of a Massacre—Mob—Militia—Fear on Staten Island—Dongan's Ship—Old Mill—Palmer's Run—Manor of Cassiltowne—Old Manor House—Manor Road—Old Mill—The Causeway—Dongan's Heirs—His Liberality—His Retirement—Death—Family Name—The Family To-day—Destruction of the Manor House.

CHAPTER XIV

RICHMOND COUNTY.	113
--------------------------	-----

Changes in Government—Two Hundred Families, 1683—County Tax—Chief Settlement—Court House and County Jail—The Courts—Traditions—Towns Formed, 1688—Three Precincts—People Unrestful—Captain Jacob Milborne's Company—Riots—Arrests—Tax on "Negers"—Property Confiscated—A "Petition"—Legal Business—Court House Abandoned, 1729—Old Red Jail, 1710—British Troops at Richmond—County Documents—Church and Court House Burned—Quarrels—Lotteries—Population—New Offices—Progress Since.

CHAPTER XV

OFFICIAL LIST OF OFFICE-HOLDERS.	124
--	-----

Members of Provincial Congress—Representatives in Congress—Presidential Electors—State Senators—Members of State Constitutional Conventions—Regents of the University—Judges of the County Court—District Attorneys—Surrogates Under Colonial Government—Surrogates Under Federal Government—School Commissioners—Sheriffs—Members of the Colonial Assembly—Members of Assembly Under State Government—Supervisors in the Early Colonial Times—Supervisors in the Several Towns in Richmond County Since the Beginning of the Year 1766—County Treasurers.

CHAPTER XVI

PAGE

THE BILLOPPS AND THEIR HOME. 135

Barnard Billopp, of Coventry—A Race of Soldiers—Close to the Crown for Generations—Christopher the First on Staten Island—Decided the Island's Location—The Bentley—Billopp House—Grant of Land—Billopp's Marriage—His Commissions—His Troubles—Lost at Sea—Eugenía—Thomas Farmer—Old Headstones—Colonel Christopher Billopp—Jane Seaman—Judge Seaman—In the War of the Revolution—Farewell to the Old Home—Manor of Bentley Sold—Life in Nova Scotia.

CHAPTER XVII

THE BILLOPPS AND THEIR HOME (*Concluded*). 144

Once the Scene of Splendor—Old-time Hospitality—Distinguished Guests—The Famous Interview—Military Barrack—"Repentant Rebels"—Old Kitchen—Fireplace—The Parlor—The Garret—Slave Quarters—Memento of History—All Sacrificed for Royalty—Colonel Billopp's Death—His Family—The Last Visitor of the Family—Colonel Simcoe's Letter—The Old Manor To-day—An Historical Commission Endeavoring to Preserve It.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR. 152

Wars Following Closely—Staten Islanders Bearing a Part—Good Soldiers—Sympathy for the Indians—Sufferings of the Colonies—Great Britain and France, 1756—Cause of the War—Colonel George Washington—General Braddock—The People Aroused—European Wars—General Amherst—British Army Rest Upon Staten Island—Sir Jeffrey Amherst Knighted at New Dorp—Otway's Regulars—Governor Monckton—Staten Island Farmers—The Fleet—Two Staten Island Companies—War Funds—Thanksgiving.

CHAPTER XIX

APPROACHING THE REVOLUTION. 160

The Stamp Act—Sons of Liberty—New York Congress—Colonists Pledged—Collision and Bloodshed—Lexington—Tax on Tea—A Scene in the Lower Bay—Congress in Philadelphia—Provincial Committee—Governor Tryon—The American Character—Spirit of Liberty—Formal Requisition Upon the Colonies—The Tax List—The Crisis—Arrival of Man-of-War—British Troops Land in Boston—The People Preparing for War.

CHAPTER XX

PREPARING FOR THE STRUGGLE. 172

Angry Debate in England—Excitement Here—Boston Massacre—People Insulted—Appeal to Have Troops Withdrawn—The News on Staten Island—Excitement in Richmond—Formal Meeting—Three Factions—Contentions—Geographical Position—Friend and Foe—Perilous Situation of Our People—General Gage—Eminent Men—Patrick Henry—Wert's Tribute—"Life, Liberty, and Fortune"—Parliament Taking Action—The Provinces in Arms.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER XXI

PAGE

COMMENCEMENT OF THE REVOLUTION.	180
---	-----

Lexington—Active Preparations—Excitement by Loyalists—Adams and Hancock—People Flocking Together—Grenadiers Embarked—The Provincials—Battle of Concord—Wrongs of America—Practical Results—Army Organized—The King's Troops—Bunker Hill—Warren Killed—Howe's Bold Attack—Americans Retreat—Critical Situation—George Washington Appointed General—An "Appeal to Heaven."

CHAPTER XXII

THE CRISIS ON STATEN ISLAND.	192
--------------------------------------	-----

Great Excitement—Arrival of the Mail Coach—Three Thousand Residents—Organization of Troops—Meeting at Smoking Point—Dutch Descendants Wanted Independence—Colonel Billopp's Influence—Staten Islanders Watched—Committee of Observation—Intercourse Stopped—Provincial Delegates—Paul Micheau—Congress Censures Richmond County—Colonel Herd's Raid—Staten Islanders Arrested—Billopp's Militia—Lord Stirling—Peter Poillon.

CHAPTER XXIII

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND.	203
---------------------------------------	-----

Dawn of a New Era—Declaration of Independence—A Nation Born—Every Man Friend or Foe—Sir William Howe's Army Lands on Staten Island—Headquarters at New Dorp—Lord Howe's Arrival—Awaiting General Clinton—Building of Redoubts—Fourth of July, 1776—General Howe Read the Declaration in the Rose and Crown—Council of War—Proclamation—The British Army—A Great Fleet—Elizabethtown Aroused—Hessians and Waldeckers—Battle of Long Island—The Highlanders—List of Troops.

CHAPTER XXIV

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND (<i>Continued</i>).	216
--	-----

Spirit of Gloom—Washington's Loss—Military Movements—Continental Retreating—Hessians Taken Away—Aaron Burr's Plans—Knyphausen's Expeditions—General Mercer's Raid—Tory Spies—Battles in Richmond Village—Retreat to Blazing Star—Surprised at Green Ridge—Bedell Homestead—Americans Crossed the Kills—Staten Islanders Rewarded—Howe Starts for Philadelphia—Fight on Morning Star Road—A General Skirmish—Trenches at Prince's Bay—General Campbell's March—Both Sides Active.

CHAPTER XXV

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND (<i>Concluded</i>).	228
--	-----

Raids on Staten Island—Scenes at Holland's Hook—Dickenson's Brigade—Ships of War—Orders to Farmers—Prisoners—Governor Livingston—Smuggling—Cole's Ferry—Expedition to Great Kills—Royal Artillery—Hard Winter of 1778-79—General Stirling's Raid—Decker's House Burned—Minister Caldwell—Springfield—Coldstream Guards—Church Burned—Mrs. Caldwell Murdered—British Retreat—Fight at Prince's Bay—Sir Guy Carleton—General Bruce—War Ended.

	PAGE
CHAPTER XXVI	
SIMCOE AND THE QUEEN'S RANGERS.	243

Notorious Organization—All Loyalists—Its Officers—Active Services—The Disaffected—Marching to Billopp's Point—Raids—Simcoe Wounded—Taken to Prison—Regiment at Richmond—Letter from Major André—Lord Rawdon—Re-doubts—The Gun-boat—The Flag-staff—Billopp's Men—Winter Campaign—British Deserters.

CHAPTER XXVII	
SIMCOE AND THE QUEEN'S RANGERS (<i>Concluded</i>).	253

No Deserters—Simcoe's Orders—Plan to Capture Washington—Fight in New Jersey—Lee's Excellent Troops—Small Force Left on the Island—Simcoe's Opinion of André—American Raid—Lafayette's "Designs"—The Highlanders—Benedict Arnold—Queen's Rangers at Yorktown—Simcoe's Subsequent Career—The Men Went to Nova Scotia.

CHAPTER XXVIII	
SKINNER'S BRIGADE OF AMERICAN LOYALISTS.	261

General Howe Pleased—Great Expectations—General Cortland Skinner—The Kruzer [Pelton] House—The Six Battalions—General Skinner's Personal Service—Official List of Officers—"Skinner's Greens"—In the South—Foraging—Many Captured—Captain Cornelius Hatfield—The Tories—At Monmouth—"Moodie, the Terror"—In Many Battles—Fourth Battalion With Arnold—Roster, 1783—Brigade Disbanded.

CHAPTER XXIX	
THE JERSEY PRISON SHIP.	271

Effect on Public Mind—Stories Not Exaggerated—Howe's Order—Prisoners Distributed from Staten Island—Sugar House Prison—The Jersey Off New Dorp Lane—Contagion on Board—Over Ten Thousand Victims—Imprisonment Equal to Death—David Sproat—Dring's Description—Hospital Ships—The First Night—Messes—Burying the Dead—Ship Rotted and Sank—Tammany's Appeal—Wallabout Committee—A Great Procession—No Monument Yet—Old Brooklynites—Daughters of the American Revolution.

CHAPTER XXX	
MARGARET MONCRIEFFE ON STATEN ISLAND.	280

British Officers' Families—Their Position among the Colonies—Margaret at Elizabethtown—Related to Governor Livingston—In General Putnam's Family—Meets Major Burr—Sent to Staten Island—Memoirs—Sir William Howe's Guest—A Father's Cruelty—Married Captain Coghlin—Both Lead Sad Lives—Was Margaret a Spy?—She Shone in European Society—Both Died in Squalid Poverty.

[CHAPTER XXXI	
THE NEW DORP DUELLING GROUND.	287

Camp Hill—The Famous Hollow—A Gambling Resort—Howe's Fruitless Exertions—Officers Dismissed—Sad Suicide—Where Many Officers Fought—Young Hamilton—A Romantic Duel—Unmarked Graves—Love Lane—New Dorp Escapes One Dishonor—William Cullen Bryant's Story—Coleman's Death—Duel an Affair of Honor—The Scene To-day—A Revery.

CHAPTER XXXII

PAGE

INCIDENTS OF THE REVOLUTION.	293
--------------------------------------	-----

An Old Patriot Murdered—Skirmishes—Lurking of Simcoe's Men—Houses Plundered—A Famous Tree Destroyed—Nathaniel Britton—Sad Plight of a Girl—British Officer Whipped—Notorious Young Tory—The Ravine—Foot-path—An Avenger—Was Washington Ever on Staten Island?—Concerned About the Place—Governor Tryon's Letter—Royal Proclamation—Cucklestown Inn—Major Andre's Will—Captain James Stuart—Hatfield's Exploits—Bay Frozen Over.

CHAPTER XXXIII

INCIDENTS OF THE REVOLUTION (<i>Concluded</i>).	303
---	-----

Visit from "Cowboys"—An Ambush—A Deserter—Flag of Truce Boat—Hessian Paymaster Robbed—Major William Crane—Nathaniel Robbins—Abraham and Peter Prall—Foiled Robbers—Old Mr. Housman—Officers Quarters—Punishing a Soldier—Brave Boy—Captain John Voke—A Tory Hanged—Money Found—Old Moravian Church—Signal Tree—Old People Interviewed—Dutch Church—Judge Mersereau—School House—Bull's Head Tavern.

CHAPTER XXXIV

THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS.	318
---------------------------------	-----

Two Flags—Common Interests—A Matter of History—Staten Islanders Subjects of Great Britain—Between Two Fires—A Sudden Change—Liberal Subscription—Headquarters of Tories—The Hatfields—Entering British Service—Whigs Not Always Fair—Office-holders—Churches Recruiting Stations—How the Masses Served—Testimony of Prominent Men—The Number Killed—How the Loyalists Suffered—Twelve Thousand Embarked—An Historic Controversy.

CHAPTER XXXV

THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS (<i>Continued</i>).	331
--	-----

Alston, David—Aiken, Moses—Ansley, Ozias—Armstrong, Richard—Barbarie, John—Barnes, George—Barnes, Joshua—Barton, Thomas—Bayley, Richard—Beardsley, Rev. John—Be Bow, James—Bedell, Cornelius—Bedell, Freeman—Bedell, John—Bilopp, Christopher—Blake, Isaac—Bleau, Waldron—Bodine, John—Bonnell, Isaac—Bonsell, Richard—Bowden, Thomas—Brewerton, George—Brittain, Joseph—Brittain, Nathaniel—Burger, James L.—Child, Joseph—Chipman, Ward—Christopher, Richard—Clark, William—Cooke, Rev. Samuel—Cotson, Enoch—Crocheron, Ann—Cortelyou, Aaron—Cunningham, James—Decker, Isaac—Decker, Benjamin—De Lancey, Oliver—Dongan, Edward—Dongan, Henry—Drake, Jeremiah—Dunn, John—Du Puy, William—Earle, Dr. Charles—Fanning, Edward—Ford, John—Frost, John—Garrison, Harmon—Guyon, Peter—Haggerty, Patriek—Harris, Richard—Hatfield, Cornelius—Hatfield, John Smith.

	PAGE
CHAPTER XXXVI	
THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS (<i>Concluded</i>).	342

Haycock, Morris—Hillyerd, Asher—Housman, Garret—Housman, George—Housman, Joseph—Insley, Christopher—Insley, Ozias—Jarvis, William—Jones, Abraham—Latourette, Richard—Lakeman, William—Lawrence, Richard—Lisk, John—Longstreet, John—MacCoy, Robert—Manee, Abraham—Manee, David—Manee, William—McGill, John—Moneriette, James—Moore, David—Mundy, Nathaniel—Nicholson, Arthur—Packard, Benjamin—Phair, William—Barry—Poillon, Oscar—Powell, Enoch—Purcell, John—Randall, Bornt G.—Robbins, John—Ryers, Daniel G.—Ryerson, Martin—Sayre, James—Seaman, Benjamin—Seamans, Thomas—Seaton, William—Skinner, Cortland—Skinner, Philip—Kearney—Simonson, John—Spragg, Thomas—VanBuskirk, Abraham—Van Pelt, Sarah—Wogham, Abraham—Wynant, Abraham.

CHAPTER XXXVII	
OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES.	354

Topographical Appearance—Many Names Forgotten—Creeks—Old Maps—Environments of New York—Chronology—Redoubts—Rivers—Bays—Points—Coves—Brooks—Necks—Islands—Valleys—Lakes.

CHAPTER XXXVIII	
OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES (<i>Continued</i>).	372

Rifts or Reefs—Shoals—Flats—Bars—Hills—Knolls—Terraces—Heights—Springs—Ponds—Islands—Swamps—Plains—Meadows—Fields.

CHAPTER XXXIX	
OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES (<i>Concluded</i>).	391

Old Ferries—Landings—Roads—Lanes—Streets—Avenues—Basins—Wells—Flag Staff—The Telegraph—Elm Tree—The Shores—Manors—Dikes—Mines—Clay Beds—Woods—Camps—Towns—Corners—Parks—Views—Groves—Nooks, etc.

FULL-PAGE ILLUSTRATIONS.

Ira K. Morris.....	Frontispiece
	PAGE
Daniel D. Tompkins.....	96
Cornelius Vanderbilt.....	208
Erastus Brooks	304

ILLUSTRATIONS IN TEXT.

	PAGE
Henry Hudson.....	2
The Half Moon leaving Amsterdam.....	6
Indian Stone Head.....	10
The Half Moon.....	11
King James I.....	18
First View of New Amsterdam.....	23
The Flag of Holland.....	27
King Charles I.....	32
Flag of the West India Company.....	36
Waldensian Church.....	40
Peter Stuyvesant.....	44
King Charles II.....	48
Seal of New Amsterdam.....	52
King James II.....	57
Seal of New Netherland.....	61
DeVries	65
Original Crocheron Homestead.....	69
Arms of DeVries.....	73
King William III.....	77
A Dutch Windmill.....	81
Queen Mary	85
Original Corson Homestead.....	89
First County Court House.....	94
Queen Anne	97
King George II.....	102
Dongan House.....	106
Richard Lovelace.....	110
King George III.....	115
Lieut.-Colonel Christopher Billopp.....	119

	PAGE
Interview in Old Billopp House.....	124
Billopp Family Burying Ground.....	128
Old Billopp House.....	132
Old Billopp House, as it appeared in 1844.....	138
Room in Old Billopp House.....	144
Sir Edmund Andros.....	148
Seal of New Jersey.....	152
Gov. Thomas Dongan.....	156
The Dongan Arms.....	160
Britton Homestead.....	164
Walter Dongan.....	168
Dongan Mansion.....	172
Viscount Cornbury.....	176
Old Red Jail.....	180
Third County Court House.....	184
House in Prohibition Park.....	188
Present County Court House.....	192
General Thomas Gage.....	197
Old Christopher Homestead.....	201
Lord Bellomont.....	204
General William Howe.....	207
Old Rose and Crown Farm House.....	212
Old Black Horse Tavern.....	216
Original Sign of the Black Horse.....	220
Lord Cornwallis.....	224
Old Bedell Homestead, erected about 1670.....	228
Lord Stirling.....	232
James Fenimore Cooper.....	236
Old Latourette Homestead, for a time Lieut. Col. Simcoe's Head- quarters.....	241
Lieut.-Col. John Graves Simcoe, of the Queen's Rangers.....	243
Major André.....	247
Benedict Arnold.....	251
Old Cucklestowne Inn, where Major André wrote his Will.....	255
British Redoubt (Fort Richmond).....	259
Brigadier-Gen. Cortlandt Skinner.....	261
Old Kruzer Homestead, headquarters of Gen. Skinner.....	265
The Old Jersey Prison-Ship.....	269
Rhinelanders Sugar-House.....	273
Fountain Homestead, New Dorp.....	277
Perrine Homestead, Garretsons, erected 1668.....	281
Bull's Head Tavern, Headquarters of Tories.....	285
Tory Headquarters at Woodrow, during Revolution.....	288
Old Barton Homestead at New Dorp.....	293
Sir Guy Carleton.....	295
The Factory Pond, West New Brighton.....	300
Departure of British Troops.....	303

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
Grave of Jane, Wife of Christopher Billopp.....	307
Guyon Homestead, New Dorp, erected 1671.....	312
Old Van Duzer Homestead, Tompkinsville.....	316
Old Austin Mansion at Clifton.....	319
Barne Tysen Homestead, Karles Neck, erected 1680.....	323
Old Vanderbilt Homestead, Stapleton.....	327
Brittain Mill, Clove Lake, demolished several years since.....	331
Daniel Lake Homestead, New Dorp, 1690.....	335
Old Blake Homestead, near New Springfield.....	339
Marine Hospital, Stapleton, formerly Seamen's Retreat.....	343
Fort Lafayette in 1861.....	347
Pavilion Hotel, as it appeared in 1830.....	351
Pavilion Hotel, as it appears to-day.....	355
Belmont Hall, New Brighton, formerly Duffy's Military Academy.....	359
St. Mark's Hotel, New Brighton, recently demolished.....	363
Quarantine Hospital, Tompkinsville, destroyed by fire in 1858....	366
St. Andrew's Church, Richmond, originally erected in 1713.....	370
Fountain House, West New Brighton, originally erected 1750....	374
Old Place Mill, recently destroyed by fire.....	378
Vreeland Homestead, Butcherville, erected in 1674.....	382
Daniel D. Tompkins.....	385
Fort Richmond in Fort Wadsworth, on the Narrows.....	389
Old Moravian Church, and Parsonage, at New Dorp.....	397
The " Edwards " or " Scott " Homestead, West New Brighton....	402
Bodine's Inn, Castleton Corners, erected about 1785.....	407

PREFACE.



THE writing of history is a sacred trust. Unless the work is performed conscientiously and consistently, it is far better that it be not done at all; for without these essential principles the mission of the historian fails.

With this aim constantly in mind, I have spent fully fifteen busy years in collecting and compiling such material as I deemed necessary to form a faithful history of Staten Island.

Others have explored this field before me, and I have only credit to bestow upon their efforts. To such faithful compilers of local history as Mr. Raymond Tysen, Rev. I. P. Van Pelt, D.D., Prof. Charles Anthon, Mr. John J. Clute, Hon. Gabriel P. Disosway, Mr. William T. Davis and Mr. Richard M. Bayles, the public, as well as myself, owes a debt of gratitude that cannot easily be paid. Each has served his day honestly and intelligently, and I have profited by their labors, just as I may reasonably expect the historian of the future will profit by the labor which I have given to this work.

When I recall some of the unnumbered obstacles, however, which I have been compelled to encounter—such as the tedious searching for lost or often mutilated documents; the supreme indifference of some of the representatives of old families, who appear to possess little or no pride in ancestry or place of birth; and the glittering promises of assistance so frequently uttered with insincerity—I feel that there is no room for apologies on my part for any shortcomings in this work.

There are those, I believe, who will fully appreciate the labor, perseverance and patience required to write a work of this class, though it may be that they are comparatively few. But it is to the reading, thinking public that these volumes go out, as a candidate for favor, the writer asking that they be received and considered upon their merits alone.

I desire to acknowledge my indebtedness to Mr. William T. Davis, of New Brighton, (especially for his liberality in the chapters bearing upon the "Old Locations"); the late Dr. Ephraim Clark, of New

Dorp; Captain Richard Christopher, of West New Brighton; Adjutant-General William S. Stryker, of New Jersey; Hon. Joseph F. Barnard, of Poughkeepsie; County Clerk John H. Elsworth, of Richmond; Mr. M. J. Collins, Deputy City Clerk, Richmond Borough; Mr. Jonas Howe, Secretary of the New Brunswick (Canada) Historical Society; Mr. Robert H. Kilby, of the New York Historical Society; General J. Madison Drake, of Elizabeth, N. J.; ex-Sheriff John L. Dailey, of Richmond, and a great number of other kind friends, whose names I am compelled to omit at this time.

I am also indebted to the following works, the pages of which I have frequently perused in order to secure material for my own: Raymond Tysen's *Historical Sketches of Staten Island*, Rev. Dr. L. P. Van Pelt's *History of Staten Island*, Clute's *Annals of Staten Island*, Preston's *History of Richmond County*, (Richard M. Bayles, editor); Hon. Gabriel P. Disosway's *Historical Writings*, Force's *American Archives*, Hatfield's *History of Elizabeth*, Simcoe's *Military Journal*, Lossing's *Field-Book of the Revolution*, Sir Henry Clinton's *Narrative*, Barber & Howe's *New Jersey Historical Collections*, Rivington's *Gazette*, Sabine's *American Loyalists*, Sir William Howe's *Narrative*, Moore's *Diary of the American Revolution*, Dawson's *Historical Magazine*, Whitehead's *History of Perth Amboy*, Minutes of the Provincial Congress, Sparks's *Life of Washington*, Green's *Life of General Greene*, Pennsylvania Archives, Tarleton's *Southern Campaigns*, Albany Records, Broadhead's *History of New York*, New York Colonial Documents, Memorial History of New York, Lossing's *Empire State*, Bancroft's *History of the United States*, Collins' *Peerage*, Thompson's *History of Long Island*, Smith's *History of New Jersey*, East Jersey Records, New Haven Colonial Records, Bolton's *History of Westchester*, Journal of Congress, the public records of Richmond County, and many other sources.

Many an old garret and secluded nook, too, where had been collected the papers, letters, books and documents of succeeding generations of Staten Islanders, have become familiar haunts to the writer, for among the dust-covered timbers, long worn-out furniture and odd collection of ancient bric-a-brac, which in some instances had been left an ordinary life-time in the undisturbed possession of spider and wasp,—in these odd haunts I have picked up many a historical link in the inevitable chain of circumstances, that have made it possible for me to tell the story of the fading past.

Numbered, too, among the pleasant recollections of these busy

years, will be the interviews with old citizens whom I have met under the most varied circumstances; who have welcomed me with characteristic hospitality into their homes, or seated themselves beside me on the ferryboats, along the road-side hedges, in the fields and shops, or wherever, perchance, it was my good fortune to meet them. Some have passed on to their eternal slumber; and while their eyes will never rest upon these pages, their stories of the past will live on for future generations.

Others, still living, have in every conceivable manner aided in making the work a success. Aside from giving useful information they have cheerfully rendered that material support without which my labors would have been in vain. But to one and all, on behalf of the Publishers, as well as myself, our unstinted thanks are given.

L. K. M.

West New Brighton, S. I.,

June 15th, 1898.

CHAPTER I.

AQUEHONGA MAN-ACK-NONG.



THE readers of Staten Island history can go back but three centuries for authentic information relative to this particular part of the New World. Beyond that period there is no record, save that which has come down to us through the dim vista of time in uncertain legend and tradition.

But it requires no particular effort of the mind to picture these scenes even at that remote period. We can easily contemplate the rude wilderness that here existed before the vanguard of civilization made its advent—a period which, according to our knowledge, was unmarked by human progress, was uneventful by historic epochs, and was unhonored by acts that elevate, purify and ennoble the children of God.

We can believe that Staten Island was ever beautiful, and that the same Supreme Power which so graciously guides us and protects our homes to-day, also watched over with infinite mercy the rude beings that roamed through these primeval forests, amid the countless centuries that came in their appointed turn, and faded away into the dark mysteries of the past. We can believe that the magnificent hills and valleys, and plains and brooklets, that have become a source of unending pride to us in our day and generation, must have been equally as beautiful to the eye and as dear to the heart of the savage, untutored native, in those far-away, pre-historic days. We can believe that the flowers that budded and bloomed, and shed their wild fragrance along the narrow trails that wound their way over mountain and valley, were appreciated and loved none the less because savage eyes beheld them, and savage hands plucked them from their resting places on twig, and bough, and vine.

We can believe that the birds came here in springtime, and built their little home-nests among the giant trees and in the entangled thickets and hedges, and that with the sunrise they made the welkin ring with their melodious praises to the king of day. We can believe that the sun shone as brightly then, over this rude home of the savage, as it does over ours to-day; that the moon shed its silvery sheen as grandly then as now, and that the stars looked down upon the scene from the blue dome of heaven, with that same superb beauty which at this time attracts our attention, and rivets to them our unbounded

admiration. We can believe, too, that the seasons came at the command of the Great Architect of the universe, just as they do to-day; that spring, and summer, and autumn, and winter, brought in their appointed turn all that was necessary for the preservation, the happiness, and the existence of all that God had made and loved.

The formation of the Island, or its separation from the main land, is said to have occurred during the Glacial period, and scientists claim to have positive proof of this theory. To accept this as a full settle-



HENRY HUDSON.

ment of the question will be a much easier method of decision than to attempt to furnish proof to the contrary. We know, however, that it "belonged to the main land"—that is, that it was considered a part of what we now call New Jersey. Its geographical position renders this point absolute. And beyond this we know that its mountains, valleys and plains were all here in the far, pre-historic days, "grand in their wildness, and wild in their grandeur." For how many centuries it had been the home of the aborigines, is a question far beyond the comprehension of writers of even this enlightened day. It may never be known.

Events of a later date prove beyond question that the Island had long been the natural haunt of beasts of prey and reptiles, and that portions of it were regarded with considerable dread and fear by those who occupied it either as an abiding place, or for hunting purposes. Hence the first name we are able to discover that it bore—"The Place of the Bad Woods."¹ These wild woodlands contained giant trees that had withstood the storms of centuries, and served a purpose known to-day by Him only who made them and gave them life. The creeks and brooklets, too, served their mission by refreshing the rude inhabitants, the animals, and the birds and flowers, and giving moisture to the earth for Nature's own.

If it be remarkable that the Western Continent should have remained unknown for so many centuries to civilized man, it is, perhaps, still more remarkable that since its discovery and settlement it should have become the theatre of so many signal transactions, and have advanced so rapidly to its present civil, religious and political

¹ At the time of the discovery of the Island by Henry Hudson, it was called by the aborigines "Aquehouga Man-ack-nong," which schoolcraft interprets, "as far as the place of bad woods." In some of the old documents, however, it is called "Eghquahous," which is

also interpreted "the place of bad woods." Hudson called it "Staaten Eylandt," as a memorial to the States General of Holland, under whose flag he was sailing. Its present form is an English rendering of the name given by the Dutch.

importance. The history of every portion of it is interesting and instructive; but more especially that portion occupied by the people of the United States.

A great work is in progress throughout the entire continent; but the importance of the American Republic, with which our fortunes are more immediately connected, is becoming apparent with each revolving year. If from her present population, which, though increasing by a wonderful progression, is still, in point of numbers, inferior to many other nations; yet from her wealth, her enterprise, her commercial and political relations, she is entitled to rank among the most powerful and influential nations of the globe. The eyes of the civilized world are upon her; and with wonder, if not with jealousy, do they mark her rapid and surprising advancement.

And still, this Island—this once rude, uncultivated Aquchonga Man-ack-nong—is a part of the key that materially aided to unlock this treasure-house of the globe; has helped to open for this great continent everything that centres in the social, financial and commercial interests of our people. From the earliest hour of civilization in these parts, the millions of people who have come here from all over the world, have beheld with admiration and pleasure the magnificent scenery presented along these plains and hilltops. What inspiration they have given to the tired traveler, after a long, tempestuous voyage across the ocean; what noble thoughts they have awakened in the breasts of the victims of tyranny and oppression, at first beholding a land of freedom and prosperity, can be realized only by those who have experienced such sacred emotions.

It is clearly evident that the Great Architect, in His wonderful providence, ordained for Staten Island a career of usefulness. Favored by location, as a part of the metropolis of the New World; beautified with lavish hand, its mountains, and dales, and brooks form an Eden equally as fair and enticing as that of holy writ. Its story, too, filled with events that have helped to form the character and mould our great nation, is full of interest and importance to those who are here to-day, as well as those who shall come to these scenes in the veiled hereafter.

The topography of the Island, in the northern part, is hilly and stony, while in the southern part it is flat and sandy. In detail, however, the surface is more diversified. The beauty of its landscapes is justly claimed for it, for they present many mutations in character, "through high, boldly precipitous Middletown, diversified Castleton, gently undulating Westfield, rolling Northfield, and low, flat and marshy Southfield." There are two prominent ranges of hills which extend partially across the Island, but in different directions, one being near the eastern shore and touching it at both ends. This extends from the village of New Brighton, on the northeastern extremity, with an elevation of three hundred and ten feet, and sweeping

inland behind Tompkinsville and Stapleton, appears again upon the shore at the Narrows, with such precipitous form as to suggest the name of Clifton.

The second may be described as commencing to the south and in the rear of West New Brighton, extending southward, rising gradually as it advances, till it almost reaches New Dorp, when it swerves away to the westward and settles down again on the shores of the Fresh Kill. This range reaches its greatest height in Todt Hill, which has an elevation of three hundred and seventy feet above tide. Still farther west, it makes a prominent elevation in Richmond Hill. At Latourette's, (a part of the latter hill but still farther), it overlooks the village of Richmond, and the scenery, stretching away over a great expanse of green, wooded, rolling country, is grandly superb.

This hilly region may be described as covering the northeast quarter of the Island, and to the southeast of it is a level, and probably alluvial, tract of country, composed of upland and salt meadow, extending down to the ocean, where it is designated as the south shore. Off to the northwest of this hill country the surface is undulating, and gradually declines to level upland and salt meadows. Many of the old farms of the Island have several acres of this meadow land connected with them, from which large quantities of grass are annually taken.

The Island is upon the Bay of New York, and in close proximity to the shore of New Jersey. It is separated from the latter by Newark Bay and the Kill van Kull on the north, and on the west by the Staten Island Sound. On the south side are Raritan Bay, Prince's Bay and the Atlantic ocean; while on the east are the Narrows, which separate it from Long Island. It lies centrally in latitude $40^{\circ} 34'$, and longitude $2^{\circ} 52'$ east from Washington, or $74^{\circ} 8'$ west from Greenwich. The center of the Island, (*i.e.*, a point near Richmond), is eleven miles southwest of the Battery in New York City. It is also one hundred and forty-three miles south of the State capital at Albany, and one hundred and ninety miles from Washington.

The shape of the Island is about that of an irregular triangle; the longest line that can be drawn through it from the extreme northeastern end, at St. George, to the extreme southwestern point, below Tottenville, is a few feet more than thirteen and a-half miles; while the longest line that can be drawn across it, from the shore of the sound near Buckwheat Island to the shore at the light-house near the Narrows, is two hundred feet over seven and three-fourths miles. It contains about seventy-seven square miles, or 49,280 acres.

The importance of the surrounding waters² can not be over-esti-

² James Fenimore Cooper locates a scene in his "Water Witch" on Staten Island, and says this of the surrounding waters: "The fine estuary which penetrates the American coast between the fortieth and forty-first degrees of latitude is formed by the confluence

of the Hudson, the Hackensack, the Passaic, the Raritan, and a multitude of smaller streams; all of which pour their tribute into the ocean within the space named. The Island of Nassau [Long Island] and Staten Island are happily placed to exclude the tempests of the

mated. The channel known as the Narrows is the great gateway through which is constantly passing the commerce of our own nation and that of all other nations of the globe. The waters running along the north and west shores,³ which separate the Island from the main land, are a great highway for all the local commerce of the several ports and streams in that direction, as well as the inter-state commerce passing south and west through the Delaware and Raritan canal, which connects the Raritan river at New Brunswick with the Delaware river at Bordentown, about seven miles below Trenton. This canal is one of the principal links in the chain of internal navigation of the Atlantic seaboard, and has a tonnage amounting to about two millions annually passing through it, while the tonnage of the kills exceeds that of the Suez canal.

At various periods in the history of the Island the names of important localities have undergone material changes—a subject which will be given thorough attention in a subsequent chapter. During the past half century or so, however, the shores have been thus designated with respect to the compass: The region from Fort Wadsworth to Billopp's point is called the South Shore; from the latter point to the junction of the sound with the kills is known as the West Side; from the latter point (to which the name Holland's Hook has been applied, and DeHart's point on the knoll of upland which overlooks it), to where the Kills meet the waters of New York bay, is called the North Shore; and thence to Fort Wadsworth is the East Shore.

The Island is watered with an abundance of springs of excellent quality, some of them being fed by veins leading all the way from the Catskill and Orange mountains, and which will be treated more fully in a subsequent chapter. On this subject, however, the following extract from the report of investigations made in 1876, by Mr. Clarence Delafield, C.E., in regard to the available sources of water supply for the North Shore, is of interest:

"West of Port Richmond and Graniteville lies sandy surface soil; under this is an impervious clay of considerable depth, under which again is a stratum of gravel that extends westward under the sound into New Jersey for a long distance. This gravel is the storage reservoir for the drainage of an immense district. Springs break out at or

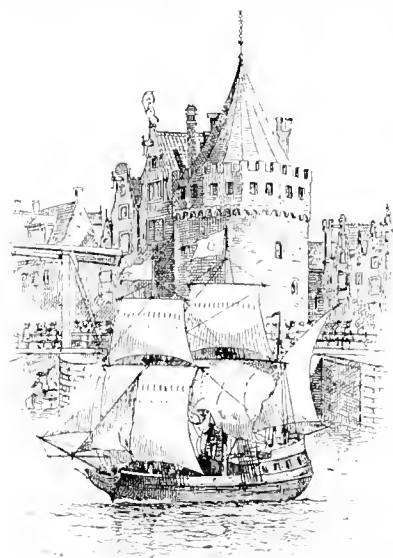
open sea, while the deep and broad arms of the latter offer every desirable facility for foreign trade and internal intercourse."

3 The water now known as the kills was first called by the Dutch "*Hot Kill van Cul*," meaning *the Kill of the Cul*. The Dutch word "*Kill*" meant a stream or creek, while the word "*Cul*," perhaps borrowed from the French, meant a bay. Hence *Kill van Kull* was "the stream of the bay," the appropriateness of which name is seen in the fact that it connects the two bays of New York and Newark. "*Achter Cul*," as Newark bay was called

by the Dutch, meant the "*Back bay*." The narrow body of water known as Staten Island Sound, to which the name *Arthur Kill* is also attached, was perhaps regarded as only a part of the "*back bay*," and so the name of the larger body, slightly corrupted, was appropriated to the smaller arm. A reef in the bay at the mouth of the *Kill van Kull* was once frequented by seals, to which the Dutch gave the name *Rebyn*; hence the name "*Rebbyn Rift*," which has by careless usage become "*Robbins Reef*." *Peckton's History of Richmond County*.

near tide water in large numbers in Mariners' Harbor. At Singer's factory in Elizabethport, the well that furnishes the factory is sunk through this clay stratum to the gravel, and furnishes a large volume of water. I feel confident that an ample supply can be found in this region for pumping.

"The geological formation is peculiar. From the Palisades on the Hudson River, the trap rock is seen running in a southwesterly direction, generally depressed as it passes under Bergen hill, thence passing under Bergen Point and the Kill van Kull, emerging at the water side of Jewett's residence, Port Richmond, passing thence to the quar-



THE HALF-MOON LEAVING AMSTERDAM.

ries at Graniteville, and from there dipping under the Fresh Kill, is lost sight of until discovered on the Raritan river, between Perth Amboy and New Brunswick. West of this line lies the white and blue clays of various depths, forming impervious strata, covering the water bearing gravel.⁴

"East of the line of trap described is another step of the same rock, noticed at Bergen Point, at Gunther's residence; but only found on the Island, in digging wells just east of the Pond road.

"Between the Pond and Mill roads there is a depression of the rock, and wells forty feet in depth pass through a stratum of water-proof clay into a stratum of gravel, the reservoir of drainage of the surface above of limited area, the water rising and falling with the rains, and often chalybeate in taste from the deposits of hematite iron in the hills above.

"East of this line and at many points the serpentine rock comes to the surface, and on Todt Hill rises to an altitude of about three hun-

4 Deposits of material brought from the north by the ice of the glacial epoch, are found distributed over the greater part of the Island from the Narrows to Tottenville, and is distinctly marked by a continuous line of hills. These hills mark the farthest southern extension of the ice-sheet, and the line along which the glacier deposited much of its burden of bowlders, pebbles, sand and clay, which it had torn from the rocks in its southward journey. In many places these hills have the peculiar form which they assume on Long Island and in the Eastern States. The moraine has been partially removed by the wash of the waves from Prince's Bay northward to near the Great Kills, leaving a bluff of variable height. The glacier moved

across the Island in a south southwesterly direction. This is proved by the markings on the trap-rock near Port Richmond, which have about that bearing. The surface of this rock is also smoothed like portions of the Palisades and Newark mountains. There are no such markings on the serpentine rocks, because they are too soft to retain them. The ice extended over their whole area, however, with the exception of a small area on Todt Hill, which is east of the moraine. North and west of the moraine hills the drift is not so abundant, and rarely forms hills of any considerable size. But bowlders are to be found over all this area, except when it is covered by newer formations and the soil is often very clayey.—Dr. N. L. Britton.

dred and seventy feet above tide-water. Below the serpentine rock should occur the carboniferous strata and old red sandstone, also the Silurian rock overlaying the gneiss and granite. I believe that the serpentine rock rests upon the gneiss rock, the usual intermediate rock being absent, and the reason for this belief is that the gneiss rock of New York City is observed dipping under the bay, rising to form Robin's Reef, and extending west to the beacon opposite New Brighton, possibly passing under Staten Island at the same rate of dip.

"As the result of observation of American and European engineers, the magnesian limestones are prolific water bearing rocks, and the primitive gneiss liable to fissures and stratification leading from great distances and bearing water of great purity. The granite from its freedom from fissures or strata, and irregular contour may form good basins, but rarely carries water far. Geology is by no means an exact science, as far as determining without experimental examination the probable strata or their water bearing conditions; but the above mentioned conditions are an assistance in an intelligent consideration of the subject now under investigation.

"I find by observation that there is a series of admirable springs, commencing at the famous Hessian springs, near Lafayette and Brighton avenues, below Silver Lake; also, the Bement boiling springs, then various lesser springs to the large springs at Four Corners, and so on to the Willow brook and down to Springville. I have estimated, and find the amount of water discharged is vastly in excess of any surface drainage on the higher grounds of the island adjacent, and am thus led to the belief that these springs arise from the rock below, and have their source on hills far distant."

The climate of the Island is noted for sudden and frequent changes of temperature. It is generally milder, however, than that of other localities in the same latitude farther away from the seashore. During the year the mercury varies between ninety degrees and zero, seldom passing either of these extremes. In winter, the prevailing winds are from the northwest, and in summer the south shore receives a breeze from the ocean almost daily, and southwest winds prevail throughout. The Island is surrounded by salt water, and is naturally subject to fogs, which seldom penetrate far into the interior. They are prevalent toward spring, and continue to occur at times until June or July, and occasionally at other seasons. Summer thunder showers suddenly arise in the north, and heavy gusts of wind waft them over the Island, sometimes accompanied by a fall of hailstones.

Staten Island has always been celebrated for the salubrity of its climate, and has been classed by the State Board of Health, as "the healthiest county in the State." A writer on this subject, as far back as 1788, said: "The healthy and clear westerly breezes on the one side, and the thick southerly atmosphere, obstructed by a ridge of hills on the other side, make it so healthy that it must induce gentle-

men of fortune to purchase who wish to lengthen out their days and enjoy all the temporal happiness this life can afford."

There are still many traces of savage occupants of the Island. These are quite common along the shores from Prince's Bay around Tottenville to Watchogue. In various places shell heaps are found indicating that the work of wampum manufacture and the preparation of clams and oysters for food had been carried on there. Tottenville, Watchogue and the farm lands east of New Springville have proved very fruitful in gathering relics of pre-historic days. Indian net-sinkers, hammer-stones, axes, arrow-heads, mortars, pestles, beads, anvils, etc., have been found in shell heaps and scattered abroad.

Evidences of fire-places have been noticed in several of the shell mounds, specimens of cracked and partly used stone having been found. In some of the stones the surface was entirely fused into a glass-like slag. One of the most striking curiosities of this pre-historic age, is a stone head, found near Clifton in 1884. Its simple story is as follows:

"It was unearthed by Mr. James Clark, in the latter part of February, while digging up the root of a blue huckleberry bush, which he intended to use in the manufacture of rustic basket-work. It lay about eighteen inches under the soil at a point two or three hundred feet east of the railroad track, and near the Fingerboard road, at the edge of a low, dense swamp. In digging with a pick, that instrument struck the stone and turned it up. The material is a brown sandstone, apparently more compact than the common New Jersey sandstone, and composed almost entirely of grains of quartz with an occasional small pebble.

"The head is seven inches high, four inches through the cheeks and six inches from the tip of the nose through to the back of the head, and its weight is about eight pounds. The nostrils are one and seven-eighths inches across their base, and the eyes are one and a quarter inches long and five-eighths wide. They are raised in the centres and have a groove running around close to the lids. A round hole one-fifth inch deep had been drilled in the lower part of the nose, in the space between the two nostrils, evidently for the purpose of fastening an ornament, and both nostrils were hollowed out to some depth. The cheeks, in their lower part, are sunken in a very curious manner, causing the cheek bones to stand up very high.

"The forehead is low and retreats at an angle of sixty degrees. A trace of what had been or was to be the ear was noticeable on the right side. The back and upper parts of the head are almost entirely rough and unworked, as though the image had never been finished or else was only a part of some larger figure. The surface is roughly or slightly weathered, the cheeks, forehead and chin having single grains of sand apparently raised above the surface as if by age and exposure.

“The features are too well cut for a common off-hand piece of work by a stone worker. The style is not Egyptian nor Eastern, so it does not appear that it could have been thrown out here by any sailor or other person who had ever brought it from across the ocean. It is said to bear some resemblance to the Mexican, and still more to the Aztec style of work. The spot where it was found is and has been within the memory of man an unfrequented wild, remote from any habitation, and the soil in which it lay is a compact sandy clay of light brown color, in which a stone like this might lie buried for centuries without much disintegration.”

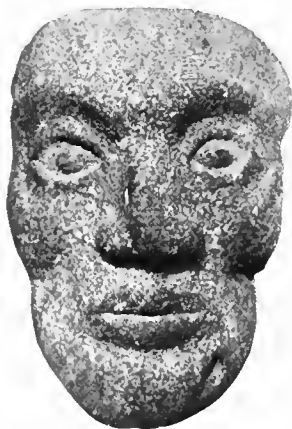
Nature has always dealt most liberally with this beautiful Island—whether in the remote days of Aquehonga-Man-ack-nong or of modern Staten Island. From its hills unnumbered tons of iron-ore have been exhumed; from its quarries the finest granite has been cut; from among its pits the most useful species of clay, sand and kaolin have been gathered; while over thirteen hundred specimens of flowering plants with ferns and their allies have here been gathered by local botanists. The State of New York having produced eighteen hundred specimens, this proves that Staten Island has contributed fully two-thirds of that number. Indeed about fifty of the species were not known in the State until discovered and reported from Staten Island. Many notable forest trees also add a charm to the place, and the variety has been a source of pride to the busy naturalists who have spent unnumbered hours in seeking them out. Birds, too, all the species that inhabit this particular clime, abound on Staten Island.

CHAPTER II.

THE NATIVE INDIANS.



THE various theories advanced in relation to the origin of the Indian tribes existing at the time of the discovery of this country, will always continue to be of the deepest interest to Americans. These theories have been various, indeed, according to the whims or predilections of the authors. Some have seen in them an original species of the human race, unconnected with any of the nations or tribes of the Old World. Others have fancied their resemblance to this or the other people, ancient or modern, of the eastern continent—as Hebrews, Trojans, Tartars, and the like.



INDIAN STONE HEAD, FOUND
NEAR GRASMERE STATION.

Voltaire, and other skeptical writers, have accounted for their origin, according to the first-named theory. They have considered the Indian placed in America by the hand of the Creator, or by nature—just as the buffalo, or the tortoise, or any other animal was placed here—or just as trees and other products of vegetation, that are indigenous to the soil. Thus they make no account of the apparent scriptural doctrine of the unity of the human race—the common descent from Adam.

The identity of the Indian with the Hebrew or the Israelite has been conjectured by many. Rev. Thomas Thorowgood, an author of the seventeenth century, held that opinion, and endeavored to prove that the Indians were the Jews, who had been lost in the world for the space of near two thousand years. Adair, who claims to have resided forty years among the southern Indians, wrote considerable relative to their origin, and endeavored to prove their identity with the Jews, by showing the similarity of their customs, usages, and language to those of the latter. The author of the *Star in the West*, Dr. Bondinot, has followed the same theory, and thinks assuredly that the Indians are the long-lost ten tribes of Israel.

Roger Williams at one time expressed the same opinion. He writes, in a letter to friends in Salem, that the Indians did not come into America from the north-east, as some had imagined, for the fol-

lowing reasons: I. Their ancestors affirm that they came from the south-west, and return thence when they die. II. Because they separate their women, in a little wigwam by themselves, at certain seasons. III. Beside their god Kuttand, to the south-west, they hold that Nanawitnawit, (a God overhead), made the heavens and the earth; and he avers, also, that he, (the writer), had found "some taste of affinity with the Hebrew."

The similarity of practices, or even of a number of terms in a language, can, however, be no conclusive proof of sameness of origin. It may be merely incidental, or in respect to customs more particularly, may be owing to similarity of circumstances. "Who will pretend that different people, when placed under similar circumstances, will not have similar wants, and hence similar actions? that like wants will not prompt like exertions? and like causes produce not like effects?" The slight resemblances existing, or fancied to exist, between the Indians and the Israelites, may be owing to a cause like the one pointed out. As to the language of the Indians, William Wood, an old writer upon this subject, says: "Some have thought that they might be of the dispersed Jews, because some of their words be near unto the Hebrew; but, by the same rule, they may conclude them to be of the gleanings of all nations, because they have words after the Greek, Latin, French, and other tongues."

Hubbard, an American historian, who wrote about 1680, has this among other passages on the subject: "If any observation be made of their manners and dispositions, it is easier to say from what nations they did not, than from whom they did derive their original. Doubtless their conjecture, who fancy them to be descended from the ten tribes of the Israelites, carried captive by Salamaneser and Esarhaddon, hath the least show of reason of any other, there being no footsteps to be observed of their propinquity to them more than to any other of the tribes of the earth, either as to their language or manners."

Thomas Morton, an early New England historian, refers their origin to the scattered Trojans, observing, "for after that Brutus, who was the fourth from Æneas, left Latium, upon the conflict held with the Latins, where, although he gave them a great overthrow to the slaughter of their grand captain, and many others of the heroes of Latium, yet he held it more safely to depart unto some other place and people, than by staying to run the hazard of an unquiet life or doubtful conquest; which, as history maketh mention, he performed. This people was dispersed there is no question; but the people that lived with him, by reason of their conversation with the Grecians and Latins, had a mixed language that participated of both." Morton maintains the great similarity of the languages of the Indians to the Greek and Roman, as an instance of which, he fancied he heard among their words *Pasco-pan*, and hence thinks without doubt their ancestors were acquainted with the god *Pan*.

John Josselin, who resided some time in New England, toward the middle part of the seventeenth century, pronounces the speech of the Mohawks to be a dialect of the Tartars. He says "the north-east people of America—that is, New England, etc., are judged to be Tartars, called Samoades, being alike in complexion, shape, habit and manners."

That the Indians were Scythians, is an opinion expressed in a decided manner by Cotton Mather. He was confirmed in it, on meeting with this passage of Julius Caesar: "*Difficilis invenire quam interficere*," rendered by him, "It is harder to find them than to foil them." Caesar was speaking of the Scythians, and the aptness of the language, as expressing one peculiarity of the Indians in their warfare—their sudden attacks and retreats—is noticeable.

Dr. S. L. Mitchell, of New York, a voluminous writer in his day, thought that he had settled the question of the origin of the Indians. They came, in his opinion, from the north-east of Asia, and that is now the more common belief. He thinks that they possessed originally the same color as that of the north-eastern nations of Asia.

Dr. Swinton, author of many parts of the Universal History, after stating the different opinions of various authors, who have advocated in favor of "the dispersed people," the Phœnicians and other eastern nations, observes, "that, therefore, the Americans in general were descended from a people who inhabited a country not far distant from them as Egypt and Phœnicia, one will, as we apprehend, readily admit. Now, no country can be pitched upon so proper and convenient for this purpose, as the north-eastern part of Asia, particularly Great Tartary, Siberia, and more especially the peninsula of Kamtschatka. That probably was the tract through which many Tartarian colonies passed into America, and peopled the most considerable part of the New World."

At the period of the settlement of the Dutch and English colonies in America, savage tribes of Indians were scattered over the country. In many respects they possessed similar character, usages and institutions—a bond of affinity running through their several communities and tribes. As a race of men, they were distinct from all the races found in the Old World. Their history was unknown, and to us, in these times, dates no farther back than to the European discovery here. They had, indeed, their traditions; but these, like the traditions of all other nations, are no farther entitled to credit than they are confirmed by appearance or probable conjecture. If the hypothesis be correct of the Asiatic origin of the Aborigines of America, by way of the Behring straits, there would seem to be a probability in the general account given of their migration toward the east, and of their conquest of a more civilized race, then occupying the country. Such a race seems to have been once in existence, judging from the monuments and relics that have been occasionally found among us. They

were called the Allegewi, and their more rude conquerors styled themselves the Lenape and the Mengwe, or the Iroquois. These seem chiefly to have divided the country between them, after they had expelled the Allegewi. The general name of the Delawares has since been given to the former, and their language, called by the French, the *Algonquin*. The Iroquois inhabited more the upper parts of the country, along the lakes and the St. Lawrence. The Lenape, or Delawares, extended themselves to the south and east.

When our fathers came to these shores, they found here the descendants of these savage conquerors. They were entirely uncivilized, having, probably, undergone no process of civilization, from the time of the migration of their ancestors to the Mississippi and the Atlantic slope. As distributed through the various parts of the thirteen original States, they may be mentioned, as to their confederacies or tribes, in the following order:

In the central and southern parts of New England there were five principal tribes: the Wampanoags or Pokanokets, the Pawtuckets, the Massachusetts, the Narragansets, and the Pequods. The Pokanokets were the first known to the civilized settlers. The territory inhabited by this tribe, was that which now constitutes the south-eastern part of Massachusetts and the eastern part of Rhode Island. To the chief of this tribe, who was Massasoit, at the time of the English emigration, other smaller tribes were subject, dwelling principally on the adjacent islands. His residence, as was also that of Philip, his son, was at Montaup, now Mount Hope, in Bristol, Rhode Island.

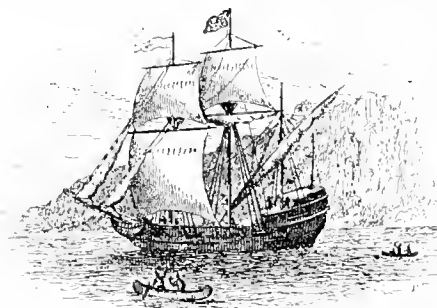
The tribe of Pawtuckets occupied the lands upon the Merrimack, near its mouth, as their principal seat, though they extended themselves south until they came in contact with the Massachusetts.

The Massachusetts were found about the bay which bears the name of the tribe. They were bound by the Pawtuckets on the north, and the Pokanokets on the south. Their head sachem held under his rule several smaller tribes, some of which were known by the name of the Neponsetts, the Nashuas, and the Pocumtucks. The acknowledged sovereign of the confederacy, at the time of the English settlement, was the widow of a powerful chief, styled sometimes the "Massachusetts queen." They were situated in a delightful region, where now stands the metropolis of New England.

The tribe of the Narragansets held their chief seat on the island of the Canonicut, in the bay called after their name. Here, also, their grand sachem resided. They extended west to the Pawcatuck river, where they came into the neighborhood of the Pequods. The Pokanokets bordered them on the east. They occupied a beautiful country, and happily adapted to their mode of life, which was fishing and hunting. Their disposition was more mild and peaceable than usually appeared in the Indian character. When the English arrived in that region, they found there Canonicas, the grand sachem of the tribe, who proved a benefactor of Rhode Island.

The tribes of Pequods were situated in the eastern part of Connecticut, having the Narragansets on their eastern border. They were a fierce and warlike race. Their grand sachem, Sassacus, resided on the heights of Groton, near the river called by their name, now the Thames. Sassacus held the Mohegans subject to his authority. These were a tribe occupying the place where Norwich now stands. Uncas, the leader of the latter, joined the whites in their war with the Pequods. These several tribes, at the period referred to, were singularly diminished in number and power, on account of a wasting sickness, which had been sent among them a few years before.

In the northern portion of New England, roved the Indians whose general name was that of Tarenteens, or Abenakis. They inhabited the coast of Maine throughout and extended into New Hampshire.



THE HALF-MOON.

Their character was ferocious, and the settlers suffered severely from their wars, murders and depredations. Stealing in, at the dead of night, upon the villages or dwellings, they burned or plundered, indiscriminately, whatever came in their way— butchering men, women and children, without mercy.

The five tribes, or nations, that spread out east of Lake Erie, and south of Lake Ontario, were the Iroquois, or Mengwe, who had become thus divided, in consequence of being pressed by the Hurons, and one or two other tribes, inhabiting the St. Lawrence. They were called the Senecas, Cayugas, Onondagas, Oneidas, and Mohawks. They at length became a powerful race in their new abodes, and not only overcame the Hurons, but made war upon the Delawares, and were objects of dread far and near. The most warlike community of the whole was said to be the Mohawks. Their power and exactions reached east and south to a great distance.

The Indians, in the southerly portion of the country, were of course earlier known to the Dutch and English than those already mentioned; this was true of the tribes at least that inhabited Virginia, in 1607. The nucleus of an entire confederacy, inhabiting the territory from the sea-coast to the falls of the rivers, was the Powhatan nation. This confederacy included no less than thirty tribes, and the number of warriors was estimated at eight thousand. The chief of the same name, who figures so much in the history of Virginia, was the great sachem of the confederacy. The seat of the hereditary dominions was near the present site of the city of Richmond. Here the noble Pocahontas was born, and passed her early, uncultivated life.

The Indians who dwell on the highlands, between the falls of the

rivers and the mountains, were divided into two confederacies, not long after the arrival of the English. One division consisted of the Monahoaks, in eight tribes, on the north. The other consisted of the Monacans, in five tribes, stretching on the south in Carolina. The latter went under the name of Tuscaroras, and connected with the Iroquois.

Of the Indians in the southern extremity of the country, the principal confederacies were the Creeks, whose locality was mostly in Georgia—the Cherokees, who inhabited the mountainous back country—and the Choctaws, and Chickasaws, who dwell in the region between the mountains and the Mississippi. Two or three other tribes occupied particular localities, which need not be indicated.

At the time of the discovery the Raritan Indians were in possession of the Island; but they held it subject to the will of the powerful Mohawk tribes. The Raritans were a branch of the Delawares or Leni-Lenapes. How long they had been here is not known; there is a tradition that the Island was taken away from one of the southern tribes, mentioned in this chapter, and then ceded to the Delawares in consideration of services rendered in the war. The Raritans of Staten Island, (now generally called Aquehongas), were not a strong and warlike nation. Generally speaking, they were shiftless and cowardly; yet among them, as is generally the case where large numbers are assembled, there were those who were honorable and really noble. They were often driven off of the Island by the Mohawks, as a source of punishment for offences given, and their villages were destroyed. At such times they would make pilgrimages into Monmouth County, New Jersey, where they would join their friends and become sufficiently strong to resist the advances of their enemies. It was among the Indian villages of Old Monmouth that the Brainards, of blessed memory, labored, and indeed broke through the cruel superstitions of our own Staten Island Indians. The story of the Christ was told them by those brave missionaries, and many believed it.

There are various indications of Indian villages on the Island, such as collections of skulls and bones. Some are near the shores, where fish were easily procured. A number of burial places are also located. One of these was in the great sand bank that stood in front of the Dongan manor house at West New Brighton. Hundreds of skeletons were exhumed as, from time to time, the earth was removed. At the foot of this embankment was a once-famous spring of water, around which the harvest festivals were celebrated in the old days, and where treaties of peace were arranged after many a bloody conflict among the tribes. The family burial ground of the Billopps, below Tottenville, contained the remains of many an Indian, for each generation of that noted family was on friendly terms with their uncivilized neighbors. The Corson farm, near New Springville, also contains the dust of many a warrior, while at Holland's Hook, Great Kill and Green Ridge also rest all that was mortal of hundreds of a by-gone race.

Indian relics, of every conceivable shape, are found even at this day throughout the Island. Some rare collections have been made both by the Natural Science Association and individuals, and the Staten Island "finds" are scattered among the collections of the country.

It is generally believed that the interior of the Island was the Indian hunting ground, and that deer, bear and other animals roamed in great numbers there. All these long ago became entirely extinct. Nature indeed was liberal with its supplies and furnished to those rude people all the necessities of their life. Besides animals and fowl there were berries and fruit, and maize, corn, beans and tobacco were among the articles of their own cultivation.

The clothing of the Indians was the skins of the beaver, fox and other animals, and consisted of but little more than a covering of the thighs and loins. Their weapons were bows and arrows, the latter sharpened with flint stones or the bones of fishes. They made their boats from a single piece of wood, hollowed out by fire. Some that lived here years after the advent of civilization, had fixed abodes built with rafters, oven-formed, covered with tree-bark, and were large enough to accommodate several families. Mats, wooden dishes, stone hatchets, etc., composed their furniture. Fire for cooking and heating was kindled in the middle of these dwellings, from one end to the other, and the smoke let out at an opening in the crown of the roof. Some of the number led a wandering life to the end.

All the agricultural work was performed by the women, and their universal grain was maize, or turkey corn, of which they made bread and "sapraen" or mush. The old men, who had become too feeble to go to war, made wooden bowls, ladles and baskets. Many of their hatchets are still preserved by our people. They were made of stone, wedge-shaped, a foot in length, and broad in proportion. Around the thick end was a notch, which received the two parts of a stick split at one end which formed the handle. The "jaws" of the handle were firmly bound with thongs to the hatchet. The chief use of these instruments was to make good fields for maize plantations, by girdling the trees and thus clearing the ground by taking advantage of the natural course of decay and time in removing the wood growth.

The Indians employed fire when they wished to fell a tree. They heaped a quantity of wood about the trunk, which they set on fire, and continued this process until the tree fell. They made a "swab" which they fastened to a pole, and applied water to the part they did not wish to burn. Canoes were made by the same process, some of which measured forty feet in length. Little pieces of sharp flint or shells were used in place of knives. They had pestles about a foot in length, made of dark stone, which they used for pounding their maize, their chief article of food. Generally they had wooden mortars, made from tree stumps. Their water boilers were made of clay or different kinds of stone. Pipes were made of clay, or pot-stone or serpentine

stone, and were about the same shape as those used to-day. For fishing they used hooks made of bone of the claws of birds. They kindled fire by rubbing one end of a hard piece of wood against another dry one till in the course of time the friction became so great that the wood began to burn.

Staten Island Indians were in personal character and appearance healthy, strong, robust and well proportioned. In their social life they were polygamous, their chiefs owning several wives; yet they were faithful to their marriage relations, the women preferring death to dishonor. Men, women and children paid strict attention to the sun, moon and stars in connection with their seasons.¹ They paid special honor to the first moon following the one at the end of February, and as it rose they had a festival, feasting on fish and wild game, their only beverage being clear, cold water. The Indian year now began, and the moon was joyously hailed as the harbinger of spring, and the women began to prepare for planting.

The Raritans seemed to have no knowledge of God or religion until after they had come under the influence of the Brainards. Some of them, according to tradition, paid homage to evil spirits. In fact, they believed in both good and evil spirits, and their spiritual affairs were entrusted, after a fashion, to Kitzinaeka, a weather priest. He held the position "by succession," the oldest son succeeding his father at the latter's death. He visited the sick and dying, "and sat beside them bawling, crying and roaring like a demon." He had no abode of his own, lodged where he liked, and never ate food prepared by a married woman.

The universal money among the Indians was wampum, and was made of the thick and blue part of sea clam-shells and oyster-shells. The thin covering of this part was split off and a hole drilled through it, and then the outward shape was given to it by means of a stone upon which it was ground. The pieces were sometimes eight-sided, but generally round, and in size resembling the cylindrical glass beads commonly called bugles. They were about an eighth of an inch in diameter. They were strung upon cords, and these strings of wampum were measured by the foot, yard or fathom. In making them, from six to ten feet in length was considered a day's work. There were two kinds, white and purple or black. The black were made of mussel shells.²

1 Wassenaer, of Amsterdam, who wrote in 1621-23, says that the Indian women "are the most experienced star-gazers; there is scarcely one of them but can name all the stars—their rising and setting, the position of the *Arcos*—that is, the wagon, is as well known to them as to us, and they name them by other names."

2 With the Dutch governors six beads of the white or four of the purple were equal in

value to one penny. This currency was used by the Europeans for many years after their settlement here. The Indians made belts of wampum by weaving the strings into widths of several inches, and they were two feet or more in length. It was sometimes called *see-wan*. Both the Dutch and English recognized it as currency for a long time. In 1683 the schoolmaster at Flatbush, L. I., was paid his salary in wheat at "wampum value."

On Staten Island, Long Island and the neighboring shores of New Jersey are still found numerous beds of clam-shells, broken into very fine pieces, and these are without doubt the scenes of wampum manufacture. Indian tribes even far inland used the wampum currency and were compelled to depend upon the shores of the ocean exclusively for the material with which to make it.

The Delawares, and tribes subject to them, had burial rites of their own. Their dead were placed in the earth without a coffin; they were placed in a sitting posture, upon a stone or block of wood; they were clothed in all their garments of animal skins. Close by the body were placed a pot, kettle, platter and spoon, with some wampum and provisions, "for their invisible journey to the Spirit Land." A pile of wood, stone or earth was placed over the grave. Many an odd trinket has been taken out of the earth with Indian bones. The last relic of particular value was that of an arrow-head, which was found fastened between the ribs of an Indian, the skeleton of which was exhumed in the shade of the old Billopp House a few months since.



KING JAMES I.

The Staten Island Indians, as will be shown later on, lived a most miserable life from the time of the arrival of the Dutch settlers. War and bloodshed followed almost constantly. At times the whites were murdered or driven away, at others the Indians perished. They gradually decreased in number and power; but unlike any other tribe with whose history we have an acquaintance, they remained among the scenes of their birth, and their dust to the very last mingled with the earth where their feet had trod.

There are those still living who remember the last of the "Aquehonga Indians" on Staten Island. They made their home at what is now Green Ridge, in a small stone house on the Seaman estate. They were known as "Sam" and "Hannah" and their daughter "Nance." They were pure-blooded Raritans and were dark copper-colored, and physically were fine specimens of manhood and womanhood. Hannah disappeared very mysteriously, and no one seemed to know what became of her. It was hinted that "Sam" had killed her, because he always grew angry when asked about her. "Sam" died in 1826, over ninety years of age, and was buried in the old French grave yard, near

Among other fees he received for supplying water for baptisms, twelve stuyvers, in wampum, for every baptism. In 1633, the ferriage for passengers from New York to Brooklyn was eight stuyvers in wampum each. It was

also used for ornamenting the person and as an emblem of agreement in treaties. The belt of wampum removed the remembrance of injuries and bloodshed. — *Preston's History of Richmond County.*

the road in front of the large dairy building on the Seaman estate. It is said "Nance" left the Island after her father's death; but this is contradicted. We have it on good authority that she was an inmate of the Alms House, where she died, and was buried beside her father in the old French grave yard. Thus passed away the last of the Aquehonga Indians.³

3 The Delaware Indians were the original owners of New Jersey, which State is the only one that purchased their land from the aborigines without bloodshed and dissatisfaction. The following paragraph, relative to this tribe, is copied from the *New Orleans Picayune* of a recent date: "The little tribe of Delaware Indians, in the Indian Territory, the remnant of a once powerful and dominant race in the East, have just come into great luck. In a couple of weeks they will receive about \$220,000 cash, in consequence of a judgment of the Court of Claims at Washington

in their favor. And this piece of good fortune is only the continuation of a series of windfalls that have dropped into their pockets during the past five or six years. A little over a year ago they received from the Government nearly a million dollars in cash, from trust funds lying in the Treasury, and shortly before they received other large sums, and these, together with the property they already had, and other big lumps of ready money in hand, will make every man, woman and papoose of them worth fully \$6,000 per capita."

CHAPTER III.

THE DISCOVERY OF STATEN ISLAND.



NO event, in the history of modern ages, surpasses in interest the discovery of the American continent. It has scarcely any parallel, indeed, in the annals of the world; whether we consider the difficulties of the undertaking or the magnitude of its consequences. Without any serious question, the honor of the discovery belongs solely to Christopher Columbus. Mankind, hitherto, have so awarded it, and posterity will doubtless confirm the judgment. As, however, a claim to a prior discovery by the Northmen has been brought forward in recent times, it becomes the partiality of history to notice it, and to give such an account of the circumstances on which the claim is founded, as they may appear to deserve. Whether or not, at the distance of five centuries, the trans-Atlantic continent had been discovered by the Scandinavian voyagers, the merits of the great Italian are far from being affected by the fact.

The prominent incidents in this alleged ante-Columbian discovery, it seems, are given on the authority of certain Icelandic manuscripts, the genuineness, and even the existence of which, there is reason now to suppose, are entitled to credence. The general story may be received as probable. In the details, there is often something too vague, if not too extraordinary, to entitle it to any historical importance. The adventurous spirit, and even the naval skill of the Northmen, are not a matter of doubt with any who are acquainted with the history of the times in which they lived.

Although the evidence of history establishes the claim of Columbus, as the first discoverer of the New World, yet there were other meritorious voyagers, about whose services there is no room for doubt, and who extended the knowledge of these new regions, thus laid open to mankind. Others there were, who, stimulated by his success, and following his steps, enlarged the geographical boundaries beyond the actual discoveries of Columbus. Among these voyagers was admiral Sebastian Cabot, whose merits have never been fully acknowledged as they deserved to be, having been overlooked, in a measure, through the greater admiration bestowed on his predecessor. He belonged to a family distinguished for their spirit of adventure, as his father before him was an eminent navigator, and he was associated with two brothers, apparently possessing the same love of a sea-faring life. The

father of Sebastian was an Italian, but the son was born in Bristol, England, in 1477.¹

Cabot's first expedition left Bristol in the spring of 1497, and, notwithstanding he desired to go to India, he arrived on the coast of America on the 24th of June of that year. He conducted a second expedition, which left Bristol in 1498, and after reaching the Cape of Florida, re-crossed the ocean to his home. In 1517 he was again employed, in an expedition from England; but though he penetrated to about the sixty-seventh degree of north latitude, he entered Hudson's bay, giving names to various places in the vicinity, he was compelled to return, through the cowardice of an officer high in command, Sir Thomas Pert, and the disaffection of the crew.

The bay of New York, together with Staten Island, was first discovered in 1524, by Jean de Verrazzani, a Florentine in the service of France. It does not appear, however, that Francis I., the monarch under whom this discovery was made, ever took advantage of it, or laid claim to the territory adjacent, in consequence of Verrazzani's exploration. Henry Hudson was ignorant of this fact, and when, on the third day of September, 1609, he entered the Narrows² and anchored in precisely the same place as did Verrazzani, in 1524, he believed that he was the first to discover the region.

Verrazzani, it is believed, made no exploration whatever. A violent gale came up while his vessel was anchored here, and he put out to sea again, never to return. Though not the first to behold, Hudson³ was nevertheless the first to penetrate the mysteries of the land

1 The family was fitted out with five ships, for the purpose of discovery, by the English government, who granted a patent, under date of March 6th, 1499, to John Cabot, the father, as leader of the expedition. He was, however, rather the overseer or adviser of the concern, than the leader. The real conductor of it was Sebastian, who, through his modesty, failed to secure for himself that consideration from the world which was due him.—*Great Events in History*.

2 Bright and calm, over the heights of Navesink, broke the dawn of the third day of September, 1609. The early breeze rippled the surface of the slumbering ocean, and rustled through the leaves of the forest trees, awakening the songsters which nestled beneath them to pour forth their matin hymn to greet the king of day. The world seemed glad that light had once more dispelled the darkness. But all this beauty and harmony were lost upon the human denizens of the woods and mountains, who stood in groups upon the strand, gesticulating eagerly, and gazing intently, over the vast expanse of water which stretched out limitlessly before them. Far off toward the southeast, the unusual sight of a mere speck upon the surface of the ocean excited their wonder. Long and patiently they watched it as it slowly approached

and grew larger and larger, until it had assumed proportions far exceeding that of any moving object which had ever before met their vision. What could it be? Was it some great bird, which had flown over the great sea from some distant islands? Or, was it the Great Spirit who had descended to earth to visit and to bless his children? Slowly and majestically the object swept past, turned around the sandy point of land beyond them, and stopped. It was the "Half Moon," and bore Hendrick Hudson and his fellow-voyagers. *Club's Annals of Staten Island*.

3 Henry Hudson was a native of England, born at about the middle of the sixteenth century. Of his early life nothing is known. He appears, however, to have been an expert navigator, and employed by both English and Dutch merchants in searching for a north-east passage to the East Indies. Failing in this effort, he sailed westward to America, and after anchoring off Staten Island, which he named "Staaten Eylandt," in honor of the States General of Holland, he then penetrated the Hudson river to a point below the present site of Albany (which the English afterward named in his honor, one hundred and sixty miles. His vessel was called the "Half Moon," a yacht of ninety tons, and he had a select

and water which extended to an unknown distance before him. From his accounts of the event it is known that in one boat he visited Coney Island, and that in another he sent five men on an exploring expedition Northward. These men passed through the Narrows, coasted along Staten Island, and penetrated some distance into the Kills, presumably as far as Newark bay. On their return, probably at the Cove, the most likely hiding place along the North Shore, they suddenly encountered two large canoes, containing twenty-six Indians. The latter were alarmed and discharged a shower of arrows at the intruders. John Coleman, an Englishman, was killed by being shot in the neck. Both parties became frightened by the encounter, and pulled away from each other with all their might. Coleman's body was taken to Sandy Hook, where it was buried, and the place has ever afterwards been called "Coleman's Point."

Hudson was delighted with what he had seen on this day, his first view of the New World. A beautiful, fragrant, verdure-crowned Island lay before him, and evidently populous, for the inhabitants were seen darting, in considerable numbers, through the woods, to the shore. The beautiful appearance, which the Island assumed on that early Autumn day, together with the purity and blandness of the atmosphere, struck the senses of the voyagers, as though it had been Eden itself. The "Half Moon" lay at anchor for a day or so in the Narrows, before penetrating the North river. It is a matter of interest to here note that several Indians attempted to board the vessel while opposite Manhattan Island, and, one of them, more reckless than his companions, succeeding, was shot. His body fell into the river. This was the first American Indian slain by a white man.

During the voyage up the North river Hudson detained two of the Staten Island Indians as hostages; at West Point they escaped by jumping overboard and swimming ashore. One of the ship's boats was attacked while descending the river, when an Indian, trying to upset it had his hands cut off by the sword of a sailor. Subsequent events indicated that the two Staten Island Indians, who escaped at West Point, had alarmed the tribes on their way down to Manhattan Island. At the upper part of that point they were met by large numbers of savages in canoes, and showers of arrows flew over the vessel, doing no damage. A cannon was discharged at them, and a number were killed, besides having their canoes destroyed. Nine Indians were known to be killed, and a large number were wounded. Hudson spent a month here in his explorations, of which the chronicler of the voyage, Robert Juet, says:

"1609, Sept. 6. Our master sent John Coleman with four men to sound the river four leagues distant, which they did, but in their return to the ship they were set upon by Indians in two canoes, to the

crew. After various tribulations he made a fourth voyage in 1610, toward the Polar wa-

ters, descended the great bay that bears his name, and there perished.

number of 26; in which affair John Coleman was killed by an arrow shot into his throat, and two others were wounded. The next day Coleman was buried on a point of land which to this day bears his name.

"Sept. 8. The people came on board us, and brought tobacco and Indian wheat to exchange for knives and beads, and offered us no violence. So we, fitting up our boat, did mark them to see if they would make any show of the death of our man, but they did not.

"Sept. 9. In the morning two great canoes came on board full of men; one with bows and arrows, and the other in show of buying knives, to betray us, but we perceived their intention. We took two



FIRST VIEW OF NEW AMSTERDAM.

of them, to have kept them, and put red coats on them, and would not suffer the others to come near us, and soon after the canoes leave them. Immediately two other natives came on board us; one we took and let the other go, but he soon escaped by jumping overboard.

"Sept. 11. The ship had now anchored a considerable distance up the river. The people of the country came on board, making show of love, and gave us tobacco and Indian wheat.

"Sept. 12. This morning there came eight and twenty canoes full of men, women and children to betray us, but we saw their intent and suffered none of them to come on board. They gave great tobacco pipes of yellow copper and pots of earth to dress their meat in.

"Sept. 15. Sailed twenty leagues further up the river, passing by high mountains. This morning the two captive savages got out of a part of the ship and made their escape.

"Sept. 18. The master's mate went on shore with an old Indian, a sachem of the country, who took him to his house and treated him kindly.

"Oct. 1. The ship having fallen down the river seven miles below the mountains, comes to anchor. One man in a canoe kept hanging under the stern of the ship, and would not be driven off. He soon contrived to climb up by the rudder, and got into the cabin window, which had been left open, from which he stole a pillow, two shirts and two bandoleers. The mate shot him in the breast, and killed him. Many others were in canoes about the ship, who immediately fled, and some jumped overboard. A boat manned from the ship pursued them, and coming up with one in the water, he laid hold on the side of the

boat and endeavored to upset it; at which one in the boat cut off his hands with a sword, and he was drowned.

"Oct. 2. Fell down seven leagues further, and anchored again. Then came one of the savages that swam away from us at our going up the river, with many others, thinking to betray us, but we suffered none of them to enter our ship. Whereupon two canoes of men with their bows and arrows shot at us after our stern; in a recompense whereof, we discharged six muskets and killed two or three of them. Then above an hundred of them came to a point of land to shoot at us. There I shot a falcon at them, and killed two of them; whereupon the rest fled into the woods. Yet they manned off another canoe with nine or ten men, which came to meet us; so I shot at it also a falcon, and shot it through and killed one of them. Then our men with their muskets killed two or three more of them."

No actual landing was made on Staten Island at this time, however much the voyagers may have desired so to do. Hudson spent a month in explorations, and gained a great deal of valuable knowledge about the region and the natives, without further collision or calamity. On the fourth day of October he weighed anchor and again crossed the Atlantic ocean. The Indians in great numbers assembled along the south shore of the Island and watched the vessel as it gradually receded, and finally sank down beyond the distant rim of the blue ocean.

Landing in England on his return, Hudson despatched an account of his adventures to the Dutch East India Company, with the request that they would furnish him with the means of making another voyage. The English Government, however, determining to secure his services, forbade his sailing again in the service of Holland.

The Indians at once became apprehensive of danger. They were never again at peace. They established signal stations on the high points of the Island, and day and night the Raritans watched out over the ocean for the coming of their natural enemies. One of these "alarm posts," as they were called, was on Todt Hill, where the residence of Mr. David J. Tysen now stands, and another was on the heights of Fort Wadsworth. Patrols were also on duty along the South Shore. For years this vigilance knew no rest—not until the aggressive feet of white settlers pressed the soil which they adopted for their home.

CHAPTER IV.

THE SETTLEMENT OF STATEN ISLAND.



IN 1610, a ship was sent by some merchants in Amsterdam, to trade with the Indians of this locality, for furs, etc. The climate of Holland, as well as of other countries of Europe, rendered furs indispensable to the people. Theretofore they had obtained them, at great expense, chiefly from Russia. During the brief stay of Henry Hudson here, it was discovered that there were furs in the newly-discovered country, and that they were procurable in exchange for articles of comparatively slight value. The advantages of at once engaging in the fur traffic, were very plain to the Dutch. The vessel alluded to anchored in the Narrows, and an attempt was made to land some of its men on Staten Island. An alarm was given, and the Raritan Indians, in considerable force, gathered on the shore, and showed manifestations of displeasure. All attempts to negotiate were met in an unfriendly spirit, and after a protracted parley the enterprise was abandoned and the Dutch sailors and soldiers returned to their ship. It moved for some distance up the Hudson river, there procured a load of furs from the Mohawks, and in a few days recrossed the ocean for home.

In 1611, another vessel was dispatched to these shores, under Dutch authority, to trade with the Indians, and, notwithstanding those in authority landed on the Island, none manifested a disposition to settle here until the spring of 1613. Several Dutch vessels were in the bay at that time, and the business was under the superintendency of Hendrick Cortiansen, and with his craft he penetrated every bay or stream where Indians were to be found, in pursuit of furs. These expeditions were very successful and created intense interest in the fur trade among the countries of Europe. The result was that when the intelligence of these discoveries reached the projectors of the several voyages at home, steps were at once taken by them to secure to themselves the benefits of their enterprise and perseverance.

All the country lying between the 40th and 45th degrees of north latitude was called "New Netherland," and exclusive privileges to trade in these countries for a limited period was given to them. A trading house was at once established on an island in the Hudson, below the present site of Albany, and the surrounding country explored in quest of furs. The time of this grant expired at the close of

1617, and some of the fur merchants had become immensely wealthy. At this time the trade of New Netherland was thrown open, and adventurers from Holland came here in great numbers. Various commercial associations were formed, and it was not long before there was a conflict of interests. Contentions and disputes were finally adjusted by the consolidation of the various interests in the organization and charter of the "Dutch West India Company."¹

The first Europeans who visited this part of the continent, came for the express purpose of trading, not of settling; but, it is evident, they became favorably impressed with the soil and climate, and finally decided to make the place their permanent abode, with the double object of farming and dealing in furs. The country was organized into a province, and at once there was an influx of settlers. A provisional government was established, with Peter Minuit at its head as director, in the year 1624.

In that year a number of Walloons arrived and settled on Staten Island—the first settlement of which we have any knowledge. Historians differ considerably in their accounts of these people, one of which we quote:

"These people came from the country bordering on the river Scheldt and Flanders. They professed the Reformed religion, and spoke the old French, or Gallic, language. They were good soldiers, and had done efficient service in the Thirty Years' war. Two years before their arrival here, they had applied to Sir Dudley Carleton for permission to emigrate to some part of Virginia, upon condition that they might build a town of their own, and be governed by officers chosen by and amongst themselves. This application was referred to the Virginia Company, and met with a favorable response, so far as the mere settlement was concerned; but the privilege to elect their own officers was too long a step toward popular freedom, and could not be conceded. The permission to settle upon the company's land was fettered with so many conditions affecting their civil and religious liberty, that they declined to entertain it, and turned their attention to the New Netherlands, where so many arbitrary conditions were not insisted upon.

"On their arrival here, they appear to have abandoned the plan of

¹ The powers and privileges with which this company was invested were not confined to the narrow limits of the New Netherlands; they embraced the whole range of the American coast, from the Horn to the Arctic sea, and on the west coast of Africa from the Hope to the Tropic of Cancer, not previously occupied by other nations. On the American coasts settlements had been made by the French at Canada, by the English at Virginia, and by the Spaniards at Florida. The preparations made by the directors of the newly chartered com-

pany to improve the privileges granted to them, attracted, in England, the attention of the Government, and a strong remonstrance was sent to Holland, insisting that all the territory claimed by the Dutch was embraced in the charter of Virginia, and therefore was under the jurisdiction of England. The matter was from time to time brought before the authorities of both countries, and the dissension protracted by the Dutch for the purpose of gaining time, that the preparations of the new company might be completed.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

settling in a colony or single community, and separated, going in different directions, a few families taking up their abode upon Staten Island. It was supposed that among these was a family by the name of Rapelje, among whom was one George Jansen de Rapelje. Surrounded by the savages, and separated from their friends at Manhattan, they did not long remain here. Yielding to the necessities of their condition, lacking both food and clothing, they returned to Rapsie, the southern extremity of Manhattan Island, where they found not much relief; but were subjected with the other colonists to extremes of privation and suffering. But relief soon after came by the arrival of a ship from the mother country.

"The Rapelje family soon after removed to Wallabout, on Long Island, and are recorded as the first European settlers upon that Island. Their child, Sarah, has down to the present time borne the honor of having been the first child of European parentage born in the colony. Her birth is dated June 9th, 1625, and it is claimed that it occurred while her parents were upon Staten Island. She lived to be the wife

of two husbands and the mother of twelve children, from whom has descended a large and highly respectable lineage."

The traffic with the Indians for peltries had been exceedingly profitable for many years, and great fortunes had been secured by many of the traders. In the course of time, however, as the articles of the Indians' traffic became scarcer, and Dutch commodities depreciated in value, the trade gradually decreased, until

finally the expense of sustaining the colony was far greater than its revenues, and the Dutch West India Company discovered itself to be rapidly approaching bankruptcy.

At the commencement the great landed proprietors in New Netherlands were known as "patroons." They were Samuel Godyn, Samuel Bloemart, Killian Van Rensselaer and Michael Pauw. The two former settled in Delaware; Van Rensselaer secured a patent for a large tract on the Hudson, in the vicinity of Albany and Troy, while Pauw became the owner of all the country extending from Hoboken southward along the bay and Staten Island Sound, including Staten Island. The directors made this grant to him in 1630.

The country was purchased from the Indians at the same time for "certain cargoes or parcels of goods," and called Pavonia. The name of this proprietor still attaches to a part of his possessions in the locality known as Communipaw. It was exacted by the company, in the patents which they granted, that the recipients should extinguish the Indian title by direct purchase, in every instance. It was claimed by some that the director general and council had purchased Staten Is-



THE FLAG OF HOLLAND.

land of the Indians in 1626,² but we are not able to find authority for such a statement. The consideration paid to the natives was cloths of various kinds, culinary utensils, ornaments, etc.; the mention of fire-arms was wisely omitted.

Whatever the purchasers may have been it is certain that the Indians were dishonest in their sales of Staten Island, for there is proof that they repeatedly sold it, and that the value of the articles paid varied considerably. It does not appear that Pauw's acquisition was of much benefit to him. Indeed it is not known that he made any effort to colonize it, or that he ever made any improvements upon it. Soon after acquiring it difficulties arose between him and the directors, and he disposed of his territorial rights on the Island, as well as on the continent, to his associate directors for the sum of twenty-six thousand guilders. Pauw was a man of considerable consequence in his native country. He was one of the lord directors of the company, and among their names his is mentioned as the Lord of Aechtienhoven.

David Pietersen de Vries³ obtained a grant for a part of Staten Island in 1636, when he began to make settlements upon it. His first enterprise on the Island was the building of a block fort and signal station on the heights now known as Fort Wadsworth. This, all historians agree, was the first signal station built by white men on the North American continent. Huts were also built near the fort for the accommodation of officials and soldiers, and for a time a trading station, to which the Indians brought furs and where they received articles in payment therefor, was established there. Excavations were made on the hillside for the temporary accommodation of settlers, and were made comparatively comfortable by the use of roughly hewn logs, planks, brush and bark.

August 13th, 1636, was the date of the grant which had been obtained by de Vries from Wouter Van Twiller, and de Vries set sail for Holland two days afterward for the purpose of gathering a colony to come here and occupy the land. Near the end of the year 1638, de Vries returned with his settlers, and thus completed his third trip across the Atlantic ocean to the New Netherlands. When the ship neared the entrance at Sandy Hook he was called upon to pilot it in, as the following extracts from his journal will prove:

"Sept. 25, 1638. On board the ship of the West India Company, sailed from Holland.

"Dec. 26. Got right off Sandy Hook. The captain * * * at

² In 1626, Staten Island was purchased of the Indians; and in the same year, the Island of Manhattan was bought for the sum of twenty-four dollars. The fort upon the latter Island, received the title of Fort Amsterdam, and the colony that of New Amsterdam. - *Mather's Geographical History of New York.*

³ The aboriginal names of the Islands in the

harbor have been preserved more or less perfectly. Staten Island is called in the deed to De Vries, in 1636, *Monacknong*; in the deed to Capellen, in 1655, *Ehquaous*, and in that to Governor Lovelace, in 1670, *Aquehonga-Manack-nong*, titles which are presumed to have covered the portions owned by the Raritans and the Hackensacks respectively. - *Memorial History of New York.*

the request of the passengers, who all had their homes in the New Netherlands, solicited me to pilot the ship in, which I did, and anchored the same evening before Staten Island, which was my property, and put my people on shore."

There was considerable other memoranda made by de Vries, at different dates, which tell in his own language about his connection with Staten Island. August 13th, 1636, he says: "I requested Wouter Van Twiller to put Staten Island down in my name, intending to form a colony there, which was granted." January 5th, 1639, he writes: "Sent my people to Staten Island, to commence the colony and buildings." His possession of the Island, however, was disturbed, as is seen by the entry in his journal on August 20th, 1641: "Arrived, the ship *Eyckenboom*, and had on board a person named Melyn, who said he was the owner of Staten Island; that it was given to him and to Mr. Van Der Horst by the directors of the company. I could not believe this, having left the country in 1638, to take possession of this Island, and in that time have settled there. I could not think that the directors of the company would act in this way, it being granted by the sixth article, and we being the first occupants, and of course it could not be taken from us."

It is said that de Vries was a literary man and the author of an historical work. There is nothing to prove that he resided on Staten Island. The settlers, brought here by him, prospered for a time, until their farms were desolated by savages. De Vries remained in the colony for a number of years, and for some time maintained his hold on the "bonwerie" on Staten Island; but the relations existing between the Dutch and the Indians were not at all favorable to the growth of a settlement here. Though we have evidence to support this statement, in the fact that de Vries' bonwerie was excepted from the grant to Melyn; also, that the fact that an Englishman residing here in the service of de Vries was killed in 1642; yet it is probable that he soon afterward abandoned the attempt to maintain a settlement here.

Cornelis Melyn, a Dutch merchant, made the third attempt to found a settlement on Staten Island. He came from Antwerp, and his first visit was made here in 1639. He obtained an order from the directors on July 3d, 1640, authorizing him to take possession of Staten Island, and "erect it into a colonie." On his passage hither, in February, 1641, the vessel in which he sailed was captured by the "Dunkirkers," losing all he had on board, and after great trials and tribulations reached his native shores in safety. He then applied to the directors for a passage to the New Netherlands, which he obtained, and embarked again, with his family and some goods for trade with the Indians, to the value of about one thousand guilders. The voyage was made in the ship "*Eyckenboom*" (meaning "Oak tree"), and he reached New Amsterdam on August 20th, 1641. The directors gave

him letters patent, bearing date June 19th, 1642, for the whole of Staten Island, (excepting the bouwerie of Captain de Vries), and appointing him patroon of the Island, thus investing him with all the power, jurisdiction and pre-eminences.

Staten Island was again purchased from the Indians on April 13th, 1670, and is noted in history as "one of the most prominent acts in the administration of Governor Lovelace, because it was the final extinction of the Indian claim to the Island." This act has been termed, too, "the most memorable" of his administration, and the Island was described as "the most commodiouslest seate and richestland" in America. The year previous the principal sachem had confirmed the former bargains made with the English; but several other inferior sachems now presented their claims, insisting that they were the owners. To quiet them, a new bargain was made; they executed another deed and possession was given by "turf and twigg." This was the very last sale made by the Indians. They reserved two sorts of wood, however, and even in this century, small parties of Indians have visited the Island to exercise their rights in cutting the wood for the purpose of making baskets.

The original Indian deed is still preserved in the State Library at Albany. Its preamble cites that it was made "between Francis Lovelace, Governor-General under James, Duke of York and Albany, etc., and the Indians Aquopo, Warrines, Minqua, Sachemack, Perman-towes, Quervequeen, Wewaneca, Oneck and Mataris, on behalf of themselves, as the true owners and lawful Indians, proprietors of Staten Island." The conveyance was executed by the affixing of the hands and seals of all the parties and the attesting witnesses as follows: Coons, Steenwick, Major Tho. Lovelace, C. V. Reinjven, Oliff Steven V. Cortland, Allard Anthony, Johannes Vamburgh, Gerrit Van Tright, J. Bedlow, Warn Wessols, Constapel, William Nicolls, Humph'y Davenport, Cornelis Bedloo, Nicholas Antony.

Privilege was given to the Indians to remain until the following May, when, according to agreement, they were to surrender the Island to such persons as the Governor should appoint to receive it. This was done, and on the first day of May, 1670, Thomas Lovelace and Matthias Nicolls "having been deputed by the Governor to receive the transfer of possession from the Indians." The conveyance also contained the following paragraphs:

"The payment agreed upon for ye purchase of Staten Island, conveyed this day by ye Indian Sachems, propriet's is (vizt.): 1, Foure hundred Fathoms of Wampunn; 2, Thirty Match Boots; 3, Eight Coates of Durens, made up; 4, Thirty Shirts; 5, Thirty Kettles; 6, Twenty Guns; 7, A Firkin of Powder; 8, Sixty Barres of Lead; 9, Thirty Axes; 10, Thirty Howes; 11, Fifty Knives."

"It was further covenanted that two or three of the said Sachems, their heirs and successors, or persons employed by them, should once

in every year, the first day of May, after their surrender, repair to the fort, and acknowledge their sale to the Governor, and continue in mutual friendship."

The second paragraph appears as an endorsed memorandum, with the signature of Governor Lovelace attached to it.

Several of the younger Indians were not present at the time at which this conveyance was made; and, in order to secure their full understanding and approval, it was again delivered on the 25th of April, in their presence. Each one made his or her mark upon the document as a witness. The names of those who thus subscribed were "Pewowahone, about 5 yeares old, a boy; Pokoques, about 8 years old, a girle; Shirjuirneho, about 12 yeares old, a girle; Kanarekante, about 12 yeares old, a girle; Mahquadus, about 15 yeares old, a young man; Ashchanewes, about 20 yeares old, a young man."⁴

⁴ This was the final sale of the Island by the Indians, and we have no knowledge of any claim ever being made by them to its soil from that time forward to the present. The Indians were always ready to sell the Island. In 1636, they sold it to Michael Panw; shortly after they sold a part to David Pietersen de Vries; in 1641, to Cornelis Melyn; in 1657, to Baron Van Cappelan, and in 1670 to Governor

Lovelace. To this last sale they were obliged to adhere; there was probably more ceremony about it, which rendered the transaction more impressive. In delivering possession, they presented a sod and a shrub, or branch, of every kind of tree which grew upon the Island, except the ash and elder (some say ash and hickory).

CHAPTER V.

THE DUTCH AT OUDE DORP.



OUDE DORP, (the Dutch words for Old Town), was the name of the first settlement by Europeans on Staten Island. As nearly as can be ascertained, it was located north-west of the present site of Fort Wadsworth, probably in close proximity to the block fort which stood on the heights. It was certainly not farther away from that point than the location now known as Arrochar.

The summer of 1641 witnessed the commencement of the building of Oude Dorp. We take it for granted that the ground in the vicinity was covered with huge trees, some of them probably having withstood



KING CHARLES I.

the storms of a century or more. From these the sturdy Dutchmen hewed the logs with which they built their houses, being able to gather stone for foundation purposes all about them, and shells with which to make their mortar along the shore. During the first year, it is estimated, there were about seven of these low, Holland cottages. They were a story and a half in height, with long roofs reaching almost to the ground. They were rude in appearance, but comfortable for the inmates. Acres of land were cleared near by, and agricultural pursuits were at once commenced, at the same time trading in furs

was kept up and found to be very profitable.

To conceive what this rude little hamlet appeared like, renders it quite necessary to study the Dutch character. We know, both from tradition and fact, that they were a religious people, and that they came from the queerest bit of earth that the sun ever shone upon, or the tide ever washed. Theirs was the oddest and funniest country that ever raised its head from the waves, with a topsy-turvy landscape that aids to render it the most amphibious spot in the universe. Indeed it has been the chosen butt of the elements, and good-naturedly the laughing stock of mankind. The people are the queerest and drollest of all the nations, and yet so plucky, so wise and resolute and

strong, that "beating the Dutch" has become a familiar by-word for expressing the limits of mortal performance. And yet, Holland, besides holding its own place, has managed to gain a foothold on almost every quarter of the globe. An account of its colonies is, indeed, a history in itself. In the East Indies alone it has under its authority to-day more than thirty millions of people. It is no wonder the Dutch have always been wise, and plucky, and strong, for they have had to struggle for a foothold upon the very land of their birth. They have had to push back the ocean to prevent it from rolling in upon them; they have had to wall in the rivers and lakes to keep them within bounds, and they have been forced to decide which should be land and which should be water, forever digging, building, embanking and pumping for very existence!

There is no more terrible, heart-rending story in all history than that of the siege of Harlem by the Spaniards in the sixteenth century, from whose successful Dutch rivals came the first settlers at "Oude Dorp, on Staaten Eylandt." The first possessors of Dutch soil, like those who settled here, were a branch of the great German race. Driven by circumstances from their home, they settled upon an empty island in the River Rhine, called Betamo, or Good Meadow. They were fierce, staunch and defiant, and taught their children only the law of might, and their children grew up to be mightier than they.

History informs us that "their votes in council were given by the clashing of arms, and often their wives and mothers stood by with shouts and cries of encouragement wherever the fight was thickest." "Others go to battle, but these go to war," said the historian Tacitus. It is said of them, too, that even the all-conquering Romans, with Julius Caesar at their head, were glad to compromise with them. Their cavalry could swim across wide and deep rivers without breaking ranks, and their infantry was the best drilled of the world. Sometimes defeated, never subdued, they were patient under subjection only until they were again ready to rise as one man and throw off the yoke. Treachery, oppression, and breach of faith were sure, sooner or later, to arouse Dutch pluck, and Dutch pluck, in the end, has always won.

And now, let us return to Oude Dorp. But in doing so, we must recall the heroism, the majestic patience, and the trust in God, that shine forth resplendent from the darkest pages of Dutch history. Besides risking the perils in crossing a wide and almost unknown ocean, theirs was the lot to face the savage Indians; to hear their yells, and in the best possible manner conciliate their favor and purchase their lands; to clear and cultivate a wilderness; to make the centurian oaks bend and fall before them; to build houses and provide sustenance; to endure the changes of a rigorous climate; to guard themselves from beasts of prey and reptiles; to spend their Sabbath without the privilege of public worship in their wonted temples; and in lonely solitude

to conflict with the tenderest feelings of the heart, in the fond recollections of dear and distant friends and comfortable homes.

In the light of events, it seems but natural to those who study human nature, in connection with history, that the two separate and distinct races should have become common enemies. The aggressiveness of the Dutch, in connection with the characteristic suspiciousness and a self-conscious feeling of undeserved injury, on the part of the Indians, soon led to trouble. Each failed to understand the other; each sought to annoy and wrong. Neither had common rights that the other felt in the least bound to respect.

In 1637, the mal-administration of Director Van Twiller having come to the ears of the Dutch West India Company, William Kieft was appointed in his place. Director Kieft arrived in New Amsterdam in March, 1638, and found the fort greatly dilapidated; the company's property wretchedly managed, and everything betokening the prevalence of disorder. Director Van Twiller, however, had not suffered his own interests to be neglected; his farms were well stocked and his houses in good order. The new director began, with a strong hand, to reform abuses, and to improve his colony; but he was a man of headstrong temper, who would not brook control or advice, and possessed, at the same time, a weak and ill-balanced mind. Like his predecessor, he was addicted to intemperate habits.

During the spring of 1640, some travelers, on their way from New Amsterdam to South River, in Delaware, stopped on the East Shore of Staten Island to take water on board their ship, and while there stole some hogs from the settlers on de Vries' bonwerries. The Raritan Indians, especially those who were residing upon the river by that name, who had shown an unfriendly disposition towards the Dutch, were at once charged with the crime, which was regarded as very serious, and Governor Kieft sent a company of about seventy men, under the command of his secretary, Van Tienhoven, with positive orders to invade the Indian country, capture all the natives he could, and destroy their crops.

When the raiding party reached their destination, they at once became insubordinate, and the secretary lost all control over them. The soldiers declared their intention to murder every Indian they could find, and, reminded as they were, that such a course would exceed their instructions, they persisted, and the secretary, finding that expostulation was in vain, left his men to execute their wanton determination. Quite a number of Indians were killed, and the chief's brother was brutally murdered, after he had been made a prisoner, by Govert Lookermans, one of the soldiers. The crops of the Indians were all destroyed, their wigwams burned, and various other wicked outrages perpetrated. After having satisfied their fiendish spirit, the Dutchmen retired, leaving one of their number, named Ross, supercargo of the ship "Neptune," dead on the ground.

A most sanguinary contest had now commenced, with the Indians, which continued to disturb the colony for five years, and well nigh depopulated it. The causes of war were many. The Indians saw, with daily increasing envy and dislike, the heritage of their fathers occupied by strangers. The settlers, often arrogant and selfish, deprived them of their real or imagined rights. In addition to this Governor Kieft, acting, as he alleged, under instructions received from Holland, proceeded to lay a tax on the Indian tribes for the support of the colony. This naturally aroused their indignation. The feeling of hostility was deep rooted, and they determined upon revenge.

Some time prior to this, Governor Kieft had established a distillery on Staten Island,² and he sold, traded and gave rum to the Indians, and after making them drunk, he and his soldiers imposed upon them in a manner that created an everlasting disgrace to his memory. Even after getting the poor wretches drunk, Kieft made no allowance for the outraged feelings of the Indians, and, heeding not their remonstrances, demanded "blood for blood," and he got it. He offered a reward for each and every head of an Indian, and murder was a daily occurrence.

The time had now come to seek revenge for the murders committed by Kieft's soldiers, and one of the first acts of the Indians was to invade Staten Island. In the summer of 1641, five tribes having banded together, they surrounded the settlement of Oude Dorp, not one of whose inhabitants had sinned against them, and they began the work of murder and devastation. Men, women and children were butchered in the most savage manner, but few indeed escaping death. Every house in the settlement was burned to the ground, and when the sun went down behind the green hills of Staten Island that night, not a white face, save those of the dead, was to be found upon its crimson soil. The block fort on the heights, for some reason unexplainable, was left standing, but deserted. The soldiers, with such of the settlers as were able to join them after the attack, crossed the Narrows and found refuge on the Long Island shore.

Roger Williams interfered in behalf of the Dutch, and a few who were so fortunate as to escape, returned to the Island and at once set to work to rebuild Oude Dorp. Half a dozen log huts were erected upon the foundations of those burned by the Indians, and an effort was made to cultivate the land. Peace was of short duration. The Indians were goaded to desperation by the destruction of their crops, the slaughter of their brethren, and the long-continued course of frauds practiced upon them by unscrupulous men, who first got them intoxicated and then cheated them in all their transactions.

In 1642, eleven tribes banded together and declared war against

² There are various accounts relative to the location of this distillery. Some claim that it was located near Oude Dorp, and others that it was among the excellent springs which

abounded in the locality now known as "the Duck Pond," at New Brighton. It was, however, the first distillery in which rum was made on the North American continent.

the Dutch. Everybody that happened to be in their pathway was murdered, and Onde Dorp was again laid in ashes. Early in the year a young Indian had committed murder and Governor Kieft at once determined to avenge it. He accordingly called a council of twelve men, from among the citizens of New Amsterdam and Onde Dorp, to aid him, in deciding upon the proper course to be pursued. This council advised patience and forbearance, and then proceeded to take up the abuses of the government, and to ask for reforms. Kieft soon dismissed them, forbade their meeting again, and disregarding their advice sent a company of soldiers to attack the Indians. Kieft's anger was chiefly directed to the Raritans, and he entered into an agreement with some of the river Indians to assist him in annihilating that tribe,



FLAG OF THE WEST INDIA CO.

and to excite their blood-thirsty dispositions, "he offered ten fathoms of wampum for the head of a Raritan, and twenty fathoms for the head of every Indian engaged in the murders upon Staten Island." At this time Kieft built a redoubt on the Island, the location of which is not known. Some writers claim that it surrounded the block fort on the heights of the Narrows, and others that it was on the heights overlooking the bay, above St. George, in the vicinity of his distillery.

At this juncture, (1613), the Mohawks, the most powerful tribe in the territory bordering on the Hudson and the Lakes, descended the river for the purpose of levying tribute from the weaker tribes, in the neighborhood of New Amsterdam. These, terror-stricken, fled to the Dutch for protection, and might have been won to sincere friendship, by kindness; but having been received kindly for a few days only, they left the colony and scattered themselves among the adjacent tribes. It was at this period that Kieft, forgetful of the dictates of humanity, suffered himself to authorize a transaction which stains, most foully, his whole administration. At a drunken revel on the 22d of February, 1613, a petition was presented to him by some of the most blood-thirsty of the inhabitants, requesting him to order the extermination of these Indians, thus deprived of a shelter and a home. Kieft readily complied, and when the season of debauchery was past, refused to recall his order. Two parties of soldiers were sent out at night to surprise and destroy the unsuspecting red men. One hundred and ten were killed and thirty were taken prisoners. Nor were these all warriors, who were thus butchered in their sleep. Women and children were cut to pieces, by the swords of these ruthless exterminators, and neither age nor sex were spared.

This outrage led to fatal consequences, as might have been expected. The farms and buildings of the Dutch were destroyed by the exasperated Indians, and their cattle were killed. The war-whoop

was heard from the Raritan to the Connecticut. At least fifteen hundred Indians of the banded tribes were on the war-path, and to oppose these there were not more than three hundred settlers and about sixty poorly-equipped soldiers. Destruction prevailed everywhere, with but one exception. An early chronicle says: "Staten Island, where Cornelis Melyn established himself (1613) is unattacked yet, but stands expecting an assault every hour."

Early in 1644, the Dutch organized an expedition against the Staten Island Indians, consisting of forty burghers, under Joachim Pietersen Kuyter. They were accompanied by thirty-five Englishmen under Lieutenant Baxter, and several soldiers from Fort Amsterdam under Sergeant Peter Cock, and the whole being under command of Counselor La Montague. They landed at a late hour on Staten Island, and marched the remainder of the night. At early dawn they arrived at the place where they expected to find the Indians; but they had been secretly informed of their coming and fled. The soldiers burned the village and carried away five hundred schepels of corn.

Dominie Bogardus and de Vries, the patroon of Staten Island, strongly opposed the course pursued by the directors in their dealings with the Indians, and subsequent events proved their wisdom. "So persistent were they in pressing their views upon the authorities, that they excited their anger, and were charged with a design of ingratiating themselves into the favor of the Indians for selfish purposes, and to the prejudice of the interests of the colony at large." The Indians understood these men, however, and recognized them as friends, and when, later, they made a raid upon Staten Island, they killed some of de Vries' cattle, not knowing to whom they belonged, they expressed their regret for the act, calling him "the friend of the Indians."

Oude Dorp was for the third time the habitation of the Dutch, and was the home of de Vries. He became the most influential Dutchman in the colony. When a difficulty occurred with some of the Long Island Indians, and Kieft found himself in a dilemma,³ he was very desirous of making peace with them; but he could find no one who would

3 In the meanwhile, the Indians upon Long Island began to manifest a hostile disposition, and Kieft found himself involved in new troubles. It was evident from some of his measures that he began to regret his precipitancy, and if nothing else had occurred to irritate him anew, he might have consented to forget the past, and to "bury the hatchet"; but just at this juncture some trappers happened to meet an Indian of the Hackensack tribe, who was clothed in a dress of valuable beaver skins, whom they made drunk and then robbed. On recovering his senses, the savage vowed to kill the first Swannakin (white man) whom he should meet. He did that, and met: an Englishman who was a servant of de Vries on Staten Island, was met by him and killed, and shortly after a man named Van Vorst, while engaged in repairing a house in

the vicinity of Newark bay, met the same fate. Apprehensive of further trouble, a deputation of chiefs of some of the neighboring tribes waited upon the director, whom they found greatly excited, and not disposed to reason with them. He informed them that the only way to keep peace was to surrender the murderer. "We can not do that," they replied, "because he has fled, and is out of our reach." They offered to make compensation for the crime, according to the custom of their people; nothing, however, could possibly be kept but the possession of the murderer. The Indians represented to him that those Indians who had committed the murder, had been taken to the men's room. "Keep them there," he said to the Indians, "they said, "and there they are, the murderers." *Perston, Hebert, and R. Gould, Council.*

serve as ambassador but de Vries, to whom he entrusted full power. He was very hospitably received by the Indians, and they were requested to visit the director at the fort in New Amsterdam. This they refused to do until de Vries pledged himself for their safety.

During the eleven years that followed there was nothing of special importance occurring on Staten Island. But during the year 1655, another serious calamity befell the place. There had been considerable accessions to the population in the meantime, and there were strong assurances of peace. In the early autumn of this year, however, Hendrick Van Dyck, the former attorney general at New Amsterdam, a resident of Oude Dorp, on rising one morning, discovered a squaw in his garden stealing peaches, and in a moment of anger he shot her, killing her instantly.

The authorities took little notice of this rash act; but the Indians did not overlook it. Immediate measures were taken by them to avenge the outrage, and then began the bloody siege known in history as the famous "Peach war." Several of the neighboring tribes united, and early on the morning of the 15th of September, sixty-four canoes, containing nineteen hundred savages, some of whom were Mohicans, and others from Esopus, Hackingsack, Tappan and Stamford, suddenly appeared before New Amsterdam. They landed and dispersed through the various streets, while many of the people were still asleep. Then they broke into several houses on pretense of looking for "Indians from the North," but in reality to avenge the death of the squaw that Van Dyck had shot at Oude Dorp.

Immediately upon their discovery an alarm was given. The officers of the colony and city, and many of the principal inhabitants, assembled, and the leaders of the Indians were requested to meet with them, which they did. They accounted for their sudden appearance under the pretext of searching for some hostile northern Indians, who, they pretended they had been informed, were either in the city or its vicinity. After much persuasion they were induced to promise to go away from Manhattan Island at sunset; but when evening came they still manifested no disposition to leave. They became so unruly as to excite the people, and violent acts were committed by both parties. Paulus Leinderstein Van Der Grist, one of the city officials, was killed by a blow with an axe.

The soldiers in the fort and the city guard were called out, and the invaders were driven back to their canoes. The savages then crossed the river and attacked the settlements there, killing or capturing most of the people. They then came to Staten Island, which at that time had a population of ninety souls, and eleven flourishing bouweries, all of which are supposed to have been at or near Oude Dorp. Twenty-two were killed, including Van Dyck, the thoughtless author of the trouble, and all the remainder who did not escape were carried away

captive, and desolation reigned everywhere on the Island. Thus, for the third time, Oude Dorp was laid in ashes, never to be re-built.⁴

The Indians continued their ravages for three days, during which time they killed one hundred whites, took one hundred and fifty prisoners, and ruined three hundred more in their estates. Alarm spread throughout the entire region, and there was no safety anywhere, for the hostile Indians were prowling about day and night, and killed all who came within their reach.

4 Adrian Post, the overseer for Baron Van de Cappelán, was one of the sixty-seven who escaped massacre and was taken captive. He affirms, with reference to Staten Island, "that all the dwelling houses were burned, in the known conflict with the savages in 1655, and that no other effects were then left than a few beasts, which he, after his imprisonment by them, collected together, and of which the greatest part died, while the few remaining were sold by him for the maintenance of his

wife and children." In relation to the affair we also quote from the reminiscences of Attle Widelar, wife of Thomas Burbank, who settled at "V: Duses": "She sd, there was 2 or 3 houses at Old Town [Oude Dorp] and at Carlsneck & the Indians run off the Island and murdered, at Old Town all Except a little girl who run into the woods. the Indian put on her fathers Cloths and Deroyd, the Girl supposing it to be her father her they said. The Indians Came principally from Bergain."

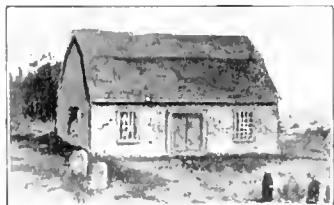
CHAPTER VI.

THE WALDENSES AT STONY BROOK.



NOTWITHSTANDING the Dutch soldiers reclaimed the block fort on the heights at the Narrows, there was no attempt made to effect an immediate settlement of a colony on Staten Island. The few that had escaped with their lives remained with friends near the fort at New Amsterdam. Repeatedly half-hearted attempts were made by the Raritan Indians alone to surprise and capture the fort, but without success; and, there is reason to believe, in a short time a better understanding prevailed between the two distinct races. It is said that the Island had probably again been purchased from the Indians.¹

About 1658, another attempt was made to found a village, this time nearly two miles west of the ill-fated location of Oude Dorp. The new settlement was called Stony Brook, and its location is now included in what is commonly called "the New Dorp neighborhood." The exact



WALDENSIAN CHURCH, STONY
BROOK, 1670.

location of the little village was at the sharp bend in the Amboy road, about midway between New Dorp and Oakwood station. Stony Brook was the first county seat, and also the site of the first Waldensian Church on the North American continent, as well as the first organized church of any denomination on Staten Island. As this chapter is devoted to the settlement of the Waldenses, matters relative to the first

county seat will be set aside for the present.

Around this little Waldensian Church grew up the village of Stony Brook. The structure was built of logs and stones, and was but one story in height. It was the scene of joy and sorrow for many a generation. The present generation is familiar with a number of old dwellings that were erected

¹ Dunlop has set forth that the Island was purchased of the Indians in 1651, by Augustine Herman, but we fail to find authority sufficient to sustain the assertion. A purchase was made of the Indians December 6th of that year, by "Augustine Heermans," acting for Cornelis van Wreckhoven, a Schepen of Utrecht, which covered a large tract lying between the Arthur Kill and the Raritan river; and from the incidental mention of Staten Is-

land in giving the boundaries, the idea may have been gained that the conveyance included this Island. But as Melyn was in undisputed possession here at the time, had been for several years previous, and continued to be for several years after, it is fair to presume that no such purchase was made or intended to be made. *Preston's History of Richmond County.*

at Stony Brook in the earliest days of the famous Waldensian-Huguenot settlement. The Guyon-Clark and the Tysen homesteads, south of the village proper, the old Fountain house, back of the Black Horse Tavern, all still standing, were dwellings of that period; and the old Rose and Crown, which stood at the head of New Dorp lane until 1854, and the Britten house, near Oakwood station, which was demolished about five years ago, were built amid scenes that made up the earliest history of Staten Island. There was also a block fort near the Church and Court House.

The brave Waldenses who built the little church at Stony Brook, came from a Christian community who inhabited a mountain tract on the Italian side of the Cothian Alps, south-west of Turin. The region is divided into three valleys, which lie between France and Italy. The inhabitants are thus brought into communication with both countries; indeed they speak a dialect more clearly allied to the Dauphine than to those of Piedmont; and they have used French as well as Italian as the language of their liturgy.

The religious doctrines of the Waldenses are now similar to those of the Dutch Reformed Church. Their own historians assert that the country has remained from apostolic times independent of the Church of Rome, and boast that they can now show a regular apostolic succession of bishops from the earliest period of Christianity till that of the Reformation. This, however, is disputed. Historians also differ as to the origin of their name. Some claim that they do not take it from that of a valley, but from Peter Waldo, a merchant of Lyons, who, in the Twelfth century, was the founder of a sect which struggled against the corruptions of the clergy. He had the four gospels translated, and maintained that laymen had a right to read them to the people. He exposed in this way the prevalent ignorance and immorality of the clergy, and brought down their wrath upon himself.

Waldo's opinions were condemned by a general council in 1179, and he returned to the valley of the Cothian Alps. A long series of persecutions followed; but Waldo's followers could not be forced to abandon their opinions. They continued to be known as the *Leonisti* from the place of their origin—the poor people of Lyons, from their voluntary penury—*Sabotati*, from the wooden shoes they wore—and *Humilitati*, on account of their humility.

It was natural that a body cruelly persecuted should stand aloof from the church, and even offer armed resistance; yet we have no evidence of the manner in which the Waldenses first became a separate community. They are now known to have been identified with the followers of Waldo; but they must not be confounded with the Albigenses, who were persecuted at the same period. The protest of the Waldenses against the Church of Rome only related to practical questions; that of the Albigenses related to matter of doctrine.

The Waldenses were subject to persecutions in 1332, 1400, and in

1478, and driven into many parts of Europe, where their industry and integrity were universally remarked. So widely had the sect been scattered, that it was said a traveler from Antwerp to Rome could sleep every night in the home of one of the brethren. The story of their persecutions covers many years, and forms some of the darkest pages in the criminal history of the world. People generally acted as if they not only thought it a privilege, but a blessed duty, to injure them by every means in their power. They were repeatedly attacked by troops and overpowered, and their survivors could make no conditions. They were imprisoned in Turin, where large numbers died, while others managed to emigrate.

It is no wonder those tired, but brave, souls sought the comparative solitude of little Stony Brook, even amid all its dangers, and there to rear a house wherein to worship the Father in heaven. Those who reverence the past can scarcely recall the rude little structure with an unquickened pulse, nor recite its simple history with an unmoistened eye. It is clearly evident that those who caused it to be erected must have had some poetry in their imagination and love for the beautiful in their souls. Indeed, how far more beautiful to look upon the rude but pure simplicity of the early Christian, than the gorgeous pile of modern pride and ostentation. We find these simple, ancient relics, at odd intervals among the grandeur of the age; but they speak to us more plainly of man's decay, remind us more forcibly of the immortal day at hand, and tell us more earnestly of God.

More than once the torch of the wicked savage—still smarting under the wrongs perpetrated upon his people by Governor Kieft—was applied, with the evident hope of burning the church to the ground; and more than once the brave Waldenses rallied “for the love of Christ” and “in His name” and saved the sacred structure from destruction. Scores, aye, hundreds of times, for aught we know, it was a source of refuge for the people of the little hamlet, when attacked by rum-crazed savages. And there, too, in the very shadow of the old church, is where they laid their dead to rest; there is where the mother of two centuries ago knelt and wept over the new-made graves of her loved ones who had gone home. The ravages of time have left little to tell us of this ancient church and burial place; but sufficient is known to enable us to point out their exact location.

The Waldenses² who settled on Staten Island were a noble people, and were closely identified with the Huguenots, with whom they are

2 To remember our fathers—the years when erst they came here—the privations they endured; and to cherish and rehearse their virtuous enterprises, is both laudable to the present, and profitable to future generations. * * * of the numerous locations made, and settlements effected in the new wilderness country, as it was then emphatically styled. The settlement of Staten Island will doubtless be re-

garded with peculiar interest and pleasure by its inhabitants. * * * The Island was known to abound with excellent springs of water, from which the Dutch shipping received their supplies of this essential article, and was then [1623] already known and distinguished as a watering place.—*Rev. Dr. Van Pelt's History of Staten Island.*

commonly confounded by the average writer of the present day. Some were Italians and others were French. It was no doubt the common cause for which they were persecuted, which has so easily and naturally placed them in history as one common people. They were an industrious people, and were, in their native land experts as spinners, weavers, dyers, fullers and charcoal burners, and their valiant deeds will never be forgotten while history shall proudly retain the names of Richard, the lion-hearted, and the bloody fields of the Crusades. The Waldenses were a hospitable people, and there is a well-founded tradition that they prevented many a cruel outbreak by the Indians at Stony Brook by the performance of kind acts, in their homes.

Among the first settlers at Stony Brook, the clergy were also the physicians, and they were also expected to know a great deal about the arts and sciences. Over the door of the church, and in every house and workshop of those early Christians, was always to be found the cross of Malta, while underneath it were the never-dying legends, "For the Love of Christ," and "In His Name."

In every house the story of Peter Waldo was as familiar as it was sacred. Every one knew how the prosperous merchant of Lyons was first awakened to the value of the Gospel for all men around him, and then gave himself and his means not only to feeding the hungry, and finding homes for the homeless, but to wayside instruction in the words of Christ. Indeed, he found one and another version of parts of the Old and New Testaments, in the Romance language, which he translated. The very oldest specimen of that language which we have to-day is a paraphrase, of a generation or two before Peter Waldo's time, of the Bible history.

Stony Brook continued to be a distinct settlement, or village, for nearly two hundred years. Indeed, long after it ceased to be the county seat (1727) the various interests of the people of Staten Island centered there. Perhaps traditions and hallowed associations were responsible for the fondness displayed for the old place by the people. The Waldensian Church was demolished near the middle of the Eighteenth century; but a considerable portion of its foundation remains where our forefathers placed it. The block fort was destroyed by fire, about the same time, how and by whom no record is left to tell. Fifty houses, or more, built principally in the Holland style of architecture, at one time were included in the settlement. A considerable majority of these were built of stone, gathered in the neighborhood, and were constructed in a manner calculated to withstand the storms of centuries. Neglect, however, caused many of them to crumble and decay, and like their builders, they have, long ago, passed from sight and memory.

About the close of the Seventeenth century, an effort was made by a London publisher to locate the establishment of churches of various denominations in the American colonies. From the mutilated and

faded pages of a publication bearing upon Stony Brook, we are permitted to quote:

* * * * Ye settlement is located on a brook from which it derives its name. Ye ch^h is small and built of stone, * * * erected when ye village was founded in 1658. * * * Ye preacher discourses in both French and English languages. Native Indians live near ye village, on friendly terms with ye Waldenses, when miscrepulous traders do not give them rum. * * * Ye people cultivate ye land for a considerable distance about ye settlement, but not so far as to be unable to give alarm to ye fort.

* Alongside of ye church is a burying ground, in one corner of which ye native Indians also deposit their dead. This was ye result of a treaty between ye settlers and Indians, and was thus so mutually sacred as to prevent destruction. * * * There is a smith shop in ye settlement. * * * Ye inhabitants number a hundred and a half. * * * A distributing house [grocery] provides ye settlers with ye necessities of life; these are first secured at New Amsterdam, and bro't to ye landg. in a vessel. * * * Ye Indians bring their furs to ye distributing house and dispose of them for provisions. They take blankets, and are fond of gay colours. Articles of food are of less consideration than those which they wear. * * * Ye king's court-house and goal is located in this settlement; it is a small affair and contains criminal prisoners who have committed acts against ye peace of ye community; they are imprison'd here for trial. * * * It is ye h'dquarters of ye military."

There is every reason to believe that the settlement of Stony Brook was considered of much importance, and, according to tradition, was



PETER STUYVESANT.

the abiding place of Lo-ha-tact-tah, an Indian chief whom the Delaware tribes had selected to rule over the Raritans of Staten Island. It is said of this chief that he was always desirous of living on friendly terms with the white settlers; but his weakness for "fire water" often prevented his good intentions from prevailing. The story comes down to us that this chief was once very ill, and his people gave him up to die; but, through the kindly efforts of the Waldenses, he was restored to health and lived for many years. It is a noteworthy fact that no white settler was disturbed during the remainder

of his life, if it were in his power to prevent.

We trace back some of our oldest families, whose names are familiar to us to-day, to the settlement of Stony Brook. The Bedells first settled there. Indeed, the old "Rose and Crown," which was in

the Stony Brook neighborhood, was the birthplace of Bishop Bedell, one of the most eminent divines of the colonies in his day. The Guyons located there, and the original homestead stands to tell the ever-wonderful story of a great and noble people. The Latonrettes helped to build Stony Brook; but succeeding generations wandered off to northern and western parts of the Island and settled. The Simonsons were among the very first to help erect the settlement, and they spread throughout the Island, there being scarcely a portion of it to-day where the name can not be found. The Androvetts recorded their name among the builders of Stony Brook, as also did the Bodines, the Colons, the Corsons, the Crugers, the Deckers, the Egberts, the Fountains, the Garrisons, the Housmans, the Johnsons, the Journeays, the Lafarges, the Lockmans, the Merrills, the Mersereaus, the Perrines, the Poillons, the Posts, the Van Pelts, and others.

The first marriage on Staten Island, of which mention is made, occurred at Stony Brook, the first birth, no doubt, having been at Onde Dorp. The story of the marriage, however, is by tradition, and not by authentic record. It was that of Cornelius Britton and Charlotte Colon. We are informed that the record was made in a Bible which was destroyed by fire very many years ago, and that the event was kept fresh in memory by being repeated to each succeeding generation. It is probable that the first death from natural causes was that of Francis Corson, a soldier, stationed at the block fort in Stony Brook, and that the first grave in the Waldensian cemetery was his.

But Stony Brook long ago ceased to be a habitation by that name, and the graves of its early settlers are this many a year leveled and forgotten. We have had the exact spot where the Waldensian Church and the County Court House stood pointed out to us, by a resident who was so fortunate as to accompany a centenarian to the scene, who had seen and entered both buildings.

A grand story would be that of Stony Brook and its people, could it be written in full. There were the triumphs and defeats, the pleasures and sorrows, the happiness and heartaches— for all these came amid the sunshine and shadow of vanished years.

CHAPTER VII.

STORY OF THE HUGUENOTS.



THE story of the Huguenots—their persecutions and struggles—is one of the saddest incidents in the sable-studded page of ecclesiastical history.¹ The term Huguenots was an appellation given by way of contempt to the Reformed or Protestant Calvinists of France. The name had its rise in 1650; but historians differ as to its origin.

Gaul, which is now called France, in the time of Christ, was a province in the Roman empire, and some of the apostles planted Christianity in it. In the first centuries, Christianity extended and supported itself without the help and against the persecutions of the Roman emperors. Numbers were converted from paganism, several Christian societies were formed, and many eminent men having spent their lives in preaching and writing for the advancement of the Gospel, sealed their doctrine with their blood.

In the Fifth century, Clovis I., a pagan king of France, fell in love with Clotilda, a Christian princess of the house of Burgundy, who agreed to marry him only on condition of his becoming a Christian, to which he consented in the year 491. The king, however, delayed the performance of this condition until five years after the marriage, when, engaged in a desperate battle, and having reason to fear the total defeat of his army, he lifted up his eyes to heaven, and uttered this prayer: "God of Queen Clotilda! grant me the victory, and I vow to be baptised, and thenceforth to worship no other God but thee!" He obtained the victory, and, on his return, was baptised, at Rheims, December 25th, 496. His sister, and more than three thousand of his subjects followed his example, and Christianity became the professed religion of France.

Conversion implies the cool exercise of reason, and whenever passion takes its place, and does the office of reason, conversion is nothing but a name. Baptism did not wash away the sins of Clovis. Before it he was vile; after it he was infamous, practicing all kinds

¹ As to the character of the first settlers of Staten Island, as well as the country generally, it is manifest, from the indubitable evidences which they have left behind, that they were men uniting vigorous bodies with firm and energetic minds; possessed, in no ordinary degree, of inborn wisdom and industry, to-

gether with a daring, hardy, adventurous spirit of enterprise. So that the Staten Islander of the present day, who can trace his lineage back to the Huguenots, will find nothing in the history of his ancestry to crimson his cheek, or make him feel abashed.—*Van Pelt's History of Staten Island.*

of treachery and cruelty. The court, the army, and the common people, who were pagan when the king was pagan, and Christian when he was Christian, continued the same in their morals after the conversion as before. The acts which followed rendered the reformation of the Sixteenth century essential to the interests of all mankind. The state of religion at that time was truly deplorable. Ecclesiastical government, instead of that evangelical simplicity and fraternal freedom, which Christ and his apostles had taught, was become a spiritual domination under the form of a temporal empire.

The irregular church polity was attended with quarrels, intrigues and wars. Religion itself was made to consist of the performance of numerous ceremonies of pagan, Jewish and monkish extraction, all of which might be performed without either faith in God or love for mankind. The church ritual was an address, not to the reason, but to the senses of men. Blind obedience was first allowed by courtesy, and then established by law. For at least one hundred and fifty years complaints were made of the excesses of the church, and the cry for reformation made France tremble!

The French had a translation of the Bible, which had been made in 1224. It had been revised, corrected, and printed in Paris in 1487, by order of Charles VIII., and the study of it began to prevail. Although in 1535, he went in procession to burn the first martyrs of the Reformed Church, yet, in the same year, he sent Melancthon to France to reconcile religious differences; and although he persecuted his own Protestant subjects with infinite inhumanity, yet, when he was afraid that the German Protestants would strengthen the hands of Charles V., he made an alliance with the Protestant princes of Germany, and allowed the Duke of Orleans to offer them the free exercise of their religion in the Dukedom of Luxemburg.

And now began that period of terror that ran throughout the reign of many crowned murderers. Years and years of persecution and murder followed. After many negotiations a peace was concluded in 1570, which lasted for a short time, and then began scenes that shook the civilized world.

One of the gates of the City of Tours is called the gate of Fourgon—being a corruption from *feu Hugon*—signifying “the late Hugon.” According to Eginhardus, the historian of Charles the Great, this Hugon was Count of Tours, and by the concurrent testimony of others, it appears that he was a wicked, fierce and cruel man, who made himself so dreaded while living that after his death, according to the superstition of the age, his ghost was supposed to stalk about at night, punishing all those with whom he met. In consequence of this tradition Davila and other historians aver that the appellation of Huguenots was first given to the French Protestants because of their frequent nocturnal assemblings in vaults, and in the vicinity of *feu Hugon*.

Others credit it to a French corruption of the German word "edigenossen"—or confederates—as originally given to that valiant portion of the Genevians who entered into a confederation with the Swiss cantons in order to make united resistance to the lawless encroachments of Charles III., Duke of Savoy. Others assign it to a more intimately illustrious origin, and ascribe to those who bore it, a design for keeping the crown upon the head of the third race of the French monarchy, descended from Hugh Capet; from whom they derive the term Huguenots.

But whatever may have been the origin of this appellation, those who are here to-day will recount with interest the story of those unprecedented persecutions which drove those early Huguenot Christians of France into exile on Staten Island. During the reign of Charles IX., on the 24th day of August, 1572, was enacted the direful tragedy of the massacre of St. Bartholomew, when seventy thousand Huguenots were butchered throughout France.

Many of the principal Protestants were invited to Paris under a solemn oath of safety, upon the occasion of the marriage of the King



KING CHARLES IX.

of Navarre, with the French king's sister. The queen dowager of Navarre, a zealous Protestant, however, was poisoned by a pair of gloves before the marriage was solemnized. Coligni, admiral of France, was murdered in his own house, and thrown out of the window to gratify the malice of the Duke of Guise. His head was afterwards cut off, and sent to the king and queen-mother; and his body, after a thousand indignities offered to it, hung by the feet to a gibbet. After this the murderers ravished the whole city of Paris, and butchered in three days above ten thousand lords, gentlemen, presidents,

and people of all ranks. The very streets and passages resounded with the noise of those who met together for murder and plunder.

The groans of those who were dying, and the shrieks of those who were going to be butchered, were heard on every hand; the bodies of the slain thrown out of the windows; the courts and chambers of the houses filled with them; the dead bodies of others dragged through the streets, their blood running through the channels in such plenty, that torrents seemed to empty themselves into the neighboring river. In a word, an innumerable multitude of men, women and children were all involved in one common destruction. From the city of Paris the massacre spread throughout the whole kingdom. The same cruelties were practiced everywhere. Some historians claim that at least one hundred thousand were murdered.

But all these persecutions were far exceeded in cruelty by those which took place in the time of Louis XIV. It can not be pleasant, however, to any one's feelings, who has the least humanity, to recount these dreadful scenes of horror, cruelty and devastation, and so we will pass them by at this time.

In 1598, Henry IV. passed the celebrated Edict of Nantes, which secured certain rights and privileges to the Protestants, with the free prosecution of their religious rites. This edict, founded in the true spirit of Christian benevolence, was revoked by Louis XIV., and the scenes of their former persecution were revived with a vigor that had gained strength with its short respite. Their churches were destroyed, thousands were put to the sword, and those who survived, being about fifty thousand, after bearing every indignity from the soldiery, were driven into exile.

They retreated into Holland, where they erected several places of worship, and had among them a number of eminent preachers, among whom were Superville, Dumont, Dubosc, and the eloquent Saurin, who, in one of his sermons, descanting at length upon their persecutions, concludes with the following fine apostrophe to Louis XIV., the tyrant monarch, who had torn open their old wounds, and by whose cruel policy they were driven into exile. The calm, forgiving, philosophical spirit of Christianity with which it abounds, stamps its author as a man of the noblest and most exalted character:

"And thou, dreadful prince," said Saurin, "whom I once honored as my king, and whom I yet respect as a scourge in the hand of Almighty God, thou shalt have a part in my good wishes! These provinces, which thou threatenest, but which the arm of the Lord protects; this country, which thou fillest with refugees, but fugitives animated with love; these walls, which contain a thousand martyrs of thy making, but whom religion renders victorious, all these yet resound benedictions in thy favor. God grant the fatal bandage that hides the truth from thine eyes may fall off! May God forget the rivers of blood with which thou hast deluged the earth, and which thy reign hath caused to be shed! May God blot out of his book the injustices which thou hast done us; and while he rewards the sufferers, may he pardon those who exposed us to suffer! O, may God, who hath made thee to us, and the whole church, a minister of His judgments, make thee a dispenser of His favors—an administrator of His mercy!"

It is generally believed that the Huguenots worshiped with the Waldenses at Stony Brook for some time. They came to this country in considerable numbers from the middle to the close of the Seventeenth century.² It is not exactly known at what date they estab-

² We now come to a period in the civil and religious history of Staten Island of great and even romantic interest: the arrival of the French Protestants or Huguenots. Years before, it is true, some had emigrated with the

Dutch from Holland, but it was not until these shores in considerable numbers, settling with them, and cultivating the soil, gardening and breeding cattle, and their own well known manufactures.

lished their church at Marshlands,³ (now Green Ridge); but mention is made in the records of a "meeting house" at that place in 1695. It is claimed by some that the edifice, in which the Huguenots worshipped as a separate congregation, was standing as early as 1680. The proof of this theory is the inscription from an old brown gravestone, which stood in its appointed place up to about twenty-five years ago, and was then carried away in the night evidently by a relic seeker: "Atil * * nette Colon, * * er 21, 1678; 1E 64."

The following interesting document is of a later period, but certainly relates to the same church property. It is taken from one of the earliest records of the county :

" This following deed of Gifte was recorded for the french Congregashone Residing with In the Countey of Richmond on statone Island the 22 day of may Annoque dom: 1698.

" To all Christaine peopell To whome Theas present wrighting shall Come John bevalle Seanior of the Countey of Richmond and provence of new yorke weaver and hester his wife sendeth Greeting In our Lord God Eaver Lasting now know yee that wheare as Townas Ibbo-sone of the Countey of Richmond yeoman did by his certen wrighting or deed pole under his hand & sealle bearing date The seaventh day of feberary and in the Third yeare of the Reign of our sonvring Lord william the third by the Grace of God of England scotland france & Ireland King annoque dom 1692 Grant bargone sell and convay unto John belvealle of the Countey of Richmond & provence of new yorke weaver his heirs Exekitors Admsi^{os} And asignes A serten trakt or parcell of Land sittiate Lying and being on the west side of statones Island neare the fresh killes begining by the medow and stretchig in to the wood by the Lyne of fransis oseltone dyrekt south three hundred Rood from thence west six degrees & northerly thirtey six Rood thence dyrekt north by the Lyne of Abraham Laemone three hundred Rood thence East thirtey six Rood Containing In all sixtey acres as by the Recited deed pole Relashone theareunto being had doth and may more fully and att Large Appeare Now Know yee that the said John belvealle of Statone Island And provence of New Yorke and hester his wife Testified by her being A partye to the Ensaling and delivery of thease presents Reachd Loufe and Afeccone that they beare to the min-

Bible faith. Many of the descendants from this noble stock now remain to honor the Island of their birth with the sterling character which they have inherited from their ancestors. — *Preston's History of Richmond County.*

3 The Huguenots, I believe, came to Staten Island, if not at the same time, certainly not more than a decade later, than the Waldenses, and they became closely identified with each other because of their persecutions, their language and their religion. The fact is clearly established that the Waldensian settlement at Stony Brook contained quite a number of

Huguenot emigrants. Results prove, however, that they were of a more adventurous nature than the Waldenses; hence the Huguenot settlements at Long Neck (now New Springville), and Marshland, and other parts of the Island. While it is true that the Huguenots are found to have settled in various parts of the Island, the Waldenses do not seem to have developed beyond Stony Brook. It is possible that the two became blended into one, and that the Huguenots were greater in number, and so the Waldenses in time lost their distinct identity. — *Raymond Tysen's Historical Sketches of Staten Island.*

istrey of Gods word and the savashone of yeare soules do firmly by thear presents firmley freeley & absolewtly Give Grante Rattifie & Confirme un to the french Congreygayshone or Church upon Statones Island within the Countey of Richmond wone Arcer of up land ltt being parte and parcell of the afore Recited Tractt or parcell of Land Containing sixty arcers sowld by the said Townes lbbosone un to the said John belvealle which arcer of Land being Laid out on the south & by East side of the brige halfe an acer of the fore Recited Arcer Lying on the south side of the highway and the other halfe of the fore Recited arcer of Land now Given by the said John belvealle and hester his wife Lying and being on the north side the highway opesett against the other halfe arcer To have and to hold the fore Recited tractt and parcell of upland containing won arcer to the french Congreygashone now Residing with in the Countey of Richmond To Ereckt and build A Church upon the same for the ministrey of the Gospell and the maintenance of Gods holy word and ordinantsies and for no other yowse nor purpose unto The french Congreygashone their heirs Exiekitors Admin^{rs} for Eaver and the said John belvealle and hester his wife doth covinante promise and Grante to & with the overseers of the french Congreygashone that they the said John belvealle and hester his wife their heirs Exekitors Admin^{rs} and assignes shall and will for Eaver warend and defend the fore said french Congreygashone Their heirs and sucksessors for Eaver in the quiett and peacebell poseshone of the afore Recited wone arcer of Land aforesaid against the said John belvealle and hester his wife or from any other persone or persones what soe eaver Lawfulley Clayming aney Estate Right titell or interest of in or to the same. In testimony of the same wee the said John Belvealle and hester his wife have heare unto sett their hands and fixed their scales this twelfth day of Aprell and in the tenth yeare of the Reighen of our Sonyring Lord williamme The third by the Grace of God of England scotland france and Irland King defender of the faith Annoque dom: 1698.

The marke of
John I B belvealle O
The marke of
hester G H belvealle O."

" In the presents of
Jacob Corbett
D. Lucas
Jeyn la Tourritte
Joseph bastidoe
Samuel Grasset "

The site of the French Huguenot Church at Marshald may now be described as being directly in front of the large dairy building of Mr. George W. White, the premises being familiarly known as the Seaman estate. There is a tradition that the old church was burned by the

Indians in the early part of the Eighteenth century, and that it was rebuilt a few years later. At the commencement of the present century a portion of the stonework of the rude structure was still standing. It was finally removed for building purposes, and thus the sacred landmark vanished. The old graveyard was a part of a common field on the Seaman estate, up to 1881, when, the property having been purchased by a gentleman who had no particular interest in its preservation, caused the last of the old brown headstones to be removed. Several families residing on the Island to-day can trace their ancestors back to their silent homes in that old graveyard.

The location of this site was described, years ago, as "being in the third field of the Seaman residence." This cannot describe it to-day, as there have been many changes; one of these is the main road, the direction of which was changed in 1831, so that it no longer serves to mark the position of the acre of upland referred to in Belville's deed. The bridge, too, there mentioned, was removed by Mr. Seaman in 1849; but he placed another on the same site, "which was in the northwest corner of the same field, and from which the old road, after crossing the bridge, ran southeast diagonally partly across the field, and then returned joining the present road again near the northeast corner of the field. The church stood on the half acre which lay on the south side of the highway." The dimensions of the church were about 32 by 45 feet, and it stood due north and south. A small stone Dutch dwelling house, probably occupied as a parsonage, stood to the east of it. South of the church was the graveyard. Many of the grave-stones were without inscriptions, of which writers of other days say at least two hundred at a time could be counted. The last inscriptions, (but not the only ones, as has erroneously been written), were the following: "Tennis Van Pelt, died 1765, aged 65 years"; also, "Mary, his wife, died 1762, aged 59 years." There was another, from which

the part bearing the name was broken off; but the date of which was 1784; and another still bearing the initials J. L. and date 1784. The scene, as it appears to-day, is one of rare beauty, and we let another pen describe it:

"This interesting spot commands a prospect of a soft and peaceful character. From its gently swelling knoll the spires of Richmond are seen upon the right, and glimpses of the white edifices of the quiet village may be caught through the trees. Directly in front the



SEAL OF NEW AMSTERDAM.

meadow of Fresh Kill spreads its level surface, backed by the woods and the rising grounds of Carl's neck, while its meanderings may be traced, glistening in the sunbeams or indicated by the mast of tiny craft, till the mountains of New Jersey bound the scene. Such is the spot where those noble exiles, the Huguenots of Staten Island,

erected their first edifice for the free and untrammelled exercise of their worship.

"Should pilgrims be attracted to the sacred place by this notice of it—Staten Islanders perchance, who can trace their families to this illustrious source—let them, as their footsteps press the hallowed soil, recall a Huguenot Sabbath of a century and three-quarters ago. Let imagination picture that humble house of God, rustic in its appearance, but sublime in all its associations. Mark those groups of devout and honest men, of high souled women, the dark-eyed sons and daughters of France! List to the foreign accents of the preacher's voice, and as it dies away, and their solemn anthem swells upon the air, then give them their meed of praise! We grudge not the Puritans their share of honor. Break relies, if you will, from the rock of Plymouth; but let not the Huguenots of France, the Huguenots of Staten Island, be forgotten! By their own children, if by no others, should the great and good be remembered and revered."¹

4 Within a few yards of the present County Court House at Richmond, is located a small graveyard. It was evidently a part of the old Dutch Reformed graveyard, the site of the church of which was directly in front of the Court House, where there is now a street leading down to the Richmond road. In this little graveyard stands a tombstone which tells a valuable historical story. It bears the following inscription:

Susannah van Pelt
was
The Grand Daughter of
Jacob Regean, Sen'r

and the last of five generations
interred in this burying ground

They were Huguenots
who left France when
persecuted for their religion,
settled in this neighborhood,
they selected this spot
for their last resting place
on earth.

Sacred be their dust,
Susannah van Pelt
reached the advanced age
of 99 years, 5 months, 25 days.

This monument is erected by her only surviving relative.

CHAPTER VIII.

UNDER DUTCH RULE.



THE first government of New Netherland was established by the Dutch, under the direction of the authorities invested with power from Holland. They began at once to exercise that aggressiveness that has always characterized the people of that country. While such a course may have done a great deal for them in the long run, it nevertheless at times proved a serious detriment to their general happiness and success.

The seat of government was at New Amsterdam, in the little Dutch fort bearing that name, on Manhattan Island. It was there the sturdy Dutch martinets made laws for the government not only of the civilized settlers, but also endeavored to include such of the savage tribes of natives as happened to be found within their disputed jurisdiction. Between thirty and forty of these tribes occupied Staten and Long Islands, and the countries watered by the Hudson and Delaware rivers and their branches. As has already been stated, the merchants of Amsterdam, through their agents, established trading forts along the rivers, and four houses were built on Manhattan Island in 1613, under the superintendence of Hendrick Corstiaensen.

On the 29th of March, 1614, the States General of the United Netherlands passed an ordinance, granting to all original discoverers of lands in North America, the exclusive privilege of making four voyages to such lands as they had discovered, for the purposes of trade. Under this ordinance, five ships were despatched by a company of merchants the same year. The command of these vessels was given to Adriaen Blok, Hendrick Corstiaensen and Cornelis Jacobsen Mey. They explored extensively the coast near New York.

Blok discovered and named Block Island, south of Rhode Island, and also the East River, to which he gave the name of Hellegat, from the Hellegat River in East Flanders. Captain Mey, proceeding southward, discovered and named Capes May and Henlopen, or Hindlopen. On the return of these ships a Captain Hendrickson was left on the coast, to prosecute discoveries. The tract of country extending from the Connecticut to the Delaware River received the name of New Netherlands; and the exclusive right to trade there for three years from that date, October

11th, 1614, was granted to the discoverers by the States General. Shortly afterward a treaty was made with the Five Nations.¹

The charter granted to the New Netherlands Company by the States General, having expired in 1618, they petitioned for its renewal, but in vain. Private traders, principally the former partners of that company, continued, however, to visit the country for the purpose of traffic.

At this period the attention of the Puritans, who afterwards settled at Plymouth, was attracted to this fertile and beautiful country. Having in vain applied to England for grants of territory in the New World, they intimated in the beginning of the year 1620, to the prominent individuals concerned in the trade to the New Netherlands, their desire to emigrate thither. This intimation was readily and willingly received by these traders, and a petition presented by them to the States General, for their approval of the project. War existing, however, between the States General and Spain, that body thought best not to approve this proposition.

In June, 1621, was passed the charter of the Dutch West India Company, an armed Mercantile Association, which was designed to extend the fame and power of the Netherlands; and to render them formidable upon the seas to Spain, their old and sanguinary enemy. This charter, though not particularly favorable to freedom, was as liberal in its provisions as that of any other commercial association of that period.

The West India Company having been fully organized sent out a ship called the *New Netherlands*, on the 20th of June, 1623, to their newly acquired possessions, under the direction of Captain Mey, already noticed, and Adriaen Joriszen Tienpont. The former of these proceeded immediately to the Delaware, then called the South, or Prince Hendrick's River, and there established a fort, near the present town of Gloucester, which he named Fort Nassau. The same year, a fortified post, called Fort Orange, was erected within the limits of the present city of Albany, a few miles above that erected in 1618, on the Normanskill.

In 1624, Peter Minuit, of Wesel, in Westphalia, having been appointed director of New Netherlands, arrived in the country, bringing with him several families of Walloons, inhabitants of the frontier between Belgium and France. These settled at Oude Dorp, Staten Island, and Wablebocht, Long Island (since corrupted into Wallabout), while a number remained on Manhattan Island.

¹ About the mouth of the Hudson, on the islands and the main land, dwelt tribes belonging to the numerous Algonquin nation. But when the Dutch erected their forts in the vicinity of its junction with the Mohawk river, they had penetrated to the border-line between this and another great Indian family, not quite so populous, perhaps, but much more formidable by reason of their political organization and warlike prowess. These were the

Iroquois, and more particularly that part of them which was known as the Five Nations, a confederacy comprising six tribes, the Mohawks, the Oneidas, the Onondagas, the Cayugas, and the Senecas. But, besides more this confederacy had flowered into a growing strength in their union, they had subdued the surrounding tribes, so much so, that all of their name as by the force of arms. *General History of New York*.

The government of this newly-established colony was vested in the director, and a council of five, who possessed supreme executive, legislative and judicial authority in the colony. The only other important officer of the Government was the Schout Fiscal, who filled both the offices of Sheriff and Attorney General. Under the superintendence of these authorities, the trade of the colony prospered. Then followed the first purchase of Staten Island from the Indians, in 1626. The exports of the colony this year amounted to \$19,000.

In the ensuing year, 1627, amicable correspondence was opened between the Dutch authorities at New Amsterdam and the Pilgrim settlers at Plymouth. In this correspondence the English authority was set up by the Plymouth colonists over the region watered by the Connecticut, and denied by the Dutch. The Council of XIX, of the Dutch West India Company began speculations, the result of which is still felt in the State. It granted land to individuals and made restrictions and limitations to those who wanted to establish colonies in New Netherlands.

Under this grant Samuel Godyn and Samuel Bloemmaert purchased, soon after, a tract on the southwest side of Delaware Bay; and on the 18th of April, 1630, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, a pearl merchant from Amsterdam, secured a tract on the west side of the North River, embracing the site of the present city of Albany. By subsequent purchase, in this year and in 1637, Mr. Van Rensselaer became proprietor of a tract of land now composing the counties of Albany, Rensselaer and a part of Columbia. In 1630, Godyn and Bloemmaert also secured a tract, on the opposite side of the Delaware Bay. Another of the company's directors, Michael Pauw, purchased Staten Island, Jersey City and Ashimus (afterward called Harsimus), with the lands adjacent. This colony was called Pavonia; that on the Delaware, Zwanendal (or the valley of swans), and Mr. Van Rensselaer's, Rensselaerwyck.

Active exertions were forthwith made to colonize these vast estates. Colonies were sent to Rensselaerwyck and Zwanendal, and fortifications were erected. Anxious, however, to participate in the very profitable trade in furs and peltries, the Patroons, in the opinion of the other directors, soon transcended the limits prescribed, in the bill of Freedoms and Exceptions. Hence difficulties arose between the two parties, which materially embarrassed the prosperity of the infant colonies. Minuit, the director, was recalled, partly probably from the machinations of Wouter Van Twiller, who, in the capacity of agent of the company, had visited the colony two years before.

On his way home, in March, 1632, Director Minuit was forced, by stress of weather, to put into the port of Plymouth, England. The vessel was immediately seized, on her arrival, on a charge of having traded and obtained her cargo in countries subject to Her Britannic Majesty. Considerable diplomatic correspondence ensued between

the State officers of England and the Netherlands; and finally, the object of the English Government, (the assertion of their title), having been attained, the vessel was released. During this period the dispute between the Patroons and the colony continued. In the latter part of the year, the Indians in the neighborhood of the Delaware Bay, considering themselves injured, came suddenly upon the colony of Zwanendal, and butchered in cold blood all the colonists, thirty-four persons in number. The next year, Captain de Vries, the founder of the colony, returned from Holland, and finding himself unable to punish the treachery of the Indians, made peace with them.

In April, 1633, Wouter Van Twiller, a relative of the Patroon Van Rensselaer, having been appointed director of the settlement, arrived at New Amsterdam. About this time also Rev. Everardus Bogardus, the first minister, and Adam Roelandsen, the first schoolmaster, arrived in the colony. Van Twiller seems to have been ill calculated to govern the colony, at so stormy a period as this. Addicted to the use of intoxicating liquors, he only resorted to heavier potations, when the emergency called for sober and vigorous action. In the early part of his administration, the Dutch settlements, on the Connecticut, were established.



KING JAMES II.

In 1632, Hans Enclhys, one of the servants of the West India Company, had set up the arms of the States General at Kievits Hoek, (now Saybrook Point), thus formally taking possession of the river. He had also purchased a tract of land at that point, for the company from the Indians. On the 8th of June, 1633, Jacob Van Curler, under the direction of Van Twiller, purchased territory along the Connecticut River, embracing most of the site of the present city of Hartford, and several of the adjacent towns of Tattoepan, Chief of Lickemaen (Little) River. On this territory he erected a fort or trading post, which he fortified with two pieces of cannon.

On the 16th of September following, a vessel commanded by Captain William Holmes, was sent by the Plymouth Colony, who had settled about Massachusetts Bay, ascended the Connecticut. On passing the fort, Captain Holmes was ordered to stop; but being in stronger force than the Dutch, he persisted, and proceeded, (though not without repeated protests from the Dutch authorities at New Amsterdam), to erect, a little above, the frame of a house which he had brought round on his vessel. Trouble between the Patroons and the company followed during the succeeding year to the serious disadvantage of both.

But in 1635, the English at Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay sent

several new colonies to the Connecticut River, one of which, under the command of Governor Winthrop, landing at Saybrook Point, tore down the arms of the States General, and carved a buffoon's face in its stead. They also refused to let the Dutch land on the tract they had purchased in 1632, and erected on the very same tract Saybrook fort. At the present site of Springfield, Mass., Mr. Pyncheon established a trading house and a plantation; and the next year, 1636, Hooker and his followers located themselves in Hartford.

In 1638, Peter Minnit, the first Director of the New Netherlands, who had, after his dismissal from that station, gone to Sweden, arrived on the coast with a Swedish colony, and settled upon the banks of the Delaware, within the limits of the territory claimed by the Dutch. Having erected a fort there, which he named Fort Christina, after the Swedish queen, Kieft protested against his course, as an invasion of his territory; but from the weakness of his own colony, he was obliged to content himself with protesting.

In the latter part of the year 1638, the restrictions which had hitherto been placed, by the company, upon the trade of the New Netherlands, were taken off, and free traffic encouraged. The measure gave a new impulse to trade and emigration; new farms were taken up, and a number of gentlemen of wealth and distinction removed to the colony. Persecution, too, drove many from New England and Virginia to settle among the more tolerant Dutch of New Amsterdam and Staten Island, who, though firm in their adherence to their own creed, did not deem it necessary to persecute those who differed from them in religious tenets.

In the meantime the aggressive disposition of the English settlers still continued. They founded a colony at New Haven, notwithstanding Director Kieft's protests; and even went so far as to plough and sow the company's lands around the Fort of Good Hope at Hartford, assailing and severely wounding some of the men in charge of that post, whom they found at work in the fields. The commander of the fort, Gysbert Op Dyke, promptly remonstrated against the unwarrantable procedure; but the English justified themselves on the ground that, as the lands were uncultivated, and the Dutch did nothing to improve them, "it was a sin to let such fine lands lie waste."

Not satisfied with these aggressions, the Plymouth Company granted the whole of Long Island to the Earl of Stirling, and a settlement was soon afterwards effected by Lyon Gardiner, at Gardiner's Island. The Dutch, in the meantime, were active in establishments at the western extremity of Long Island. Lands were granted to settlers in Brooklyn, then called Breuckelen; at Gowanus, and at Gravenzande, now called Gravesend.

In May, 1640, a company of emigrants from Lynn, Mass., claiming authority under the Earl of Stirling's patent, commenced a settlement near Cow Neck. Kieft having learned this fact, despatched the

Schout, or Sheriff, with a band of soldiers, to investigate the matter; and, if they had actually commenced a settlement, to take them prisoners. This was accomplished, and, after examination, they were dismissed, on condition that they should leave the territory of their High Mightinesses, the States General. In the same year they returned and founded the town of Southampton. They were never again disturbed by the Dutch.

Encroachments upon the rights of the Indians were carried on to such an extent, that a most sanguinary contest commenced in 1640, which lasted for five years, and the colony was almost entirely ruined. All the time Kieft claimed that he was acting under instructions from Holland. The indignation of the Indians knew no bounds when Kieft attempted to lay a tax upon them for the support of the colony. Staten Island, as well as the surrounding country, was a battle ground for many years.

Kieft's advisors counselled patience and forbearance; but he heeded not. It so enraged him that he dismissed his counsel. The horrible scenes that followed have been described in a preceding chapter. The consequences, as might have been expected, were that the farms and buildings of the Dutch were burned by the exasperated Indians; numbers of the settlers were killed, and in a few weeks Kieft was compelled to receive the inhabitants into the fort, as the only place which afforded protection against the assaults of the savages. His course aroused the prejudices of the people against him; and endeavoring to throw the blame of it upon others, he was threatened with assassination. Murders were daily occurrences and the years that followed were filled with horror.

During this whole period, from 1640 to 1645, the English colonists were constantly pursuing a course of aggression, upon the territories claimed by the Dutch. On the southern frontier, too, the Swedes were depriving them of their trade with the Indians, and securing the fairest lands, notwithstanding these had been previously purchased of the native proprietors by the Dutch. The "Colonie" of Reusselaerwyck, meanwhile, removed from these troubles, and cultivating a friendly relation with the Indians, was peaceful and prosperous.

The Assembly of XIX., finding their colony at New Amsterdam decreasing in numbers and wealth, and verging towards destruction, under the management of Director Kieft, resolved to recall him; and in 1645, appointed in his place General Peter Stuyvesant, formerly Director of the Island of Curacoa and adjacent islands. He had required a high reputation for military prowess. Having been wounded in the siege of St. Martins, in 1644, he returned to Holland for surgical aid.

Changes, however, made at his suggestion, in the organization of the colony, and the difference of opinion which existed between the various chambers of the company, relative to the propriety of these changes, prevented him from proceeding immediately to take charge

of his post; and it was not till the 27th of May, 1647, that he entered upon the duties of his office. Meanwhile, the colony continued under the misrule of Director Kieft.

Though possessed of stern integrity and honesty of purpose, yet the strict military education which he had received, had impressed Governor Stuyvesant with ideas of the necessity of rigid discipline, which soon involved him in contentions with the citizens. These, having tasted in their own country some of the blessings of freedom, and witnessing daily the liberty enjoyed by their English neighbors, were desirous of making trial of a liberal form of government. His first controversy was with the guardians of Johannes Van Rensselaer, son of the first Patroon, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, who had died in 1646, leaving his son, then a minor, to the guardianship of Wouter Van Twiller, (the second Director), and one Van Sleightenhorst. This controversy was kept up for a long period, and finally terminated by a reference to the States General.

While this was pending, in 1649 and 1650, the Gemeente, or Commonalty of New Netherlands, instigated by Adriaen Van der Donk, the first Attorney General of Rensselaerwyck, sent repeated remonstrances to the States General, concerning the administration of Stuyvesant, and earnestly solicited his recall. The States General, unwilling to act hastily, in a matter of so much importance, repeatedly appointed committees to investigate the charges made against him; and on the 27th day of April, 1652, passed an order for his recall. Just at this juncture a war with England commenced, and the States General, esteeming it highly important that their interests in the New World should be protected by an officer of courage and ability, on the 16th of May rescinded the resolution of the 27th of April, and Stuyvesant retained his station.

In order to compensate, as far as possible, for thus slighting the wishes of the people, the States General, in 1653, granted to the city of New Amsterdam a charter of incorporation, making the city officers elective, and giving them jurisdiction except in capital cases. During this period the English, against whom Kieft had so often protested, encroached still further upon the bounds of the Dutch. They established settlements upon the Housatonic River and at Greenwich, upon the mainland; and, crossing over to Long Island, organized several colonies there. Quite a number came to Staten Island, where they were kindly received.

In vain Stuyvesant remonstrated against the encroachments of the English colonies; in vain he attempted to remove their settlements by force, or compel the inhabitants to swear allegiance to Holland. For every remonstrance they had a reply; and against the employment of force they made threats, which the more flourishing state of their colonies, he well knew, would enable them to fulfill. They seemed as much offended at his resistance, as the Dutch were by their aggres-

sions; and frequently, in their controversies, laid claim to the whole territory under the King's patent, or on account of Cabot's discovery.

Wearied with these protracted disputes, Governor Stuyvesant repaired to Hartford, in September, 1650, where the commissioners of the colonies were in session, to adjust their difficulties, by a personal interview. Unsuccessful in this, he left the settlement in the hands of four deputies, two to be chosen by each party; and, secure in the justice of his cause, appointed as his commissioners two Englishmen, Willet and Baxter.

On the 29th of September, the commissioners reported articles of agreement, relinquishing to the English half of Long Island, and all the lands on the Connecticut, except those actually occupied by the Dutch, and prohibiting the Connecticut colonists from settling within ten miles of the Hudson. Hard as were these conditions, Stuyvesant, having once agreed to them, determined to maintain them in good faith, and obtained their ratification from the States General, in February, 1656. The English Government never ratified them, nor did the English colonists pay much regard to them, in their subsequent treatment of the Dutch, for in 1655 they seized, (under Cromwell's orders), the fort at Hartford, with all its effects, thus terminating, by force, the existence of that colony.



In 1653, a charge of conspiracy between Governor Stuyvesant and the Indians, to massacre the inhabitants of all the New England colonies, was falsely preferred by the Connecticut and New Haven colonies; and but for the firm resistance of Massachusetts to so iniquitous a transaction, they would have proceeded immediately to destroy New Amsterdam. When this foul charge reached the ears of Governor Stuyvesant, it met with an indignant denial— a denial, to the truth of which his whole life gave the fullest evidence.

In 1659, Massachusetts, pretending that the agreement made at Hartford did not extend further than twenty miles from the coast, claimed the land on the Hudson, above the parallel of 42 degrees, and demanded the right of free navigation of that river. On the southern frontier, too, the Swedes were not idle. To prevent their encroachments, Stuyvesant had, in 1654, erected and garrisoned Fort Casimir, on the Delaware, at the site of the present town of New Castle. Rinsingh, the Swedish governor, soon visited it; and having, under the guise of friendship, obtained admission, treacherously possessed himself of the fort.

The West India Company, indignant at this perfidious act, sent orders to Stuyvesant to reduce the Swedish settlements on the Delaware. Accordingly, in September, 1655, he left New Amsterdam, at

the head of a force of nearly seven hundred men, and on the 16th, Fort Casimir, and on the 25th of September, Fort Christina, the headquarters of the Swedish governor, capitulated, without bloodshed. The terms offered by the Dutch, to the conquered, were so favorable that most of them remained in the colony.

During Governor Stuyvesant's absence, upon this expedition, a large body of Indians, deeming it a favorable opportunity to plunder, came upon the defenceless plantations on Staten and Long Islands, murdered a number of inhabitants and robbed several farms. The return of the Governor, however, put an end to their incursions.

Fort Casimir, after its recapture, became the nucleus of a colony, founded by the city of Amsterdam, and called New Amstel. The terms offered to emigrants were so favorable that it soon became a place of importance, and in 1657, one Alricks was appointed Lieutenant Governor of that and other Dutch possessions on the Delaware.

In 1656, Governor Stuyvesant, who was a zealous and somewhat bigoted supporter of the Reformed Dutch Church, imprisoned some Lutherans, who had come into the colony, and persisted in the observance of their own forms of worship. In 1658, he banished from the colony a Lutheran preacher, who attempted to establish a church of his own persuasion. At Vlissingen, (now Flushing), where the doctrines of the Quakers had made some progress, he attempted, but unsuccessfully, to eradicate them by fines, imprisonment and banishment. Their number increased with their persecution.

In 1663, a body of Indians attacked Fort Esopus, (now Kingston), and killed sixty-five persons. Suspecting that several tribes were leagued together in these hostilities against the colonists, Stuyvesant assembled the magistrates of the adjacent towns, to confer on the measures necessary for the defence of the colony. Having recommended such measures as they thought advisable, the magistrates turned their attention to the civil condition of the colony and urged in forcible language, upon the Governor and the West India Company, the right of the people to a share in the administration of the government.

But then, in 1653, a convention of delegates from the different towns had met in New Amsterdam, and in similar terms had remonstrated with the Governor and company, against the abridgment of their rights as citizens of Holland. Stuyvesant, however, true to his military education, regarded such remonstrances or petitions with little favor.

On the 30th of March, 1664, Charles II., King of England, regardless of the claims of Holland, granted to his brother James, Duke of Albany and York, the whole of the New Netherlands, and the Duke forthwith despatched Colonel Nicolls, with three ships of war, and a sufficient force to conquer his province.

Governor Stuyvesant, hearing of their approach, attempted to put

the fort and town in a state of defence; but the sturdy burghers, tired of an arbitrary and despotic government, refused to second his exertions. When, therefore, the fleet appeared before the city, and offered favorable terms, they insisted upon a capitulation. Governor Stuyvesant, angry at their want of spirit, tore the letter of Colonel Nicolls in pieces before them; nor could he be induced to sign the articles of capitulation till the 6th of September, (1664), two days after they were prepared.

These terms were, perhaps, the most favorable ever offered to a captured city. The inhabitants were permitted to remain in the colony, if they chose, upon taking the oath of allegiance to the English crown; to retain or dispose of their property; to elect their own local magistrates, and to enjoy their own forms of religious worship. The name of the colony and city was changed to New York.

Governor Stuyvesant, soon after the capitulation, went to Holland, but returned to New York in a few years, and spent the remainder of his life there.

In this connection it may be interesting to note the first grants of land upon Staten Island:

Charles the Second, by the grace of God King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the Faith etc., having on the 23rd day of April 1663 appointed Col. Richard Nicolls, Sir Robert Crane, George Cartwright Esqre. and Samuel Maverick commissioners to visit Massachusetts and to reduce the Dutch in New Netherland into subjection to the English, (1 Colonel Documents 142.) and having duly instructed them to proceed with the execution of their commission, did, by his royal patent, bearing date the 12th day of March, 1664, give and grant unto his dearest brother James, Duke of Yorke, his heirs and Assigns, a vast domain, including all the land from the west side of Connecticutt River to the East side of De La Ware Bay, together with full and absolute power and authority to correct, punish, Pardon, Govern and Rule all such Subjects of the King, his heirs and successors, as should from time to time adventure themselves into any of the parts or places so granted, (1 Pat. 139.)

The Duke of York lost no time in giving effect to this patent. As Lord High Admiral he directed a fleet of four ships, the *Guinea*, of thirty-six guns; the *Elias*, of thirty; the *Martin*, of sixteen, and the *William and Nicholas*, of ten, to be detached for service against New Netherland, and about four hundred and fifty regular soldiers, with their officers, were embarked. The command of the expedition was entrusted to Col. Richard Nicolls, one of the commissioners, who was also appointed to be the Duke's deputy governor, after the Dutch possessions should have been reduced. (Brodhead's History of the State of New York, I., 735.)

The fleet sailed in April, 1664; arrived in Boston late in July; remained there nearly a month; sailed thence for New York, passing

outside of Long Island, and dropped anchor in Nyack, now Gravesend Bay, in the latter part of August. (Bryant's Hist. of U. S., II., 260.)

The first offensive act of the expedition was the capture of a block house on Staten Island. (See Clute's Annals, 254, 255.) On Monday, September 8th, 1664, New Amsterdam was formally surrendered, and the Dutch Governor, Peter Stuyvesant, stumped out of Fort Amsterdam, which the English Governor, Richard Nicolls, entered and renamed Fort James.

That the various commissioned and warrant officers of the good ship *Elias* were well pleased with the shores, the plains and the wooded hills of Aquehonga Manacknong, appears from various ancient documents recorded in the office of the Secretary of the State of New York, at Albany. The first is here given verbatim:

“ Colonele Nicolls, his Promise of a
Grant to Capt. William Hill.

“ Whereas, Capt. William Hill, Commander of his Maties Ship, the *Elias* came wth me into these Parts in his Maties Service and hath requested of me five hundred Acres of Land in Staten Island, within my Governm^t not Inhabited or Planted, I doe hereby Promise unto the said William Hill five hundred Acres of Land on the South point of the said Island which when Surveyed shall be allotted unto him or his Assignes he or they Planting it wth in the usual time and rendering and paying therefore to his Royall Highness the Duke of Yorke the accustomed Rent of New Plantacons in this Country. In witnesse whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seale at ffort James in New Yorke on Manhatans Island this 4th day of October 1664.

“ Richard Nicolls [Sealed]

“ Sealed and delivered in
the presence of Thomas } (1 Pat. 6)
Bredon Math. Nicoles.”

On the same day a similar promise of three hundred acres adjoining Capt. Hill's, was made to Lieutenant Humphrey Fox of the *Elias*. (1 Pat. 7.) Six days later Governor Nicolls promised and granted, under like conditions two hundred and fifty acres each to James Coleman, master's mate and master of the *Elias*, and to Andrew Dennis, the purser (1 Pat. 8), and two hundred acres each to Bradbury Clarke, chirurgion; Nicholas Pengelly, gunner; Thomas Comes, carpenter; Henry Miller, boatswain; Ambrose Winne, captain's steward, and Simon Man and John Hughes, gunner's mates. In each case the land promised was to be near, or to adjoin, Captain Hills. (1 Pat. 9.)

The *Elias* sailed away with her officers and crew; none of the promisees named seems ever to have returned to perform the conditions of planting his land. Their rights were regarded as waived or forfeited, as the same land was granted by subsequent governors to actual or constructive settlers.

It may be added that the rent of new plantations on Staten Island

was subsequently fixed at one bushel of good winter wheat for each eighty acres. (3 Col. Doc. 304, 310.)

Eighty acres, or one-eighth of a square mile, seems to have been the unit of grant, as long subsequently the "quarter-section" became the limit of United States Government grants.

Governor Nicolls made two more grants of Staten Island land on October 13, 1664. The first, to Jacques Guyon, a merchant and a Frenchman, of two hundred acres of land "over against the Great Kell," (1 Patents 10) was subsequently made the subject of a survey (1 Land Papers 75) and of a confirmatory patent from Governor Andros (4 Pat. 122).

The second, to Jacques Bandouen, also a merchant and a Frenchman, of two hundred acres of land upon Staten Island "on that side next to the maine Sea over against the greate Kell," (1 Pat. 10).

Captain James Bollen, commissary of ammunition at Fort James, (1 Brod. 49) who had come with the Governor into these parts in his Mat^{ies} Service, jointly with John Pain, Charles Bollen and other associates, received, on December 24, 1664, a grant of a neck of land upon Staten Island, "beginning at the watering place on the east, to run directly west southwest to the other side of the island over against the Navi-sans, and bounded on the north by Hudsons River and the creek called Kell van Cull, with liberty to acquire Indian or other propriety." This grant seems never to have been in any way availed of or confirmed.

This completes the first group of Governor Nicolls' Staten Island grants, or such as were made prior to the general confiscation to the use of the Duke of York of the estate of the Dutch West India Company on Staten Island, in 1665.

A patent granted May 1, 1668, to Hedger and Walton is immediately followed by a confirmatory instrument of the following tenor:

"A confirmation granted to Henry Hedger and Thomas Walton for two Lotts of Land upon Staten Island.

Richard Nicolls Esq^{re} &c Whereas there are foure Lotts of Land upon Staten Island lying and being upon y^e Hill to y^e East of y^e Towne w^{ch} said Lotts were heretofore layd out Proportionably wth y^e rest of y^e Towne Lotts but have layne voyd & undisposed of Now to y^e end some good Improvement may be made thereupon Know yea that by vertue of y^e Comⁿ & Authority unto me given by his Royall Highnesse I have given and Graunted & by theise presents doe Give Ratifye Confirme & Graunt unto Henry Hedger & Thomas Walton who came over into theise Partes wth me in his Mat^{ies} Service & untill this present tyme have continued und^r my command & to their Heires



DE VRIES.

& Assignes two of the aforesaid Lotts of Land that is to say y^e two nearest y^e Towne the one adjoyning to Nathan Whitmores & y^e next adjoyning to that the front of w^h s^d Lotts lyeth to y^e South & y^e Reare to y^e North an East and West lyne running athwart them To have and to hold y^e aforerecited two Lotts of Land & pr misses togeth^r wth Equall Proportion of Meadow Ground Range of Cattle & all such other Rights & Priviledges as belonge to y^e Rest of y^e Towne Lotts unto the said Henry Hedger & Thomas Walton their Heires & Assignes &c The Patent is dated y^e 1st May 1668.

I do hereby Certify the foregoing to be a true copy of the original Record Compared therewith by me.

Lewis A. Scott Secretary." (1 Pat. 14.)

Richard Doddiman and John Kingdom also came over with the Governor, and on May 6th, 1668, received from him a grant of two lots, "y^e one next adjoyning to y^e East of those two granted to Henry Hedger & Thomas Walton & in lieu of the other remaining Lott upon y^e Hill a Lott to be layd out on y^e West syde of y^e Towne Proportionable & Equall to y^e rest the front of y^e said Lotts lye to y^e South & y^e Reare to y^e North an East and West lyne running athwart them." (3 Pat. 13.)

"Governor Nicolls likewise granted unimproved lands to any that were willing to settle and improve the same, and these first grants were made without any previous survey, or without reciting any certain Boundaries, but only to contain for example 100, 200 or 300 Acres adjoyning to such another mans Land or to a certain Hill or River, or Rivulet." (Cadwallader Colden, surveyor general, to Col. Cosby, 1732, 1 Doc. Hist.) (Documents Relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York) 249 U. S. A. minutes.

CHAPTER IX.

ENGLISH COLONIAL GOVERNMENT.



COLONEL NICOLLS having acquired the peaceable possession of the New Netherlands, was appointed by the Duke of York Governor of the province, in the autumn of 1664.

He appears to have been a man of prudence, moderation and justice, and though vested with almost absolute authority, used it in promoting the good of the province. During his administration an effort was made, but unsuccessfully, to determine the boundary line between New York and Connecticut.

In January, 1665, a law was passed, requiring the approval and signature of the Governor, to all deeds of lands purchased from the Indians, in order to render the titles valid. This was necessary, as the Indians frequently sold the same tract of land to different individuals. On the 12th of June, 1666, Governor Nicolls granted a charter to the city of New York.

When the demand to surrender was first made to Governor Stuyvesant, he absolutely refused to take any notice of it; but finally, when it became clear to him that he could not hold the fort, appointed six commissioners, among whom were Dom. Megapolensis and Johanna de Decker, to meet a like number on the part of the English, to arrange the terms of the capitulation. These were just and reasonable, under the circumstances, as they exacted no changes in the condition of the people, nor were their individual rights and privileges to be molested.

Notwithstanding de Decker had been one of the commissioners who had agreed to and signed the articles of surrender, when the English began to change the names of places, and appoint new officers in place of those who had become obnoxious to them, and when almost everything began to assume an English aspect, his patriotism began to revolt, and he earnestly endeavored, when the opportunity afforded, to oppose the work of reform which the English had initiated. This brought de Decker prominently to the notice of Governor Nicolls, who, to prevent further trouble, ordered him to leave the colony within ten days.

Everything became quiet, however, in the course of a few months, and the people generally seemed to be content with the new order of things. Lands that had lain unappropriated now began to be parcelled out to English proprietors, by English authority, and Staten

Island, long settled by the Dutch and French, was now to receive an acquisition of another nationality. Captain James Bollen received a grant of land on the Island; the country between the Raritan and Newark bay was purchased anew from the Indians, and was settled by people from Long Island, chiefly along the Achter Cull, and four families from Jamaica began the settlement of Elizabethtown. Besides Captain Bollen, Captain William Hill, Lieutenant Fox and one Coleman, all officers of the fleet, received grants of land on Staten Island; but as the vessels to which they were attached were no longer needed here, and were sent back to England, they had no opportunity of enjoying their acquisitions.

In 1667, Governor Nicolls was succeeded by Colonel Francis Lovelace, who held the reins of government until 1673, when it was recaptured by the Dutch. Though somewhat arbitrary, and disposed to burden the people with taxes, the urbanity of his manners, and his manifest desire for the welfare of the colony, caused Governor Lovelace to be regarded as a good governor. In 1670, on the petition of the Dutch inhabitants of the colony, he granted them permission to send to Holland for a minister, and guaranteed his support from the public treasury.

On the 7th of August, Captains Evertsen and Bincker, the commanders of a Dutch squadron, which had been cruising off the American coast, entered the Harbor of New York. Governor Lovelace was absent in New England; and the fort and city were under the command of Captain Manning. The fort appears to have been much dilapidated and scantily supplied with ammunition.

The Dutch commander demanded its immediate surrender. Captain Manning asked for delay; but the invaders replied that he should have but half an hour. At the end of that period they opened fire upon the fort, which Captain Manning returned, as well as he was able, until his ammunition was exhausted. The Dutch, meantime, had succeeded in effecting a landing upon Manhattan Island, in the rear of the fort; and, perceiving that further resistance was useless, Captain Manning surrendered, without formal terms of capitulation.¹ Fortunately for the city, the Dutch commanders were men of liberal feelings; and mindful of the courteous treatment their countrymen had received in 1661, they granted every privilege of citizens to the inhabitants.

The name of New York was then changed to New Orange, that of Albany to Williamstadt, and the fort previously called Fort James, to William Hendrick. Captain Anthony Colve was appointed Gov-

¹ The above account of the capture of New York differs materially from that of Smith, which has been copied by all succeeding historians; but is fully substantiated by the documents obtained in England. Captain Manning was not, perhaps, a very efficient officer, but he certainly did not merit the epithets of

"coward" and "traitor," which have been so freely bestowed upon him. The affidavits of the witnesses in his trial prove that his punishment (the breaking of his sword over his head, and incapacitation to hold office), was sufficiently severe for his offense.

ernor. By the treaty of February 9th, 1674, New York was restored to the English. It was not, however, given up by the Dutch until the following Autumn. Some doubts existing, relative to the validity of the Duke of York's patent, both on account of the Dutch occupation, and the fact that it was wrested from that nation in time of peace, he deemed it advisable to obtain a new patent, from his brother, in 1674.

In the Autumn of this year, Major Edmond Andross, afterwards so well known as the tyrant of New England, arrived in New York, and assumed the office of Governor. His administration in New York

seems to have been marked by few striking events. He won neither the love nor the hatred of the citizens; and being absent a part of the time, attending to the nine refractory New England colonies, he did not manifest, in his own state, the tyranny which subsequently rendered him so odious. During Governor Andross' frequent absences, Mr.



ORIGINAL CROCHERON HOMESTEAD, AT NEW
SPRINGVILLE ; ERECTED 1670

Brockholst, the Lieutenant-Governor, officiated.

In August, 1683, Colonel Thomas Dongan succeeded Andross in the government of the colony, and among his first acts was one granting permission to the people to elect an assembly, consisting of a council of ten persons, named by the proprietor or his deputy, and a house of representatives, eighteen in number, elected by the freeholders, to aid in the administration of government. In this year the ten original counties were organized, Richmond, which includes all of Staten Island, being the fourth on the list.

In February, 1685, the Duke of York, on the death of his brother, Charles II., ascended the throne, under the title of James II. Among the first acts of this bigoted and short-sighted monarch, were his instructions to Governor Dongan to allow no printing press to be established in the colony.

Governor Dongan, mindful of the necessity of keeping up friendly relations with the powerful confederation of the Iroquois, visited them in person, and by presents and addresses, won their friendship and alliance. The Jesuit priests, sent by the French among the Indians, were, however, a formidable obstacle to his complete success in his negotiations with the savage tribes; for, residing among them, and conforming to their habits, they exerted a powerful influence in

favor of the French, who had been the hereditary enemies of the confederated tribes. Though himself a Roman Catholic, Governor Dongan was too shrewd a statesman not to perceive the injurious influence exerted by the priests upon these Indians, and accordingly attempted to prevent their continuing among the tribes. But James, more zealous than wise, forbade him to molest them, and ordered that he should rather aid them, in their efforts to convert the Indians to the Catholic faith. In vain Dongan remonstrated; he only irritated his royal master, and in 1688 was recalled.

Governor Andross, who had preceded Dongan, was designated as his successor, and New England was added to his jurisdiction. Preferring to locate himself where he could more easily inspect the conduct of his New England subjects, Governor Andross made Boston his residence, committing the care of the colony of New York to his Lieutenant-Governor, Colonel Nicholson. The latter seems to have been much more mild in his administration than his chief, whose enormities so exasperated the people of Massachusetts that, on the arrival of the news, at Boston, of the accession of William, Prince of Orange, to the throne, they immediately imprisoned Andross and sent him to England for trial.

In New York, the intelligence of the accession of the Prince of Orange did not, at first, produce a civil commotion. After a short time, however, a portion of the populace selected Jacob Leisler, a merchant of New York, of Dutch extraction, and the senior captain of the militia, as their leader, and proclaimed William and Mary. The movement, though popular with the masses, was discountenanced by most of the prominent citizens, who were unwilling to acknowledge Leisler, as a leader. Colonel Nicholson, apprehending popular violence, escaped on board a vessel in the harbor and sailed to England.

On the 3d of June, 1689, Leisler found himself surrounded by a large number of adherents, and assumed the reins of government, associating with himself in the cares of state, his son-in-law, Jacob Milborne. In the spring of 1690, Milborne, at the head of a considerable force, went to Albany, to reduce that town, (which had hitherto remained refractory), to allegiance to the government of his father-in-law. He was unsuccessful at first; but at a subsequent period the fears of an Indian invasion led the people to submit to his jurisdiction. His confiscation of the estates of some of those who opposed him, excited prejudices which terminated in the ruin of both Milborne and Leisler.

A letter from the English ministry arrived in New York, during Milborne's absence in Albany, addressed to "Frances Nicholson, Esq.; or, in his absence, to such as, for the time being take care for the preserving of the peace, and administering of the laws, in his majesty's province of New York, in America." This letter empowered the

person addressed to take charge of the government, calling in the aid of such of the inhabitants as he should think proper, until further orders.

Leisler, being by popular election acting governor, very properly assumed that this letter was addressed to himself, and consequently, by advice of the citizens, who constituted a committee of safety, selected a council from each of the counties, (including Richmond and excepting Ulster and Albany); the two latter not having submitted to his authority. He also summoned a convention of deputies from the various portions of the province over which his influence extended. This convention laid some taxes and adopted other measures for the temporary government of the colony; and thus, for the first time in its existence, was the colony of New York under a free government. The strong prejudices, however, which had been awakened by Leisler's measures, soon produced in the minds of his adversaries a rancor and bitterness, which was perhaps never surpassed in the annals of any political controversy.

This condition of things existed for nearly two years. To the horrors of civil commotion were added the miseries of foreign war and hostile invasion. The French Court, being at war with England, had placed over its colonies in Canada the aged but enterprising Count de Frontenac, the ablest and most formidable governor of their American possessions. This wily veteran at once determined to annoy his English neighbors, and accordingly despatched a force against Schenectady in mid winter, which, after enduring extreme hardships, reached that place in the dead of night, and with the utmost barbarity butchered its sleeping inhabitants in cold blood. Attempts were made to avenge this barbarous invasion, by an expedition against Quebec, of which Sir William Phipps and Fitz-John Winthrop, afterward governor of Connecticut, were the commanders; but through mismanagement and the sickness of the troops, the expedition was unsuccessful.

Colonel Henry Sloughter, who had been appointed governor of New York, by King William in 1689, arrived in 1691. His coming had been heralded a few weeks before by one Ingoldsby, a captain of foot, who, without credentials of any kind, demanded that the fort be surrendered to him. This demand, Leisler, refused to obey; and when Colonel Sloughter, on his arrival, sent the same Ingoldsby to demand the surrender of the fort, Leisler asked a personal interview with him. His enemies, who had determined upon his ruin, seized upon this imprudent hesitation as evidence of treason, and filling the ears of the weak-minded Sloughter with charges against him, they demanded his arrest. The next day he surrendered the fort, and was immediately arrested, and with his son-in-law, after a mock trial, condemned to death for high treason.

Sloughter, however, hesitated to execute the sentence, and wrote

to the English ministry for directions how to dispose of them. Their enemies, thirsting for their blood, were determined not to be thus foiled, and, persuasions having failed, they availed themselves of the known intemperate habits of the Governor, invited him to a banquet, and when he was completely intoxicated, induced him to sign the death warrant. Ere he was recovered from his debauch the unfortunate prisoners were executed. They met death with heroic fortitude, and Leisler exhibited a martyr's spirit. Their estates were confiscated; but their adherents were soon after pardoned, by an act of general indemnity. The circumstances of Leisler's execution roused the indignation of those who had attached themselves to his party, and for many years after the citizens of the State were divided into Leislerians and anti-Leislerians.

In June, 1691, Colonel Sloughter went to Albany, to hold a conference with the Indians. On his return he died very suddenly, in July, 1691; and, until the English Government could appoint a successor, Ingoldsby, the Lieutenant-Governor, assumed the government. The only event of importance, during his administration, was a conference with the Indians, with whom he concluded a treaty.

In August, 1692, Colonel Benjamin Fletcher was appointed Governor, and soon exhibited some unamiable traits of character. In his intercourse with the Indians, he fortunately suffered himself to be advised by Major Peter Schnyler, whose influence over them was unbounded, and who, in his interviews with them, caused a favorable impression of the English. During most of Fletcher's administration he was engaged in controversies with the assembly, principally in regard to appropriations for his expenses. He was empowered by his commission, to take command of the militia of New England, as well as New York; but proceeding to Hartford for this purpose, he found himself thwarted by the stubborn resistance of the people of Connecticut.

Richard, Earl of Bellomont, appointed in 1695, arrived as Fletcher's successor in April, 1698. He was a man of great dignity, resolution and moral worth; and was sent out by the king to take measures for the suppression of piracy, which had, at that period, reached a fearful height. For this purpose the earl, before leaving England, at the recommendation of Mr. Livingston, commissioned Captain William Kidd to sail in pursuit of the pirates and endeavor to rid the sea of them. Captain Kidd accordingly sailed for New York in April, 1696; but after cruising for a while, himself turned pirate, and became the most ferocious and daring of all the ocean marauders. Returning to America in 1701, he sold his ship, and boldly appeared in Boston, where he was arrested and sent to England for trial and execution.

Lord Bellomont died in 1701, and John Nanfan, who had been his Lieutenant-Governor in New York, succeeded him in the government. The administration of Lord Bellomont is stained by the enactment

of one law, which, for its bigotry and intolerance, is deserving of notice. In 1700 a law was passed, directing that every Catholic priest who came into the colony should be hanged. The design of this law was alleged to be to prevent the Catholic priests from exerting an influence upon the Indians, hostile to the English.

On the 3d of May, 1702, Lord Cornbury, grandson of the Earl of Clarendon, and first cousin to the queen, arrived as Governor. Of all the governors of the colony under the English crown, Lord Cornbury received the unenviable distinction of being the worst. Rapacious without a parallel, he hesitated not to apply the public money to his own private purposes; and though notoriously vicious, yet he was so intolerant, that he sought to establish the Episcopacy at all hazards, imprisoning and prohibiting ministers of other denominations from exercising their functions without his special license. He was, moreover, as destitute of gratitude as of courtesy, injuring those most from whom he had received the greatest benefits. His manners were as ignoble and undignified as his conduct was base, and when this hopeful scion of royalty wandered about the streets, clothed as a woman, (which was a common practice with him), the people thought that he had taken Caligula for a model.

So urgent were the complaints against Cornbury, that the queen, in December, 1708, felt herself compelled to revoke his commission. No sooner was he deposed from office than his creditors put him in jail, where he remained till the death of his father, by elevating him to the peerage, procured his liberation. He had attached himself to the Anti-Leislerian party.

Lord Cornbury was succeeded, in December, 1708, by John, Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley. The cheering hopes, to which the appointment of this excellent man gave rise, were doomed to sudden disappointment, as he died on the 5th of May, 1709. He was succeeded by the Lieutenant-Governor, Ingoldsby, whose administration, after eleven months, is only remarkable for another unsuccessful attempt upon the French possessions in Canada, under the direction of Colonel Nicholson, in 1709.

In April, 1710, Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldsby was removed from office, and Gerardus Beckman, the senior Councilor, officiated as governor, till the arrival of General Hunter, in June, 1710. Three thousand Palatines, from Germany, flying from religious persecution in their own country, came over with Governor Hunter. The ensuing year there was another expedition against Canada, but it proved a failure. The assembly, too, did not feel inclined in all cases to pay



ARMS OF DE VRIES.

implicit deference to the Governor's mandates, and there were several disastrous collisions. Measures were adopted, during Hunter's administration, to adjust the boundaries between the colony and the adjacent colonies of New Jersey and Connecticut; but no definite settlement was made.

Few of the colonial governors resigned their office more generally beloved, or more ardently attached to the interests of the colony, than Governor Hunter. The address of the assembly to him, at his departure, in 1719, in its tone of affection and regard, stands forth alone, in those times of distraction. During the period, (a little more than a year), which elapsed between the departure of Governor Hunter and the arrival of his successor, Colonel Schuyler, as senior member of the council, officiated. Under his administration, a treaty, offensive and defensive, was again concluded with the Iroquois.

Governor Burnet arrived in September, 1720, and continued in office till his death, in April, 1728. One of the first acts of his administration was one prohibiting the sale of goods, suitable for the Indian trade, to the French from Quebec and Montreal. The French in Canada were designing to erect a chain of military posts to the Ohio river, and along its banks, thus confining the English to the coast east of the Alleghanies. In pursuance of this design, they proceeded, in 1725, even with the serious opposition of Governor Burnet and Colonel Schuyler, to erect a fort on the Niagara river. The next year, with equal opposition on the part of the French, Governor Burnet erected Fort Oswego, at the present site of the village of Oswego. Contentions arose between the Governor and the assembly, which convened in 1727, and continued to the period of his death. His fine talents, profound learning, and unaffected kindness of heart, however, caused him to be esteemed even by his enemies, and his faults were entombed with him.

Colonel Montgomery succeeded Governor Burnet in 1728, and remained in office till his death, which occurred in 1731. The good will of the Iroquois was regained to great advantage; but the king, in 1729, contrary to the wishes and representations of the best citizens in the colony, repealed the law prohibiting the sale of Indian goods to the French. In July, 1731, Rip Van Dam, the senior councilor, began to administer the government, and continued to hold the office till August 1st, 1732. He was succeeded on that date by Colonel Cosby, who remained in office till March, 1736, the period of his death.²

2 Historians have been much divided in their views of Governor Cosby. Some represent him as an arbitrary, tyrannical and unjust ruler. Others regard him as a man of mild manners, but necessarily driven to harsh measures by the turbulent spirits with whom he had to deal. The act which caused the most serious difficulties in his administration, was his demand that Rip Van Dam, who had officiated as Lieutenant-Governor, previous to his arri-

val, should divide with him the emoluments of his office. Mr. Van Dam offered to do this, provided Governor Cosby would also divide what he had received from the colonies before coming to this country. Governor Cosby, who appears to have been somewhat avaricious, refused to do this, and commenced a suit against Van Dam for the half of his salary. Van Dam attempted to bring a counter suit; but the judges, who were in the Govern-

But a few days previous to his decease, Governor Cosby suspended Rip Van Dam from the council, thereby preventing his acting as Lieutenant-Governor in the event of his death. This act had well nigh produced serious troubles in the colony, for Mr. Clark, who was next in order of seniority, having assumed the government, Van Dam opposed him, and himself appointed various officers. The two parties came into collision, and a civil war seemed inevitable. Each party prepared for such a result, when, on the very eve of a conflict, a commission arrived from England, confirming Mr. Clark in the office of Lieutenant-Governor and President of the council. This, of course, left the other party no alternative but submission. Governor Clark exerted himself to remove all just ground of complaint, from the people. He sought every occasion to conciliate those who were hostile to him, and during the seven years he was in power, rendered himself highly popular. The memorable "Negro plot" occurred in 1741.³

In September, 1743, George Clinton, son of the Earl of Lincoln, arrived in the colony with a commission as Governor. The ensuing year war was declared between England and France, and the colonists prepared to carry it on with vigor. In 1745, the colonies of New England and New York united in an attack upon the French fortress, at Louisburg, and New York furnished ten pieces of cannon and £8,000 towards the expedition. It was surrendered in June of that year. The colonies were seriously molested, during the year 1746, by the Indians, in pay of the French. New York raised £40,000 to carry on the war, and captured the French forts at Niagara, Crown Point and Quebec, in Canada, and elicited aid from England, which was promised, but not furnished.

Governor Clinton resigned in 1753, and in October of that year, Sir Danvers Osborne arrived, as his successor. Deeply afflicted at the loss of an excellent and amiable wife, the cares of the government seemed, to this unfortunate gentleman, an intolerable burden; and on the 12th of October, 1753, five days after his arrival, he put an end to his own existence. Mr. DeLancy, the chief justice, was appointed Lieutenant-Governor a short time previous to Governor Clinton's resignation.

nor's interest, declined entertaining it. The newspapers took up the controversy, and one, conducted by one Zenger, defended Van Dam. The attacks of this journal against the Governor, provoked the latter and his council to such a degree that they directed copies of the paper to be burned by the hangman, and indicted Zenger for libel. At the trial, Messrs. Alexander and Smith, disputed the jurisdiction of the court, and were stricken from the roll of attorneys in consequence. Andrew Hamilton, of Philadelphia, was then employed to defend Zenger, and the jury, without leaving their seats, gave a verdict of acquittal. Hamilton was presented with the freedom of the city, in a gold box, as an acknowledgment of his services, in upholding the liberties of the people, against a governor appointed by the crown.

3 In 1741, occurred the "Negro plot," so famous in the annals of New York. The evidence of the existence of such a plot seems to be meager and insufficient. It is not improbable that a few profligate wretches, whites as well as blacks, had meditated arson; but the only proof of a plot to burn the city was the testimony of a single abandoned woman, whose statements often contradicted each other, and were not corroborated by any of her associates. Yet such was the alarm and infatuation of the citizens, that on this woman's testimony one hundred and fifty-four negroes and twenty whites were imprisoned, thirteen negroes were burned at the stake, eighteen persons hanged, seventy transported to foreign countries, and fifty discharged.

and now assumed the reins of government. Governor DeLancy had a difficult task to perform; but the skill with which he conciliated the two parties did honor to his ability as a statesman.

In September, 1755, Sir Charles Hardy, an admiral in the British navy, arrived in New York as its Governor; but being unacquainted with civil affairs he gave the management of these to Mr. DeLancy. The latter died suddenly in July, 1760, and Dr. Cadwallader Colden, President of the Council, was appointed Lieutenant-Governor. In October of the same year, General Robert Monckton arrived, with a Governor's commission; but left on the 15th of the ensuing month, to command an expedition against Martinique, and the government again devolved upon Dr. Colden. It was during his administration that the difficulties between New Hampshire and New York commenced, relative to the territory now known as the State of Vermont.

Sir Henry Moore arrived in this country in July, 1765, and acted as Governor until 1769, when he died. His course, during the period in which he had served, had been prudent, mild and dignified. His death was much lamented.

Governor Dunmore assumed the Government in November, 1770; but his administration continued only a few months and was marked by no important event. Having been appointed Governor of Virginia, Governor Dunmore was succeeded by Governor Tryon on July 8th, 1771. In 1772, the New Hampshire grants became a renewed source of serious disquietude to the colony; and various other questions which led up to the Revolution were now agitating the minds of the people. Governor Tryon sailed for England in April, 1774, and returned in June, 1775. His administration was the last one under the colonial government of New York.

CHAPTER X.

ESTABLISHMENT OF THE COURTS.



UNDER the original Dutch settlers, the government of New Netherlands was committed to the Director and his Council, of which at first there were five members. This body possessed supreme executive and legislative authority throughout the colony. It had full power, too, to try all criminal cases, and all the prosecutions before it were conducted by a "Schout Fiscaal," whose services were similar to those of a sheriff and prosecuting attorney at the present time.

The "Schout Fiscaal" had power to arrest all persons; but not without a complaint made previously to him, unless he detected an offender committing a crime. It was also his duty to examine into the merits of each and every case within his jurisdiction, and to lay them before the court, without fear or favor to either party. He was obliged to report to the Directors in Holland the nature of every case prosecuted by him, as well as the judgment obtained. It also devolved upon him to examine the papers of all vessels arriving or departing; to superintend the lading and discharging of cargoes, and to prevent smuggling. It was his right to attend the meetings of the Council, and give his opinion when asked; but he could not vote on any question.

Some of the patroons claimed to be measurably independent of the Director and his Council, and they organized courts and appointed magistrates for their own territories. Notable in this particular were the patroons of Staten Island and Rensselaerwyck; but they were constantly at variance with the authorities of New Amsterdam. There was a court of appeal, however, for those who felt themselves aggrieved by the judgment of the Director and his council. They had a chartered right to appeal to the XIX at home—that is, the West India Company. But the directors of the New Netherlands were generally despotic, during their brief terms of authority, and if any one manifested an intention to appeal, he was instantly charged with a contempt with the supreme power in the



KING WILLIAM III.

colony and most severely punished, unless he managed to keep out of the Director's reach until his case had been heard and decided in Holland. A notable instance of this was that of Melyn, the patroon of Staten Island, who appears to have been a thorn in the sides of both Kieft and Stuyvesant.

Religion was regulated by law at that period. It may be a milder way to put it to say that it was recognized by the government of the province according to the established rules of the Reformed Dutch Church, or the Church of Holland. Other sects were regarded with a certain degree of suspicion; but were tolerated so long as they did not interfere with the rights and privileges of others.

When Governor Stuyvesant was compelled to surrender the country to the English, he carefully stipulated for the preservation and continuance of all the political and religious rights and privileges of the people of the province as then enjoyed, allegiance alone excepted, which was conceded by Colonel Nicolls as representative of his government. After the conquest, however, this stipulation was generally held inviolate; but the civil institutions of the country were modified to make them accord with English ideas of government. There are records of instances of persecution for opinion's sake on religious subjects under Dutch rule; but all such matters were instantly rectified when brought to the notice of the government in Holland. The English government also continued this practice.

A political division was formed, in which Staten Island, Long Island and Westchester were united, and called Yorkshire. This was sub-divided into three parts, called "Ridings," and were respectively known as East, West and North ridings. The West riding was composed of Staten Island, together with the towns now of Kings County and Newtown, on Long Island. The term "Riding" is a corruption of the word "Tithing," the name of a division of Yorkshire in England, after which the American "Yorkshire" must have been fashioned. These ridings were established chiefly for the accommodation of the courts and convenience in apportioning taxes.

It was arranged under the Duke's government so that each township had a justice of the peace, who was appointed by the Governor; and at first eight, but afterward four overseers and a constable, who were elected by the people. There were three officers who were charged with the duty of assessing taxes, holding town courts, and regulating such matters of minor importance as were not otherwise provided for by the laws or orders of the Governor. The jurisdiction of the town court was limited to cases not exceeding five pounds in value.

In each riding, a court of sessions was established, composed of the justices of the peace. This court was held twice in each year, and was empowered to decide all criminal cases, as well as all civil ones where the amount of difference exceeded five pounds. Judgments were ren-

dered in this court for sums under twenty pounds, and were final; but in cases exceeding that amount an appeal to the court of assize was allowed. In criminal cases, in which capital punishment was involved, there was required the unanimous concurrence of twelve jurors; all other cases were decided by the majority of seven jurors. The high sheriff, members of the council, and the secretary of the colony were authorized to sit with the justices in this court.

The court of assize was held but once a year, in the City of New York, and it was composed of the Governor, his council, and an indefinite number of the justices. Appeals from the inferior courts were entertained by it, and it had original jurisdiction in cases where the demand exceeded twenty pounds. The Governor appointed the high sheriff for the "shire," and a deputy sheriff for each riding. This court was the nominal head of the government—legislative as well as judicial. This court grew to be looked upon as in reality the governor's "cloak," under the cover of which he issued whatever regulations his judgment or fancy dictated. Indeed, all its members held their positions at his pleasure, and they were virtually obliged to sanction his views and endorse his opinions. Very many of the laws, amendments and orders enacted through the name of this court were exceedingly arbitrary, obnoxious and oppressive to the people. Petitions for redress of grievances had but little effect with this court.

The early governors under English rule imposed duties on imported and exported goods, disposed of the public lands, and levied taxes on the people, for the support of the government. They had control also of the finances of the colony, in common with every other department; and it is believed that this power over the treasury was often used for their own individual benefit.

In orders made at the general court of assize, from the 6th to the 13th of October, 1675, the following appears:

"That by reason of the Separacon by water, Staten Island shall have Jurisdiction of it Self and to have noe further dependance on the Courts of Long Island nor on their Militia."

From this time forward Staten Island has been an independent judicial district, and the first record, which very soon after began to be kept, is still in existence at the County Clerk's office at Richmond. It is a small, square volume, bound in vellum, and besides many quaint records of "sewts," contains the descriptions of the ear-marks of domestic animals, in order that the ownership might be distinguished, as the animals were allowed to run at large through the woods and on unappropriated lands of the Island. Among the very earliest Court records are the following:

"Jacob Jeyoung (Guyon) Ptf	}	In A Action of the Caus
"Isaac See (?) Deft		At A Court held on Staten Island

by the Constable and oversears of the seam on this present Munday

Being the 7 day of febraery 1680 wharas the caus depending Between the Ptf and the deft hath Bin heard the Court ordereth deft to Cleer his flax forthwith and his Corn out of the Barn within ten days from the deat hearof and to clear up his other A Counts at the next Court.

" At A Court held on Staton Island By the Constabl and oversears of the Seam on this present Munday Being the 5 day of September 1680 Sarah Whittman Ptf William Britton Deft. in A Action of the Case to the valew of £4. 10. 6d. The Caus depending Betwixt the Ptf and Deft hath Bin heard and for want of farther proof the Caus is Referred till the next Court.

" Sarah Whittman Ptf

" William Briten Deft.

" At A Court held on Staton Island by the Constabl and oversears of the seam on this present Munday Being the 3 day of october 1680 the Court ordereth that the Deft shall seat up and geett forty panell of soefisient fence for the yons of Sarah Whitman at or Be foor the first of november next in sewing with Cost of sewt."

The regulation of the sale of intoxicating liquors received the early attention of the Court, and the following rates were established throughout the province, which " tapsters " were allowed to charge: French wines, 1s. 3d. per quart; Fayal wines and St. George's, 1s. 6d.; Madeira wines and Portaport, 1s. 10d.; Canaryes and Malaga, 2s. per quart; brandy, 6d. per gill; rum, 3d. per gill; syder, 4d. per quart; double beere, 3d. per quart; meals at wine-houses, 1s.; at beere-houses, 8d.; lodgings at wine-houses, 4d. per night; at beere-houses, 3d.

At the time of the arrival of Governor Thomas Dongan, John Palmer, a gentleman, and by profession a lawyer, resided in New York city. At the time of the separation of Staten Island from the Long Island towns, Palmer was appointed " ranger " for Staten Island. In 1683 he lived on the Island, and was appointed by Governor Dongan one of the two first judges of the New York Court of Oyer and Terminer. He was also a member of the Governor's Council.¹

The Courts were first held in various parts of the Island, wherever convenience indicated. It is not definitely known at what time they were first held at Stony Brook, as a regular place for them. We find the custom, however, prevailing during the early years of the eighteenth century; and in consequence of the County Jail being removed to " Cuckoldstowne," the early name for Richmond, " ye Courts were held at ye Cuckoldstowne Inn." There are several records in existence of Court held at Stony Brook.

The earliest mention of the Court of sessions being held in Richmond, is dated September 2, 1729. Previous to the erection of a Court

¹ Thomas Lovelace, whose official signature is appended to so many of the old documents connected with the conveyance of property on Staten Island, and otherwise, and who at one time was sheriff of the county, was a brother

to the governor, and a member of his council. There was also another brother, named Dudley, likewise a member of the council.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

House at that place the Courts were held in private houses and taverns, as the following entry will prove:

" March 2, 1713—Court a journed till to morow at Ten of the Clock in the forenoon to the North Side To Coll Grahams Court opened, and ajourned Till ye fist Tuesday on 7ber [September] next.—God Save the Queen."

Colonel Aug. Graham, mentioned in the above paragraph, was one of the judges of the Court of Common pleas and sessions. In those days debtors were arrested and obliged to furnish bail or go to prison. The return of the precept of arrest by the sheriff or constable was "Cepi Corpus." It appears that in almost every instance where a prisoner was acquitted by the jury, he was discharged by the court upon payment of costs. The Courts of general sessions were frequently conducted by an overflowing bench, as for example, on the 22d of September, 1761, "there were present the first, second and third judges, and nine justices," making in all a bench of twelve. It was a common thing, too, for a court to be constituted with eight, nine or ten judges. The following extracts from court records are of considerable interest:

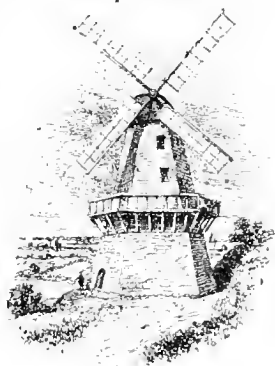
" At a Court of Sessions held for the County of Richmond March 3, 1712.

" Jos. Arrowsmith, Lambert Garrison, Nathl Britton, Abm. Coole, Peter Rezeau, Esqs.

" March ye 4th. Court opened and Grand Jury calld. The presentmts of the Grand Jury brought in; the Court orders proress to be issued out against those presented—viz. Peter Bibout for beating Mr. Mony [Manee] and his wiffe. Barnt Marling, Andrew Bowman, William Foord & The Taylor peter peryne & Vn. Buttler, Peter Catherick and Nathl Brittin Junr all for fighting. John Dove and John Bilew for carrying of Syder upon the Sabbath Day. Abraham Van Tyle for allowing his negro to Cary Irone to the Smiths on the Sabbath day, and Mark Disosway for being drunk on the Sabbath day."

At a court of sessions held March 5th, 1716, "it was ordered by the court that Nicholas Brittin pay Twelve Shillings fine for his misbehavior to Nathl Britton Esq. and also ordered that he beg Justice Brittins pardon and promise to doe so no more, and also to pay all the charges of this action."

September 3d, 1717, all the retailers of strong liquors were summoned to appear before the court of general sessions to show by what authority they retailed; thereupon appeared " Mauris Williams, Jean Brown, Anthony Wright, Barnt Symerson, Daniel Lane, John Garrea,



A DUTCH WINDMILL.

David Bisset, Cornelius Eyman, Lamb^t Garrittson Jun^r Benjⁿ Bill, Jacob Johnson, Isaac Symerson, Joseph Bastido,"—thirteen in the whole county.

Simon Van Name was a justice of the peace and a prominent man in his day. We copy several legal documents issued by him:

"Richmond County

"To the Constable of the north division where as Complaind is made by Euert van name unto me Simon van name one of his Magistices Justice of the peace that Hennerly day owith him the Sum of Senen Shillings and neglect to Pay the same this is theair for to require you to somins the same hennerly day to apear before me at my dwelling house on Thursday next at one of the adlock in the afternoon which will be the 13 day of this instient month els Jugment shall go against him by The fault giuen from under my hand this the tenth of March Ano domini 1728-9

"SIME VAN NAME "

"Richmond
County

to the Constable of
the North devisiion

"Where as there is an action depending between Tommas Morgan plantif & Isaac Garrison Defended Both of the County Abousd [above said] and the Defendant Desires a Jury upon the sd Action These are therefore in his Maiestyes Name to Require & Command you to Symmons Twelve Sufficent Men to Appear Before me on Wensday next at Twelve of the Clock in the afternoon of the Sameday at my Dwelling Hous to Serve as Jyvers upon the sd Action Depending Whereof fail not Given under my hand Thee twenty seventh day of July Annoq. Dom. 1730.

"SIME VAN NAME "

Names attached: "1 Abraham corshon, 2 richard crips, 3 John mengabroll, 4 garret cruse, 5 philip merel, 6 honas deker, 7 barnt swene, 8 ranses bodine, 9 nicholes stilwell, 10 nichles depue, 11 John boker, 12 tunas tebout, nickles bush, mr couanouer, art siman-son, Jacob benet, lambart garison, thomas lisk, alexander lisk, ben goman ayrs."

On the reverse of the venire are the following endorsements:

"Richmond County July the 29 the Jury finds for the sd defendant.
venire 0. 1. 6.
to the constabel 0. 0.
swaring the Jury 2. 0.
swaring y^e evidens 1. 6.
swaring the Constl 6.
Entering verdeck 1. 0

6. 6.

The following is a copy of documents found among the papers of Simon Van Name:

" Know all men by these presents that I Johanis Swame of the County of Richd in the province of New York yeoman am holden and firmly bound unto magdalena Swame and mary Swame and peternal and Elizabeth of the same place in the Sum of two hundred and fourty pounds Current mony of New York to be paid to the Said above mentioned or to there certain Attorneys Exers admrs; or assigns to the which payment well and truly to be made I do here by bind my self, my heirs; Exers; and admrs; and every and every of them firmly by these presents, Sealed with my Seal dated this 7th Day of September in the 6th year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George, by the Grace of God of Great Britain, france and Ireland king defender of the faith Anno Domini 1719

" This Condition of this Obligation is Such that if the above bounden Johanis Swame, or his heirs Exers; admrs or assigns shall well and truly pay or cause to be paid to the above named Magdalena Swame and Mary Swame; peternal Depuy and Elizabeth Garrison; and I am obliged to pay Magdalena Swame Fifty pounds after the Death of Barent Swame her Fathers boorshon [portion] and Mary Swame the Like Sum of Fifty pounds, Current mony of New York of their fathars poorshon and I the said Johanis Swame am obliged to pay to peternal De puy and Elizabeth Garrison Each of them then (ten) pound, Like Current mony for there Fathers poorshon next ensuing the date here of without fraud or further Delay then this present Obligation to be void and of none effect or else to Stand and Remain in full force and virtue

" Sealed and delivered in
the presence of us

FRANSOY BODAIN

PETER PRAAL

" June y^e 13th 1722

Johanis ^{his} I S Swame "

mark

" Then received of Simon van Ame & Aron prall executors of Johannes Swam deceased y^e sum of twenty pounds Currant money of New York & upon this within written bond we say Received by us for our wiefes Peternal & Elizabeth Granted to them by bond as within mentioned.

"SON DE PUY

" LAMBERT GARISON."

" Anno 1723 Den sesde my Dan ontvange van syme van nam Extor van yohannes swem overled de som van vyftegh pont op dese enge schreve bant wy ont vange.

"Johannes decker "

" anno 1723 Den 18 october

" Dan ontvange van Syme van name Exetor van yohannes swem overlede De som van vyftyge pont op dese engeschreve bant en vol

voor myn part ick ontvange madelen swem nouw wyf van charles dedecker wy ontvange.

CHARLES C^{syn} DEDECKER
merk
MADALEN DEDECKKER ”

According to the records the last Court of Common Pleas and General Sessions in Richmond County, under the colonial government, was held on September 26th, 1775.²

The following names appear as justices of the peace in this county: Ellis Duxbury, 1692; John Shotwell, 1692; Abraham Lackman, 1693; Cornelis Corsen, 1689-90; Joseph Billop, 1702-3.

There appears to have been only one case of capital punishment executed under a decree of the colonial courts, and that occurred but a short time prior to the Revolution. A negro, named Anthony Neal, was accused of breaking into and robbing the store kept by Colonel Aaron Cortelyou. The goods stolen were valued at about twenty dollars, and they were all found secreted in a wheat field near by. The accused, after being imprisoned about two months, was tried, convicted and hung. The scene of the execution was the site of the public school-house in Richmond. The negro claimed with his dying breath that he was innocent; and, it is said, that on the day following the execution his wife confessed that she had committed the theft herself.

The Island was in part under martial law during the period of the Revolution, and the native militia performed what was practically police duty. As soon as circumstances would permit, after the peace was declared, the courts were re-established in accordance with the Republican spirit of the times, and have continued uninterrupted to the present day.

² This may reasonably be attributed to the fact that very many of the county records were destroyed at the time of the burning of the Court House, by the British, during the Revolution. It is known that court was in ses-

sion on the morning of the Fourth of July, 1776, Judge Benjamin Seaman presiding. He held the office until 1783, according to the county records at Richmond.

CHAPTER XI.

STATEN ISLAND SEPARATED FROM NEW JERSEY.



URING all the years of Dutch colonial government "Staaten Islandt" was adjudged to belong to Nova Cesarea, or New Jersey. Geographically considered, it was a very natural conclusion. Divided by a slight river for many miles, from the mainland of that colony, Staten Island was half surrounded by it, and the two were practically under one government, with every interest in common. The Indians that inhabited the Island were a branch of the great Delaware tribe, who were natives of New Jersey, and, whenever in trouble here with rival bands, turned to the New Jersey Indians for refuge and protection. Repeatedly the Aquechongas, (an adopted name), when persecuted by their enemies, found a haven of rest beyond the blue hills of Old Monmouth. And when at last they departed from Staten Island, as a tribe, they went back to New Jersey and united in common with the Delawares.

When, in 1630, one of the Dutch patroons, Michael Pauw, "became the proprietor of all the country extending from Hoboken southward along the bay and Staten Island Sound, then called Achter Kull, (now corrupted into Arthur Kill), including Staten Island, the country was purchased from the natives for 'certain cargoes or parcels of goods,' and called Pavonia." The name of this proprietor still attaches to a part of his possessions in the locality known as Communipaw—the Commune of Pauw—which has usually been supposed to be a name of Indian origin. The Staten Island Dutchmen were related, to a considerable extent, to those of Communipaw, and lived on the most intimate terms. They visited and enjoyed each other's hospitality, and traded the products of their plantations; and when in trouble and danger, frequently lent aid and protection to lighten each other's burdens. After the second massacre by the Indians at Oude Dorp, some of the Dutch families who escaped, joined their friends at Communipaw, and, after ending their days at that secluded hamlet, were still represented by many succeeding generations. The following description of Communipaw is



QUEEN MARY.

taken from the *Philadelphia Gazette*, and was published near the commencement of the present century:

"We love, when visiting New York, to explore the antiquated by-places in the environs; haunts where the primeval traits of the New Netherlands still flourish in immortal youth. Among these, Communipaw is pre-eminent. Looking from the Castle Garden, you observe on the Jersey margin of the bay a group of low-lying houses, on which the beams of the sun, or the shadows of a cloud, rest with tranquility. In summer, a sleepy haze lies over that region, and it nestles lovingly in the midst, much like the imaginary realm where the bard of the 'Seasons' fixed the site of his Castle of Indolence:

"A pleasing land of drowsy-head it was—
Of dreams that wave before the half-shut eye;
And of gay castles in the clouds that pass,
Forever flushing 'round a summer sky;
There eke the soft delights that witchingly
Instill a wanton sweetness through the breast,
And the calm pleasures hovered ever nigh;
And whate'er smack'd of 'noyance or unrest,
Was far, far off expelled from this delicious nest."

"To reach this little hamlet, you must cross to Jersey City, (city by courtesy, like the vast metropolis of Camden), and walk a mile or two southward on foot. When there, you may behold a scene of noiseless ease and security, which has been undisturbed for ages. The great Capital, [New York], Brooklyn, Staten Island, the splendid bay flecked with shipping—the Narrows, ending in the aerial hues of the distant Atlantic, and the Hudson, rolling from the north, are all commanded here. To describe Communipaw deliberately would be to iterate the colors of a picture which a master has drawn in *Knickerbocker*, and of which we avail ourselves with no less admiration for its raciness than its fidelity.

"As all the world is doubtless perfectly acquainted with Communipaw, it may seem somewhat superfluous to treat of it in the present work; but my readers will please recollect, that notwithstanding it is my chief desire to satisfy the present age, yet I write likewise for posterity, and have to consult the understanding and curiosity of some half a score of centuries yet to come; by which time, perhaps, were it not for this invaluable history, the great Communipaw, like Babylon, Carthage, Nineveh, and other great cities, might be perfectly extinct—sunk and forgotten in its own mud—its inhabitants turned to oysters, and even its situation a fertile subject of controversy and hard-headed investigation among indefatigable historians. Let me then piously rescue from oblivion the humble relics of a place which was the egg from which was hatched the mighty city of New York!

"Communipaw is at present but a small village, pleasantly situated among rural scenery on that beauteous part of the Jersey shore which was known in ancient legends by the name of Pavonia, and

commands a grand prospect of the bay of New York. It is within but half an hour's sail from the latter place, provided you have a fair wind, and may be distinctly seen from the city. Nay, it is a well-known fact, which I can testify from my own experience, that on a clear, still summer evening you may hear, from the Battery of New York, the obstreperous peals of broad-mouthed laughter of the Dutch negroes at Communipaw, who, like most other negroes, are famous for their risible powers. This is peculiarly the case on Sunday evenings, when, it is remarked by an ingenious and observant philosopher, who has made great discoveries in the neighborhood of this city, that they always laugh loudest—which he attributes to the circumstance of their having their holiday clothes on.

“ These negroes, in fact, like the monks in the dark ages, engross all the knowledge of the place, and being infinitely more knowing than their masters, carry on all the foreign trade, making frequent voyages to town in canoes loaded with oysters, buttermilk, and cabbages. They are great astrologers, predicting the different changes of weather almost as certainly as an almanac—they are, moreover, exquisite performers on three-stringed fiddles; in whistling, they almost boast the far-famed powers of Orpheus' lyre, for not a horse or an ox in the place, when at the plough, or before the wagon, will budge a foot until he hears the well-known whistle of his black driver and companion. And from their amazing skill at casting up accounts upon their fingers, they are regarded with as much veneration as were the disciples of Pythagoras of yore, when initiated into the sacred quaternary of numbers.

“ As to the honest burghers of Communipaw, like wise men and sound philosophers, they never look beyond their pipes, nor trouble their heads about any affairs out of their immediate neighborhood; so that they live in profound and enviable ignorance of all the troubles, anxieties and revolutions of this distracted planet. I am even told that many among them do verily believe that Holland, of which they have heard so much by tradition, is situated somewhere on Long Island, that Spiking-devil and the Narrows are the two ends of the world—that the country is still under the dominion of their High Mightinesses, and that the city of New York still goes by the name of Niew Amsterdam. They meet every Saturday afternoon, at the only tavern in the place, which bears as a sign, the square-headed likeness of the Prince of Orange, where they smoke a silent pipe, by way of promoting social conviviality, and invariably drink a mug of cider to the success of Admiral Van Tromp, who they imagine, is still sweeping the British channel, with a broom at his mast-head.

“ Communipaw, in short, is one of the numerous little villages in the vicinity of this most beautiful of cities, which are so many strongholds and fastnesses, whither the primitive manners of our Dutch forefathers have retreated, and where they are cherished with devout

and scrupulous strictness. The dress of the original settlers is handed down inviolate, from father to son—the identical broad-brimmed hat, broad-skirted coat, and broad-bottomed breeches, continue from generation to generation; and several gigantic knee-buckles of massy silver, are still in wear, that made gallant display in the days of the patriarch of Communipaw. The language likewise continues unadulterated by barbarous innovations; and so critically correct is the village schoolmaster in his dialect, that his reading of a Low Dutch psalm has much the same effect on the nerves as the filing of a hand-saw.”

Under Dutch rule Staten Island's taxes were always collected by the New Jersey authorities, and there is no record of a dispute as to jurisdiction in those years. It is believed that, after Pauw became the proprietor, whatever collections were made, were by virtue of his authority and orders. Yet it is evident that he made payments of taxes to the head of the government at New Amsterdam. It is probable that, throughout that period, Staten Island was of so little importance, because of its meagre population and light cultivation of the land, that the rulers of the provinces deemed it a matter for their subordinates only to deal with.

The provinces having passed from Dutch to English rule, Charles II., made his brother, James, Duke of York, the nominal ruler of his possessions in America, on the 30th of March, 1664. There were practically three elements on Staten Island at that time—Dutch, French, and English. The Dutch and French were united and on friendly terms; but from the commencement looked upon the English with suspicion and dislike, because of their aggressiveness, and their success in gaining possession of the government and the confiscation of the land which the former had long claimed for their own.

These rival elements soon created trouble for the rulers at New Amsterdam. Several plantations on Staten Island were claimed by both, and neither would pay taxes until the authorities would definitely settle the question of proprietorship. There were open ruptures among the people, and in several instances the militia were ordered out to enforce the law and to preserve the peace. There is a tradition to the effect that some of the Dutch settlers absolutely refused to pay their taxes to the English authorities, questioning their right to make the levies, and were thrown into prison, with their property confiscated, for their pains.

These troubles continued until 1668, increasing with each year. Several animated sessions were held by the Council, but to no effect. Finally the Duke took the matter in his own hands, and decided that “all islands lying in the harbor of New York, which could be circumnavigated in twenty-four hours, should belong to the Colony of New York, otherwise it should belong to New Jersey.”

Captain Christopher Billopp, the commander of a little vessel be-

longing to the English navy,² was at the port of Perth Amboy. He performed the task in accordance with the Duke's proclamation, and, according to tradition, had the better part of an hour to spare. It is said that he covered the deck of his vessel with empty barrels, thus gaining considerable sailing power. In consideration of this service, the Duke presented Captain Billopp with a tract of land containing eleven hundred and sixty-three acres.³ There and then he built the house, (still standing), which he named the "Manor of Bentley," in honor of the vessel which had performed the task. He did not receive a deed for the property until 1687. The story of the Billopps and their home is reserved for a later chapter.

The Duke of York at once decided that Staten Island was in New York. In some instances the property, which had been confiscated, was restored to its rightful owners, and the taxes were paid to the representatives of the English crown.



ORIGINAL CORSON HOMESTEAD, CLOVE ROAD, ERECTED ABOUT 1690.

Many years afterward, however, some of the Dutch descendants at Communipaw, of those who had emigrated from Staten Island, presented claims which they insisted were legal, against the unsettled estates of their ancestors here. The matter was before the authorities for several generations; but there is no record that the claimants met with success.

In 1684, the question of the proprietorship of Staten Island was again agitated, some of the landholders becoming apprehensive of the validity of their titles, and some of them, among whom was Captain Billopp, desired to sell. No purchasers being found, however, because of a question as to title, the property remained unsold. Governor Dongan was directed, if the Billopp estate should be sold, "to find a purchaser for it in New York, and not to suffer it to pass into the possession of a resident of New Jersey."

² Some historians claim that the vessel known as the "Bentley," which Captain Billopp commanded, was in the merchant service. Others insist that it was neither a naval nor merchant vessel, but was simply a pleasure yacht. It is claimed by the latter that it belonged to Captain Billopp, personally, as he kept it for private use while he remained a resident of Staten Island, and that he em-

barked in it when he attempted to return to his native land. It was fitted up, however, with the appliances of war, which, in those days of piracy was a necessity to insure safety on the high seas.

³ This tract of land embraces the lower part of the Island, upon which the village of Totenville now stands.

There is still preserved in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, the copy of a letter written by Governor Dongan, who resided on Staten Island at the time, to Sir John Werden, Earl of Perth, and dated February 18, 1684-5. We make the following extracts:

"The Island has been in the possession of his R^{LL} Highness above 20 years, (except ye little time ye Dutch had it), purchased by Gov. Lovelace from ye Indyans in the time of Sir George Carteret without any pretences till ye agents made claime to it; it is peopled with above two hundred ffamilies. . . .

"The Quakers are making pretended pretences to Staten Island, which disturbs the people, and one reason given for holding it is that if his Royal Highness cannot retrieve East Jersey it will do well to secure Hudson's River and take away all claim to Staten Island."

In the meantime the proprietors of New Jersey had complained to Governor Dongan against his encroachments, and the Governor himself did not seem to be perfectly satisfied with his title, for when he obtained his patent from the Duke of York for a large tract upon the Island, he strengthened it by securing another patent from the East India proprietors, who had been the previous owners. This occurred about the time that the province of New York was divided into counties.

But New York claimed jurisdiction, and exercised it over the waters as far as low water mark on the New Jersey shores, when the latter province opposed this exercise of public authority. The authorities of New Jersey claimed that the original grant gave that province jurisdiction to the middle of the Narrows, and therefore it owned Staten Island. On the contrary New York pleaded long possession, and the question was agitated at intervals throughout the colonial period, and for nearly half a century in the State period.

Commissioners were appointed from both States in 1807 to settle the dispute definitely, New Jersey still insisting that Staten Island was within its border. A very angry discussion ensued, but nothing was accomplished. For many years border troubles continued. A deputy sheriff from Staten Island, while serving a process on board a vessel near the New Jersey shore, was arrested and imprisoned for violating its territory; but the State authorities claimed that this was done only to test the question of jurisdiction.

Commissioners were again selected in 1827, to settle the dispute, but they accomplished nothing. A final effort was made in 1833, when the dispute between the two States was amicably arranged by concession. "New York obtained the acknowledged right to Staten Island, with the exclusive jurisdiction over a portion of the adjacent waters, by conceding to New Jersey a like privilege to other portions. New York thus secured the legal claim to most of the Lower bay, quite down to Sandy Hook; and in return New Jersey obtained the same rights over the waters on the west side of the Island, as far as

Woodbridge creek, in the neighborhood of Rossville." Thus the question was settled once and forever.

In consequence of this separation from New Jersey, Staten Island became practically isolated. The people had very few interests which they held in common, and as the years passed by they drifted farther apart. There have been times when the people looked upon each other as "foreigners," and there have been seasons of strife. People hailed each other with epithets, and sectional animosities have frequently created great discord. It is no exaggeration to say that there are people now living who have witnessed overt acts, created for the simple purpose of punishing a resident from "over the Kills," whether it be on this side, or the other!

And long after this feeling had died away, there was almost a total lack of interest and sympathy existing between the two sections. Old ferries, which had for a long time connected the Island with the main land, were closed for want of patronage, and on both sides of the Kills, in each succeeding generation, scores of people grew to old age that never attempted to cross the water from one side to the other.

During the past decade or so, the hand of progress has done much to break down this unreasonable barrier. The building of the great railroad bridge, west of Holland's Hook and Elizabethport, set the people on both sides to thinking, and with that thinking they began to discover the utter uselessness of a dividing line in our daily life—a division in our common interests as a people. The next step was a decided improvement in the management of the old ferry from Port Richmond to Bergen Point;⁴ and, later, if not still more important, was the re-opening of the ferry at Holland's Hook by the electric railroad. The full value of these great connecting links cannot be estimated at this time.

And so, in the principle of true friendliness and progressiveness, Staten Island welcomes to her shores the prosperous, loyal people of a noble sister State. New Jersey! the land where rest the far-famed battle-fields of Trenton, of Princeton, and of Monmouth—the land that holds all that is mortal of Stockton, of Kearney, and of McClellan—to thee, who nestled amid the grand constellation of struggling colonies that formed the American Union, "in the days that tried men's souls"—may the star of thy destiny never grow dim!⁵

⁴ The Bergen Point ferry is one of the oldest institutions of its class connected with Staten Island. It is one of the original Indian ferries, and has been kept up to the present day without omission. But until within a few years past its management was very slack indeed. Throughout the day uncertain trips were made in an uncomfortable boat, which ceased running shortly after sunset, and in the winter months, when there was ice in the river, there were no ferry accommodations at all. It now belongs to a syndicate.

⁵ After the Duke of York had conveyed the territory of New Jersey to Berkley and Carteret, a doubt arose whether Staten Island was included in the grant, by the terms of the charter. Carteret, the governor, not the proprietor, laid no claim to the Island; on the contrary, he tacitly admitted that it did not belong to his jurisdiction, by accepting a conveyance for a tract of land on the Island from Nicholls, the Duke of York's agent; this he would scarcely have done, had he considered

his brother the proprietor. In 1668, the Island was adjudged to belong to New York, because one of the outlets of the Hudson river ran around the Island; while Berkley's and Carteret's lands, by the terms of their patent, were bounded by the river and bay. The Dutch always appear to have regarded the inner bay or harbor as a mere expansion of the river, and the Narrows as its mouth. In their documents, Staten Island is frequently described as lying in the river. If this view

was correct, the Island evidently belonged to New Jersey, because it was embraced within its limits. The Duke of York himself appears to have had his doubts about the matter, for it is said that when the question of jurisdiction was first agitated, he decided that all islands lying in the river or harbor, which could be circumnavigated in twenty-four hours, should remain in this jurisdiction, otherwise in New Jersey.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

CHAPTER XII.

STATEN ISLAND IN 1676.



On the 8th day of June, 1676, two Labadists, Jasper Dankers and Peter Snyter, sailed from Amsterdam¹ in a ship called the "Charles," Captain Thomas Singleton, and arrived at Sandy Hook on the 22d of September following. In their account of the trip, they say:

"When we came between the Hoofden,² we saw some Indians on the beach with a canoe, and others coming down the hill. As we tacked about, we came close to the shore, and called out to them to come on board the ship. The Indians came on board, and we looked upon them with wonder. They are dull of comprehension, slow of speech, bashful, but otherwise bold of person and red of skin. They wear something in front over the thighs, and a piece of duffels, like a blanket, around the body, and that is all the clothing they have. Their hair hangs down from their head in strings, well smeared with fat, and sometimes with quantities of little beads twisted in it, out of pride. They have thick lips and thick noses, but not fallen in like the Negroes, heavy eyebrows or eyelids, brown or black eyes, thick tongues, and all of them black hair. After they had obtained some biscuit, and had amused themselves a little climbing and looking here and there, they also received some brandy to taste, of which they drank excessively, and threw it up again. They then went ashore in their canoe, and we, having a better breeze, sailed ahead handsomely. . . .

"October 9th, Monday.—We remained at home two days, except I went out to ascertain whether there was any way of going over to Staten Island.

"10, Tuesday.—Finding no opportunity of going to Staten Island, we asked our old Friend Symon, who had come over from Gonanes, what was the best way for us to go there, when he offered us his services to take us over in his skiff, which we accepted, and at dusk accompanied him in his boat to Gonanes, where we arrived about 8 o'clock, and where he welcomed us and entertained us well.

"11, Wednesday.—We embarked early this morning in his boat, and rowed over to Staten Island, where we arrived about 8 o'clock.

¹ Extract from a manuscript found in the City of Amsterdam, several years since, by the Hon. H. C. Murphy.

² Hamel's Hoofden—the Narrows, between

Staten and Long Islands. These "Hoofden," or headlands, were named after Hendrick Hamel, one of the directors of the West India Company.

He left us there, and we went on our way. This Island is about 32 miles long and four broad. Its sides are very irregular, with projecting points and indenting bays and creeks running deep into the country. It lies for the most part east and west, and is somewhat triangular; the most prominent point is to the west. On the east side is the narrow passage which they call the channel, by which it is separated from the high point of Long Island. On the south is the great bay, which is enclosed by Nayag, t'Conijnen island, Rentselaer's Hook, Neversink, etc. On the west is the Raritans. On the north and north-west is New Jersey, from which it is separated by a large creek or arm of the river called Kil Van Kol. The eastern part is high and steep, and has few inhabitants. It is the usual place where ships ready for sea stop to take in water. The whole south side is a large plain, with much salt meadow or marsh, and several creeks.

"The west point is flat, and on or around it is a large creek with much marsh, but to the north of this creek it is high and hilly, and beyond that it begins to be more level, but not so low as on the other side, and is well populated. On the north-west it is well provided



FIRST COUNTY COURT HOUSE AND
JAIL, 1683.

Drawn from description by the author

with creeks and marshes, and the land is generally better than on the south side, although there is a good parcel of land in the middle of the latter. As it is in the middle or most hilly part of the Island, it is uninhabited, although the soil is better than the land around it; but in consequence of its being away from the water, and lying so high, no one will live

there, the creeks and rivers being so serviceable to them in enabling them to go to the city, and for fishing and catching oysters, and for being near the salt meadow. The woods are used for pasturing horses and cattle, for, being an island, none of them can get off. Each person has marks upon his own by which he can find them when he wants them. When the population shall increase, these places will be taken up. Game of all kinds is plenty, and twenty-five or thirty deer are sometimes seen in a herd. A boy who came in a house where we were, told us he had shot ten the last winter himself, and more than forty in his life, and in the same manner other game. We tasted here the best grapes. There are about one hundred families on the Island, of which the English constitute the least portion, and the Dutch and French divide between them about equally the greater portion. They have neither church nor minister, and live rather far from each other, and inconveniently to meet together. The English are less disposed to religion, and inquire little after it; but in case there was a minister, would contribute to his support. The French and Dutch are very desirous and eager for one, for they spoke of it wherever we went. The French are good Reformed church-men, and

some of them are Walloons. The Dutch are also from different quarters. We reached the Island, as I have said, about 9 o'clock, directly opposite Gouanes, not far from the watering-place. We proceeded southwardly along the shore of the highland on the east end, where it was sometimes stony and rocky, and sometimes sandy, supplied with fine, constantly flowing springs, with which at times we quenched our thirst.

"We had now come nearly to the furthest point on the southeast, behind which I had observed several houses when we came in with the ship. We had also made inquiry as to the villages through which we would have to pass, and they told us the 'Oude Dorp' would be the first one we would come to; but my comrade finding the point very rocky and difficult, and believing the village was an island, and as we discovered no path to follow, we determined to clamber to the top of this steep bluff, through the bushes and thickets, which we accomplished with great difficulty and in a perspiration. We found as little of a road above as below, and nothing but woods, through which no one could see. There appeared to be a little foot-path along the edge, which I followed a short distance to the side of the point; but my companion calling me, and saying that he thought we had certainly passed by the road to the Oude Dorp, and observing myself that the little path led down to the point, I returned again, and we followed it the other way, which led us back to the place where we started. We supposed we ought to go from the shore to find the road to Oude Dorp, and seeing here these slight tracks into the woods, we followed them as far as we could, till at last they ran to nothing else than dry leaves.

"Having wandered an hour or more in the woods, now in the hollow and then over a hill, at one time through a swamp, at another across a brook, without finding any road or path, we entirely lost the way. We could see nothing but the sky through the thick branches of the trees over our heads, and we thought it best to break out of the woods entirely and regain the shore. I had taken an observation of the shore and point, having been able to look at the sun, which shone extraordinarily hot in the thick woods, without the least breath of air stirring. We made our way at last, as well as we could, out of the woods, and struck the shore a quarter of an hour's distance from where we began to climb up. We were rejoiced, as there was a house not far from the place where we came out. We went to it to see if we could find any one who would show us the way a little. There was no master in it, but an English woman with negroes and servants. We first asked her as to the road, and then for something to drink, and also for some one to show us the road, but she refused the last, although we were willing to pay for it; she was a cross woman. She said she had never been at the village, and her folks must work, and we would certainly have to go away as wise as we came. She said,

however, we must follow the shore, as we did. We went now over the rocky point, which we were no sooner over than we saw a pretty little sand bay, and a small creek, and not far from there, cattle and houses. We also saw the point from which the little path led from the hill above, where I was when my comrade called me. We would not have had more than three hundred steps to go to have been where we now were. It was very hot, and we perspired a great deal. We went on to the little creek to sit down and rest ourselves there, and to cool our feet, and then proceeded to the houses which constituted the Oude Dorp. It was now about two o'clock. There were seven houses, but only three in which anybody lived. The others were abandoned, and their owners gone to live on better places on the Island, because the ground around this village was worn out and barren, and also too limited for their use. We went into the first house, which was inhabited by English, and there rested ourselves and eat, and inquired further after the road; the woman was cross, and her husband not much better. We had to pay here for what we eat, which we have not done before. We paid three guilders in seewan, although we only drank water. We proceeded by a tolerable good road to Nieuwe Dorp; but as the road ran continually in the woods we got astray in them. It was dark, and we were compelled to break our way through the woods and thickets, and we went a great distance before we succeeded, when it was almost entirely dark. We saw a house at a distance to which we directed ourselves across the bushes; it was the first house of the Nieuwe Dorp. We found there an Englishman who could speak Dutch, and who received us very cordially into his house, where we had as good as he and his wife had. She was a Dutch woman from the Manhattans, who was glad to have us in her house.

"12th, Thursday.—Although we had not slept well, we had to resume our journey with the day. The man where we slept set us on the road. We had no more villages to go to, but went from one plantation to another, for the most part belonging to French, who showed us every kindness because we conversed with them in French.

"About one-third of the distance from the south side to the west end is still all woods, and is very little visited. We had to go along the shore, finding sometimes fine creeks well provided with wild turkeys, geese, snipe, and wood-hens. Lying rotting on the shore were thousands of fish called *marshaucken*, which are about the size of a common carp. These fish swim close together in large schools, and are pursued by other fish so that they are forced upon the shore in order to avoid the mouths of their enemies, and when the water falls they are left to die, food for the eagles and other birds of prey. Proceeding thus along, we came to the west point, where an Englishman lived alone, some distance from the road. We ate something here, and he gave us the consolation that we would have a very bad road for two or three hours ahead, which indeed we experienced, for



DANIEL D. TOMPKINS

Daniel D. Tompkins



there was neither path nor road. He showed us as well as he could. There was a large creek to cross which ran very far into the land, and when we got on the other side of it we must, he said, go outward along the shore. After we had gone a piece of the way through the woods, we came to a valley with a brook running through it, which we took to be the creek, or the end of it. We turned around as short as we could, in order to go back again to the shore, which we reached after wandering a long time over hill and dale, when we saw the creek, which we supposed we had crossed, now just before us. We followed the side of it deep into the woods, and when we arrived at the end of it saw no path along the other side to get outwards again; but the road ran into the woods in order to cut off a point of the hills and land. We pursued this road for some time, but saw no mode of getting out, and that it led further and further from the creek. We therefore left the road, and went across through the bushes, so as to reach the shore by the nearest route according to our calculation. After continuing this course about an hour, we saw at a distance a miserably constructed tabernacle of pieces of wood covered with brush, all open in front, and where we thought there were Indians; but on coming up to it we found in it an Englishman sick, and his wife and child lying upon some bushes by a little fire. We asked him if he was sick? 'I have been sick for over two months,' he replied. It made my heart sore, indeed, for I never, in all my life, saw such poverty, and that, too, in the middle of the woods and wilderness. After we had obtained some information as to the way, we went on, and had not gone far before we came to another house, and thus from one farm to another, French, Dutch, and a few English, so that we had not wandered very far out of the way. We inquired, at each house, the way to the next one. Shortly before evening we arrived at the plantation of a Frenchman, whom they called La Chandronnier, who was formerly a soldier under the Prince of Orange, and had served in Brazil. He was so delighted, and held on to us so hard that we remained and spent the night with him.

" 13th, Friday.—We pursued our journey this morning from plantation to plantation, the same as yesterday, until we came to that of Pierre Gardinier, who had been in the service of the Prince of Orange, and had known him well. He had a large family of children and grand-children. He was about seventy years of age, and was still as fresh and active as a young person. He was so glad to see strangers who conversed with him in the French language that he leaped with joy. After we had breakfasted here, they told us that we had another



QUEEN ANNE.

large creek to pass called the Fresh Kill, and then we could perhaps be set across the Kill Van Koll to the point of Mill Creek, where we might wait for a boat to convey us to the Manhattans. The road was long and difficult, and we asked for a guide, but he had no one, in consequence of several of his children being sick. At last he determined to go himself, and accordingly carried us in his canoe over to the point of Mill Creek in New Jersey, behind Kol [Achter Kol]. We learned immediately that there was a boat upon this creek loading with brick, and would leave that night for the city. After we had thanked and parted with Pierre le Gardinier, we determined to walk to Elizabethtown, a good half hour's distance inland, where the boat was. We slept there this night, and at 3 o'clock in the morning set sail."

CHAPTER XIII.

THE STORY OF THE DONGANS.



HERE was no one, high in authority, during the interesting period of the early colonial government, who seemed so near, and for whom the people of Staten Island have had a kinder regard, than Governor Thomas Dongan. His advent in America was simultaneous with the organization of county government on Staten Island, and throughout his entire administration he was directly interested in the place.

Colonel Thomas Dongan received his appointment as Governor in 1683, and assumed the duties of the position on the 27th of August of that year. He came here with instructions from the Duke of York to call a general assembly of the representatives of the people. In his obedience to this order, the first assembly of the colony of New York was convened in the city on the 17th of October, 1683. By this assembly was adopted a "bill of rights." It also repealed some of the most obnoxious of the Duke's laws, altered and amended others, and adopted such new laws as they deemed the circumstances of the colony required. At this session an act was passed abolishing the "ridings," and organizing in their stead the counties, (one of which was Richmond), with some alterations in the constitution of the courts.

The colonial assembly, with Governor Dongan at its head, met again in October, 1684. Among the acts passed at this time was one by which the Court of Assize was abolished. The election of a new assembly was held in September, 1685, and in the following October it was organized. But two or three unimportant acts of this assembly remain on record.

On the death of Charles II., the Duke of York ascended the throne of Great Britain with the title of James II. He instantly abolished the colonial assembly of New York, and re-established the Governor as the supreme head of the colony, "subject only to such instructions as the King himself might from time to time dictate."

It must be remembered that at the time of Governor Dongan's arrival, the persecutions of the Huguenots were at their height, and those noble people were landing on the shores of the New World in considerable numbers, "bringing with them useful arts, a knowledge of gardening and husbandry, and, above all, their own well-known virtues, with a pure, simple, Bible faith."

Important political changes were now taking place in the province of New York. The attempt of James II. to restore the Catholic church had made him odious to the British nation. The citizens of New York were mostly Protestants, and were exceedingly opposed to the Roman Catholic faith. Governor Dongan had exhibited extreme religious toleration; but this judicious policy displeased the King, and he was recalled.

James II. did not long wear the crown. He was deposed during the same year, and, deserting his family, became a refugee in France. In compliance with the popular wish, William was proclaimed King, and the famous Protestant revolution was effected. Throughout the province of New York a rumor was spread to the effect that the friends of the deposed monarch intended to massacre the disaffected. There followed a wild, popular excitement. The people of New York generally recognized William and Mary, Prince and Princess of Orange, as their sovereigns; yet a small party remained who insisted that the colonial government still remained vested in the Lieutenant-Governor and his council.

Nicholson, the deputy governor, was well known to be an ardent adherent of the Catholic church, as also were many of his intimate friends. This fact increased the distrust of the people. A mob formed and paraded the streets of New York. The entire militia force, consisting of five companies, surrounded the residence of Jacob Leisler, a merchant of the city and captain of the militia, and demanded that he should seize the fort at the Battery, which was accomplished. Nicholson, as soon as he was deprived of his authority, sailed for England. The distrust of the people continued.

A rumor was then spread that an attack was plotted on the church in the fort, and that possession of the Government was to be taken and the standard of King James again set up. The general excitement increased, and a large body of militia was sent to New York from Long Island "to seize the fort and to keep away French invasion and slavery."

On Staten Island the apprehensions of the people culminated in a wild panic. For a time fear reigned supreme. The people dared not remain at night in their own dwellings; but in the deepest recesses of the forest they constructed temporary shelters, to which after dark they resorted, that they might not be discovered. They could not trust themselves to their fellowmen. Many took their families in boats on the bay and kills, and anchored a short distance from the shore, and thus passed the nights, while others resorted to various expedients for concealment and security.

Reports of various natures were spread over Staten Island, which added to the excitement. Among these, it was stated that a number of papists, who had been driven out of Boston, had been admitted into the fort at New York, and had enlisted as soldiers; that the

papists on Staten Island had secretly collected arms, which they kept concealed and ready for use at a moment's notice; that Governor Dongan's brigantine had been armed and equipped for some very desperate enterprise, and the absolute refusal of the commander of the vessel to permit it to be searched, was not calculated to allay the alarm. The captain admitted that the vessel had been armed, but not for the purpose alleged; but as it was bound on a voyage to Madeira, it was in danger of being attacked by the Turks, and it was armed for the defence of its crew and cargo. This plausible story was not generally credited; but the excitement subsided without any one being hurt.

Popular tradition says that several pieces of cannon were afterward found in the cellar of Governor Dongan's mill, which it was believed had been concealed there, to be in readiness when they might be required. This mill stood on the south side of the Post avenue bridge in West New Brighton.

Leaving the scenes which always awaken sad memories of days when our forefathers knew little else than persecution, we shall now turn our attention to the Dongan patent on Staten Island and the persons that were connected with it for succeeding generations. In 1683, John Palmer, a lawyer residing in New York, was the ranger for the Staten Island and the Long Island towns. He had emigrated from Barbadoes. At the time of his first meeting with Governor Dongan he resided on Staten Island, and was a judge of the Court of Oyer and Terminer. Besides being a member of the council he was generally an active and prominent man in the affairs of the province.

It was to John Palmer that Governor Dongan executed a patent, known in Staten Island history as the Palmer or Dongan patent. The brook which forms a part of the boundary between the towns of Castleton and Northfield, and which runs to the mill pond, is still known by the name of "Palmer's Run," because it also formed a part of the boundary of the land conveyed by the patent. It is thought that an attempt was previously made by Dongan to gain possession of this large property, but without success.

The first transaction of which there is any record, is dated January 14th, 1684-5, when Governor Dongan purchased of John Palmer, of Staten Island, and Sarah, his wife, for the sum of twelve hundred pounds:

"All that their Capitall Messuage or dwelling house with the Appurtenances situate lying and being on the north side of Staten Island Aforesaid within Constables hooke neere the Mill Creeke late in the Occupation and possession of the said John Palmer, And All that Certaine Parcell or tract of Land thereunto belonging being upon the north side of Staten Island aforesaid within Constables Hooke lying between the two runnes att the mill creeke beginning with A narrow point And Running up wider into the Island Containing the quantity

of three hundred forty and two Acres with meadow Ground to be laid out proportionately."

The conveyance also includes other parcels, the title to which had been obtained as recited in their specifications in substance as follows:

" Ninety-six acres to the east of Mill creek, with the mill, which was granted to Palmer by Governor Andros, in 1677, upon which had also been built by Palmer two windmills and a sawmill; eighty acres which had been conveyed Palmer by Francis Barber, who had a grant from Sir Edmund Andros; ninety acres, with eight acres of meadow, which had been granted by Andros in 1680 to Jacob Cornelis, and by him conveyed to Palmer; another like tract of ninety acres with eight acres of meadow, granted by James Gyles, by Andros, and by Gyles conveyed to Palmer; and a tract of four thousand five hundred acres of land lying in a body in the middle part of the Island, with an island of meadow near Fresh Kill, 'All which Said Last mentioned tract or parcell of Land And Island of meadow were Granted unto the said John Palmer,' by Governor Dongan by patent dated May 2, 1684."



KING GEORGE II.

Thus it will be seen that the premises purchased by Governor Dongan had been obtained in small parcels through different channels and under grants of different dates. They were consolidated, and treated as a unit, in order that some

manorial privileges could be associated with their proprietorship. The early provincial governors having shown some disposition to appropriate too much land to themselves, they had been restricted by an order in council, to evade which the plan was devised of granting a patent to Palmer for this land, and then having a transfer made from Palmer to Dongan. The patent to Palmer was approved at a council held March 31, 1687, at which were present Governor Dongan, Anthony Brockhoist, Frederick Phillips, Stephannus Van Cortlandt, and Nicholas Bayard. The instrument bears the above date and reads as follows:

" Whereas John Palmer of the City of New York Esqr. as will by virtue of Several deeds and Pattents to him or them under whome he claymes made by the former Governors of this Province as by virtue of a certain Pattent or Confirmation under my hand, and scale of the province, bearing date the second day of May, 1684; stands Lawfully and Rightfully Seized of & in all that Tract or Parcell of Land Beginning at a cove on Kill Van Cull, on the east

bounds of the lands of Garret Cruise [Cruser] and so running in the woods by the said Kill to a marked tree, and thence by a line of marked trees according to the natural position of the poles, south and by east two degrees and thirty minutes southerly according to the compass south, there being eight degrees and forty-five minutes variation from the north westward, and from thence by the rear of the land of Garret Cruise & Peter Johnson, east & by north two degrees and thirty minutes to the line of Peter Johnson's wood lott, & by his line south and by east two degrees and thirty minutes south sixty-one chains, and thence by the reare of the aforesaid lott & the lott of John Vincent northeast & by east one degree northerly to the southeast corner of the land of John Vincent thirty-three chains & a halfe, from thence by his line south & by west two degrees thirty minutes northerly to a white oak tree marked with three notches, bearing northwest from the fresh pond, from thence to a young chestnut tree the southwest corner of the land of Phillip Wells, & so by a line of marked trees east nine degrees & fifteen minutes southerly by south side of a small fresh meadow to the north & to the north of the fresh pond, including the pond to the land of Mr. Andrew Norwood & so by his land as it runs to the reare of the land of Mary Brittain & so by the rear of the Old Town lots to the land of Isaac Bellew & Thomas Stilwell, & from thence upon the Iron Hills, to the land of William Stilwell & by his land to the land of George Cummins & from his northeast corner, to the southeast corner of the land of Mr. James Hubbard at the head of the fresh kills & so round by the land to the reare lots at Karles neck & so by the lots to the highway left by Jacob pullion & the great swamp to the land of John Fitz Garrett including the great swamp, thence by the soldier's lots and the reare lots of Cornelis Cosen & company to the southwest corner of their front lots & so by the runne which is their bounds to the mill pond including the mill pond to the sound or Kill Van Cull & so by the sound to the cove where first begun. Containing all the hills, valleys, fresh meadows & swamps within the above specified bounds five thousand one hundred acres be the same more or less.—Also a great island of salt meadow lying near the fresh kills & over against long neck not yet appropriated—and all the messuages, tenements, fencings, orchards, gardens, pastures, meadows, marshes, woods, underwoods, trees, timber, quarries, rivers, brooks, ponds, lakes, streams, creeks, harbors, beaches, fishing, hawking and fowling, mines, minerals (silver and gold mines only excepted), mills, milldams," etc.

By this patent it was also constituted one lordship or manor "to be called the Lordship and Manor of Cassiltowne." It was subject to an annual quit-rent of one lamb and eight bushels of winter wheat, to be paid if demanded on the 25th of March in each year. On the 16th day of April, 1687, John Palmer and Sarah, his wife, conveyed the terri-

tory, just described to Thomas Dongan "for a competent summe of lawfull money," after an ownership of about a fortnight.¹

It is known to a certainty that in the following year, 1688, Governor Dongan erected his manor house, which was left standing until Christmas Day, 1878. Though externally modernized in some degree, the old oak frame, which had been hewn out of the adjacent forest, was the identical one erected by him, the date of its erection having been marked upon one of the timbers with white paint. The Dongan manor house stood, in its later years, in the square bounded by Richmond Terrace on the north, Cedar street on the south, Dongan street on the east, and Bodine street on the west, at West New Brighton—the spot where the manuscript for this work was prepared. Since the destruction of the old house by fire the ground has been sold for building purposes, the last vestige of the dwelling—the cellar excavation—being removed in the arrangement of the garden for the residence of the late Rev. G. C. Gurr.

When the house was erected there was a large sand embankment between it and the shore road, which entirely concealed the house from view in that direction. We have already alluded to it as the burying ground of the Acquehonga Indians. There is now a gradual descent of the surface of the land from the site to the shore road. When the embankment was removed, a large number of Indian skeletons and relics were unearthed.

A large barn, which stood on the mill road, was also built during the early years of the proprietorship of Governor Dongan, and was burned on the 18th of July, 1862.

Through this extensive estate a public highway was opened at an early period toward the village of Richmond, and throughout this long period it has borne the name of Manor road. A tide mill, often mistaken by writers for "Dongan's mill," stood close to the causeway across Palmer's run, a portion of which is still standing in a lumber yard near by. It will be remembered that the Dongan mill stood further south at the Post avenue crossing. It is stated that the water in Palmer's run, between the Kills and the mill, was deeper than at any point in the Kills along the north shore, and boats ran up to the mill door.

Mill road, now known as Columbia street, originally ran through the grounds now occupied as a lumber yard, and, turning to the west, gave an outlet from Castleton into Northfield. When the causeway was built, and Richmond terrace was straightened at that point, the ground formerly occupied by the public was appropriated by individ-

¹ It is with considerable difficulty that the lines can be traced, as described in this patent, as most of the landmarks mentioned therein have long since disappeared. But, if by the terms "great swamp" is meant the low lands extending from Graniteville to New Springville, and which is so designated in a variety of other ancient documents; and if by "ffreech

Kills" is meant the waters now known by that name, and which are so frequently alluded to by that name in similar documents, it is evident that the territory conveyed embraced not only the greater part of the present towns of Castleton and Middletown, but a large proportion of Northfield also.

uals who claimed it for their own. Many disputes took place between the authorities and the alleged owners, but the question was never settled in accordance with law. Possession is all the holder ever had to prove his claim.

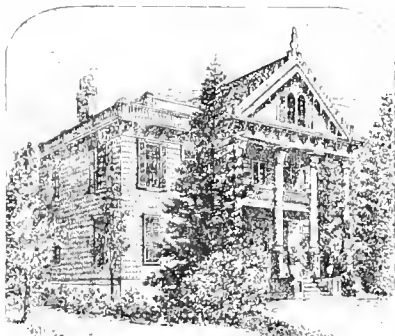
"In a review of the life and acts of one so intimately associated with the Island as Thomas Dongan was," said his biographer, "it is proper to give some notice to his antecedents and the stock whence he came. In a list of the baronets of Ireland, with a list of their creations, we find the name of Walter Dongan of Castletown, in the County of Kildare, to which is attached the date 1623. Castletown Park is in the northeast corner of the County of Kildare, about ten miles southwest of the City of Dublin. Sir Walter Dongan, who was made baronet October 23, 1623, belonged to a family who were pronounced 'valiant, active, and faithful.' They were in 1646 and later on connected with the army, and in recognition of their faithfulness and devotion to their King, William, a brother, was promoted to the dignity of Viscount of Claire, County of Kildare, in 1661. In 1685 he was made Earl of Limerick. At the battle of the Boyne he lost an only son, who was killed by a cannon ball. The son was buried at Castletown, the seat of his father, Lord Dongan, Earl of Limerick. The estate of Lord Dongan was forfeited, he being attainted April 16, 1691, but was restored again by act of Parliament, December 16, 1699." In "Burke's Encyclopedia of Heraldry" appears the following description of the Dongan coat of arms:

"Quarterly first and fourth, gu. three lions pass. or, holding in the dexter paw a close helmet argent garnished or the second; second or third azure six plates on a chief or a demi lion rampant gules. *Crest*—A lion passant or, supporting with the dexter foot a close helmet argent garnished of the first."

"To this noble family," continues the biographer, "Colonel Thomas Dongan belonged, though what his relation was to the Earl of Limerick we have not the means of determining. Some claim that he was a brother. Colonel Dongan having a commission as Governor, arrived in New York August 27, 1683. His commission was dated September 30, 1682. To him the present State is indebted for many of its existing records and laws. He was a firm believer in the religious and political faith of James II., except, perhaps, that Dongan was far more tolerant, and hated the French, under whom he had once served as a military officer. Though a professed papist, he was a decided enemy to the French, whose schemes of aggrandizement on the northern frontier he persistently opposed, even against the expressed wishes of his master, the Duke of York, afterward James II. The people of the province, and especially of Staten Island, where he resided, lived in constant dread of his religion. Later on he was ordered to proclaim James II. King, to assist at the conference between Lord Edlingham and the Five Nations, and in causing the King's arms to be set up through all their villages, and to place arms in their hands.

"Colonel Dongan had the Indian affairs very much at heart, and had gained the respect and esteem of the Five Nations. He was deeply interested in the intercourse of the French and English with them, and jealous of the action of the former. In carrying forward this work in which he was so much interested, he was obliged to mortgage his property to Robert Livingston to secure the payment of the expenses of the expedition to Albany in 1689. This mortgage is dated May 1st, 1689; the sum which was secured by it was £2,172 6s. 2½d., which Livingston had, by Dongan's order, laid out for eight months' provisions for the troops and presents for the Indians. The term of the mortgage was five years. It covered not only the manor of Castle-town, but other parcels which Dongan had bought on the Island. These were one hundred and eighty acres at Old Town, [Oude Dorp], bought by Mary Britton; another parcel at Old Town, bought by Peter Xone, and another, on the south side, bought by James Largie."

Governor Dongan, besides these possessions on Staten Island, had a large tract on the Hudson river, "extending from Haverstraw to Murderer's Creek; a tract of four hundred acres in Queens County, given him by the people of Hemstead town for renewing their patent," and another tract in Martha's Vineyard, besides considerable property in the city of New York. On Staten Island, it was claimed, he had a "hunting lodge"; whether this was the old "Manor house," on



DONGAN'S HOUSE, ERECTED IN 1661.
Destroyed by fire Christmas, 1878.

the north shore, is not exactly known. The old records in the city contain an account of "a meeting of the council, at which Governor Dongan was absent, being engaged at his hunting lodge on Staten Island, killing bears." Leisler ordered Dongan arrested at at the time of the papist panic in 1689, "when he was suspected of being in sympathy with the plot"; but there is nothing to prove that the order was ever executed.

Governor Dongan retired to his Staten Island estate, after his release from office, where he remained until the spring of 1691, and perhaps longer. At a later date, now not exactly known, he retired to his native country, Ireland, where he finally succeeded to the earldom of Limerick. In a conveyance now on record in the Richmond County clerk's office, bearing date 1715, he is given such title. On the 9th of May, of that year, Colonel Thomas Dongan, by the conveyance just mentioned, (which is in itself a curious and rare specimen of legal skill, on account of its complex limitations and conditions), "being willing to preserve and uphold and advance the name of the family of Dongan, and having no issue of his own to con-

time the same," conveyed to his nephews, Thomas, John, and Walter, and to the male issue of the survivor or survivors of them, "in tail male for ever," all his manor of Castletown, together with property situated elsewhere. This act and its final results is a demonstration of the scripture passage which we quote from the XLIX Psalm:

"Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names. Nevertheless man being in honor abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish."

Governor Dongan having thus disposed of his estate in this country, he died, it is generally believed, in London, in 1715, at the age of eighty-one years. His remains were interred in St. Pancras' churchyard, Middlesex, just north of London. This venerable burying ground has long been noted as "the burial place of such Roman Catholics as die in London and its vicinity." It is considered a desirable resting place for various reasons, one of which is that St. Pancras' was the last Church in England where mass was held after the Reformation. The sepulchre of the late Governor Dongan bears the following inscription:

"The Right Honble. THOMAS DONGAN Earl of LYMERICK, died December the fourteenth. Aged Eighty one years.

1715.

Resquiescat in pace. Amen."

Turning from the long and interesting narrative of the founder of the name and estate of Dongan on Staten Island, we now follow the descent of the family and title line of the estate. First come the nephews who inherited the estate. John had but little to do with Staten Island. We find his name appearing in a list of subscribers toward finishing Trinity Church steeple, in New York, dated May 1st, 1711; but there is no further trace of him. It is possible that he was unmarried, or died without male issue, and therefore, (as provided in the will of Governor Dongan), had no share in the Staten Island estate.

Thomas, also, is but meagrely known in the records of Staten Island. There is a statement to the effect that he sold his share of the possessions of his uncle. There is reason to believe that he was a man of high passions and sumptuous living, with very reckless habits. It is known of him that he became involved in a duel with Dr. John Livingston, September 7th, 1713, in which Livingston was killed. The trial of Dongan, by the Supreme Court, took place two days later, and he was convicted of manslaughter. It is evident that he managed to make his escape from this country immediately after the duel, as it is believed that he died in Ireland in 1721.

Walter was a man of honor and business ability. He occupied the old Manor house on the north shore, and held a large portion of the

landed estate. He leased considerable of the land to tenants. Walter was Surrogate of Richmond County in 1733. He married for his first wife, Ruth, daughter of Richard Floyd, (second), of Setauket, Long Island, whose wife was Margaret, daughter of Colonel Matthias Nicholl, the secretary of the colony. Walter and Ruth Dongan had three children, Thomas, Richard, and Elizabeth. Ruth, who was born August 6th, 1699, died July 28th, 1733. Walter Dongan afterward married a Miss Sarah Harriman, of Elizabeth, New Jersey, by whom he had a son, Edward Vaughn Dongan. Walter died July 25th, 1749, being fifty-seven years of age. His estate on Staten Island descended mainly to his son Thomas, and his widow afterward married John Harriman, of Elizabeth. The daughter Elizabeth was born in 1729, and died July 1st, 1749, aged nineteen years and seven months. Richard Floyd, her grandfather, remembered her in his will, dated February 27th, 1738, as follows: "I give also unto my Grand Daughter Dongan, that is to say the Daughter of my beloved Daughter Ruth Dongan Deceased, one hundred Pounds Current lawful Money of New York to be paid on her Marriage Day." She died unmarried, and this item in the will was never executed.

Edward Vaughn Dongan was born January 3d, 1749. Shortly after his father's death he went with his mother to reside in Elizabeth. He was educated as a lawyer, and established an office in New Brunswick, N. J., where he married the daughter of Squire La Grange, a lawyer of that place. He made himself obnoxious on account of his ardent adherence to royalty, on the outbreak of the Revolution, and was driven from his home some time before the British troops landed in New York. His father-in-law and family were in perfect sympathy with him, and their estate was afterward forfeited. Edward Vaughn Dongan received a commission as Lieutenant-Colonel, and commanded the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. This organization was formed on Staten Island. It was composed of New Jersey volunteers and classified as "American Loyalists." At the time of General Sullivan's raid on Staten Island, August 22d, 1777, Colonel Dongan's battalion was posted on the Morning Star road, in Northfield. A severe engagement ensued, in which he was wounded, from the effects of which he died in a hospital in New York City on the first of September following. His wife and child had suffered great exposure on the day of the battle, the latter dying on the same day and was buried in the same grave with its father. The widow afterward went with her family to reside at Farmington, England.

Richard Dongan, the second son of Walter, went to sea when quite a young man. He was impressed on board a British man-of-war during the French war, and lost an arm in the service. He married Miss Cornelia Shanks, of Long Island, by whom he had a son Walter, who was born January 2d, 1763, and another son who died young. Richard died January 1st, 1780, in the sixty-first year of his age; his wife died

April 28th, 1814, in the eighty-third year of her age. This Walter resided at Castleton Corners. The old manor house which he occupied for a long time, and in which he died in 1855, is still standing. It was a building of considerable pretensions in its time. Walter had a distillery at the springs near Eckstein brewery; he also possessed a large farm at that place. It was part of the estate of Governor Dongan. He was in the ninety-fourth year of his age at the time of his death; his wife, Abigail Simonson Dongan, died on March 1st, 1850, in her eighty-second year. Their graves are located near the south-west corner of the Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton.

Walter and Abigail Dongan had five sons—Edward, Thomas, Walter Richard and Gilbert; also, six daughters—Elizabeth, who married Peter Laforge; Johanne, who married Charles Wood; Cornelia who married Richard Toombs; Sarah, Abigail and Ruth. Johanne Dongan Wood had five children—John, Ezekiel, Walter Dongan, Joseph and Johanne Stevenson. Of these, Walter Dongan Wood and Catharine S., his wife, had four children—Moses V. N., (deceased), Mrs. A. E. Pullen, Mrs. E. Denning and J. Walter Wood, M.D.

Elizabeth Dongan married Peter Laforge, and had nine children. Anne E., her daughter, married Adam Alston; they had one child, Sarah, wife of Mulford D. Simonson. Henrietta, the second daughter, married Abram Brittain; their children were Frank, Jeanette wife of James Crabtree; Mary, wife of Victor Theband, Henry, Helen and Anne. Amelia married James Egbert; their children were Pauline Walz, Alice and Herbert. Catharine married Jacob Lynn. Josephine married Aquilla Christopher; their children were Edith and Frank, deceased. Gertrude never married. Peter married Jennie Bodine; their children were George, Vincent, Herbert, and Effie. Celia, the youngest daughter, married Albert E. Ferre; their children were Joseph B. and Gertrude I. Byron died unmarried.

Cornelia, daughter of Walter Dongan, married Richard Toombs; their children were Andrew, William, Richard and Maria. Their son Andrew's children were Cornelia, who married Richard Watters; Effie, who married Edward B. Hutchinson; Maria, who married William Rogers, Walter and Andrew.

The family is scattered throughout the country, and several branches of it remain upon Staten Island. None of the original estate is in possession of the descendants as heirs; but a number reside upon the old "Dongan patent" in West New Brighton, either as tenants or owners of the residences which they occupy.

We now return to the old Dongan manor house and take up the direct line in which the estate was held until it passed out of the possession of the family: Thomas Dongan was the eldest son of Walter, the nephew of Governor Thomas Dongan; his first wife was Rachel, and she died April 25th, 1748, aged twenty-four years. She had one daughter, who died December 22d, 1749, aged three years. Both wife

and daughter are buried in the old Moravian Cemetery. Thomas afterward married Magdalen, the eldest daughter of Rev. Richard Charlton, rector of St. Andrew's Church, of Richmond. By her he had a son, John Charlton Dongan. Thomas Dongan was a vestryman of Trinity Church, New York, from 1748 to 1759. In order to adjust the claims upon him to which his young half-brother, Edward V., was entitled, he, on the 15th of April, 1757, gave a mortgage to John Harri-man and Sarah, his wife, (the step-mother of Thomas, she being the late widow of his father), "on various tracts of land lying in the manor of Castletown, adjoining each other, and then being in the possession of tenants, to secure the payment of £10 a year till Edward Vaughn should reach his majority; and the payment of £1,000 when that time arrived."



RICHARD LOVELACE.

In consideration of these payments, "Edward Vaughn should relinquish all claim against the said Thomas or the estate of the late Walter Dongan." The aggregate extent of land covered by this instrument was about seven hundred acres. The will of Thomas Dongan bears date March 8th, 1765, and it appointed Magdalen, his wife, sole executrix. It bequeathed to his son, John Charlton Dongan, all his estate, and in case of his death, while in his minority, the estate

was to go to his mother, and to her heirs forever. There is no record of his death.

John Charlton Dongan, son of Thomas, and grandson of Walter, the nephew of the Governor, was educated for a lawyer, and was admitted to the bar May 6th, 1791. He became a man of prominence. He represented Castleton in the Board of Supervisors in 1785, and was in the State Assembly in 1787-88-89. He was a prominent leader of the Schuyler (Federal) party in 1788-9, and served on several prominent Assembly committees. His law office was at 25 Courtlandt street, New York City, in 1795. He possessed considerable property on State street, New York City, (in addition to the estate on Staten Island, which then comprised about six hundred acres), all of which he inherited from his father.

John Charlton Dongan is said to have been a very honorable man; but being a free liver "he fell into careless habits and descended the scale of respectable standing and financial advantage until he reached the lowest extreme." His wife was Patience Moore, of Newtown, Long Island, a sister of Benjamin Moore, of that place. It is said that she was of little advantage to him, being herself a partner in his failings. They had two children, Thomas Charles Bradish, who

died November 25th, 1789, and John Charlton, Jr., who died October 23d, 1791, in the sixth year of his age. The State street property was sold and the proceeds lost in speculation. He then became involved and, about 1795, sold the old Manor house on Staten Island, together with the accompanying estate, to his brother-in-law, John McVicker, whose wife was a sister to his wife. He then sold off all the stock and movables belonging to the estate, and the sale returned about \$10,000. He and his wife, it is said, agreed to put this in bank and live on the proceeds. She soon returned to her own family, the Moores, at Newtown; but he continued to sink still deeper in intemperance, and finally accepted the position of a sergeant of marines and went to sea on a man-of-war, in 1798 or 1799. He was familiarly known as "Jack" Dongan. When his financial resources were finally exhausted and his health was broken down, he became a public charge. He had a god-mother in Jamaica, West Indies, and when she learned of his sad condition, sent him money with which to pay his passage, and he went thither to enjoy her generous hospitality. He died there a short time afterward.

The landed estate of the Dongans had been constantly growing smaller. John McVicker occupied the famous old house as a country seat from 1795 to 1802, when he sold it to Alexander McComb. McVicker was a prominent and useful man. He constructed a canal two miles long, from Fresh pond to the mill, took a personal interest in many public enterprises on the Island, and helped Cornelius Vanderbilt (afterward the famous old "Commodore") to funds with which to procure a piragua and dock at Factoryville, (now West New Brighton).

McComb sold the estate to John Bodine, Jr., and he to his father. The latter sold it to Judge Ogden Edwards, (grand son of the eminent divine of that name, and cousin to Colonel Aaron Burr). Judge Edwards belonged to the Supreme Court bench at the time. While he resided in the famous old Dongan house he entertained many noted personages. He beautified the house considerably, and the grounds surrounding it were delightfully arranged with drives, trees and shrubbery. It was even more royal in its appointments than when the royal governor reigned there supreme. But when the great financial panic of "the thirties" excited the country, it dealt a blow to the "Lord of the manor," and by force of circumstances the property reverted to its former owner—John Bodine, Jr. Judge Edwards then moved into the old stone dwelling, still standing, at the junction of the Clove road and Columbia street, West New Brighton, now familiarly known as the Scott homestead.

The next occupant of the Dongan house was Jacob Bodine, (son of John, Jr.), who disposed of it to his brother-in-law, Jacob Post, and he to C. Willis Windsor, the husband of Mrs. Post's sister. It then passed to J. H. Williamson, whose widow married Albert Bodine, in whose

possession it was at the time of its destruction, on Christmas, 1878. For many years the charred ruins of the historic homestead marked the spot; but to-day all that is left to tell its proud story is here and there a majestic tree that once shaded the favored dwellers in the old manor. Truly, one who honors the relics of the past—those historic links that bind the dim past to the busy present—cannot witness their destruction without regret and sorrow. And so the old house, like the generations it sheltered in the long ago, lives only in tradition and story.

CHAPTER XIV.

RICHMOND COUNTY.



ANY changes took place shortly after the arrival of Governor Thomas Dongan, in 1683. One of these was the establishment of four counties—New York, Kings, Queens and Richmond. These were organized to take the place of the “ridings,” as the courts then established were called. The assembly, over which Governor Dongan presided, passed an “Act to divide this province and dependencies into Shires and Counties,” on November 1st, 1683, and contained the following in reference to Staten Island:

“The County of Richmond to conteyne all Staten Island, Shutter’s Island, and the islands of meadow on the west side thereof.”

There were about two hundred families on Staten Island at that time, exclusive of Indians, of whom it is thought there were two thousand. Immediately after the organization of the county it was allowed two representatives in the colonial assembly.¹ In 1684, one year later, for the first time, a county tax was imposed, which amounted to fifteen pounds.

Stony Brook was selected as the site for the County Seat.² It was then the chief settlement of Staten Island, and contained beside a court house and jail a Waldensian church, a fort, a trading depot where the Indians exchanged furs for food and other articles with the settlers, and a number of plain cottages, built principally in the Dutch style of architecture.

The Court House and County Jail were located in a small, one-story structure containing two rooms. One, built of roughly-hewn logs, filled in with clay and shell-lime, served as the County Jail. The only door to it was built of rough boards, hung on raw-hide hinges, and opened outward. A window, about a foot square, which the prisoners could regulate for their own comfort by filling in with

¹ There is no record that the offices were filled until 1691, when the county was represented by John Dally and Lambert Dorland. Ellis Duxbury was elected the same year, probably to serve an unexpired term, and remained in office until 1698.

² The village of Stony Brook derived its name from a small rivulet, which takes its source from two chains of ponds, located respectively on the lands of Robert Jones, near the old Black Horse Tavern, and the other on

the Anthony Johnson property, between the Amboy and Richmond roads, west of New Dorp. A short distance below the ponds the two chains join, and running in a southerly direction cross the Amboy road at the sharp bend, and run thence in a southerly direction to the lower bay. Here was located the village which was the county seat from 1683 to 1729. In consequence of the destruction of trees along its course Stony Brook is now dry a great portion of the year.

brush, when the rain, snow or cold crept in, was the only other opening. The jail contained a ground floor, and the furniture consisted of a bench-like log, which extended along the rear of the room. The "lock" was made of strips of raw-hide, which were tied on the outside.

But the dignity of the law was so frequently trampled upon by the escape of prisoners, through the assistance of outside friends, that the Presiding Judge directed the county officials to "forthwith purchase a more substantial lock, and to procure a bell wherewith to give alarm, in case there should be any further attempt of prisoners to escape from ye said jail." After due consideration of the matter, an appropriation to meet a portion of the pressing need was made. The room adjoining the jail was built of stone, and was occupied by the Sheriff—its first occupant being John Palmer. He was also the jailor. In this room, too, the Court business of the County was frequently transacted; but the meagre accommodations it afforded rendered it necessary to hold Court at various other points on the Island. A portion of the foundation of the old Court House was standing until about 1850.

In March, 1688, Richmond County was divided into four towns—Castletown, Northfield, Southfield and Westfield. The town of Middletown was organized in 1860.³ Prior to the legal division of the county into towns, it was divided into three precincts, the North, South and West. Castleton was not included in any of the precincts, but was designated "The Manor." The limits of the precincts were about the same as those of the towns as established by law on the 7th of March, 1688. Castleton derived its name from the Palmer or Dongan patent, in which the manor conveyed was called Cassiltown, afterward corrupted into the present name, and the corruption legalized by repeated acts of the Legislature. The other towns were named from their positions in the county. The act of March 7th, 1788, dividing the counties of the State into towns, gives the division of Richmond as follows:

"And all that Part of the County of *Richmond*, bounded northerly by Kill-Van-Kull, easterly by *Hudson's-River*, southerly by the Road

3 The cause which led to the establishment of the town of Middletown was of long standing, and had given a great deal of annoyance to the people of the county. It frequently happened that there was a tie in the Board of Supervisors, and business was suspended for an indefinite period. In 1860 an act was passed by the State Legislature, forming a new town out of parts of Castleton and Southfield, which was called Middletown. In point of wealth to-day it stands second in the county, Castleton being first. It is bounded by a line "commencing on the bay or shore on the east side of Staten Island at the point where the Richmond turnpike strikes said bay; thence running westerly along said Richmond turnpike road to the town of Northfield; thence souther-

ly on the line between the towns of Northfield and Castleton to where said line terminates at Southfield; thence northwesterly on the line between Castleton and Southfield, along the Richmond plankroad to Vanderbilt avenue; thence easterly along the southerly side of said Vanderbilt avenue to the bay of New York; thence northerly abiding the shore or bay of New York to the point of beginning." These bounds included the eastern portion of Southfield and the southerly portion of Castleton. The first town meeting of the new town was held at Nautilus Hall on the second day of May following, and the act appointed Thomas Standerwick, Thomas Garret and Cary Dev-ery to preside at the meeting.

leading from *Van Duerson's Ferry* southward to the *Watering-Place* to *Richmond-town*, and westerly by a *Lyne* beginning at the Mouth of *Dongan's Mill-creek*, and running thence along the Line of the Manor of *Castle-Town* to the Road at the Rear of the Patent of *Corson and Company*, thence along the northerly Side of the said Road leading to *Houghwout's Mill*, and then southerly along the Westerly Side of the last mentioned Road as it runs along by *Richard Conner's*, to the Tavern Called the *Rose and Crown*, on the Road leading to *Richmond-Town*, shall be and is hereby erected into a Town by the Name of *Castle-Town*.

"And that all that Part of the said County of *Richmond*, bounded northerly by the North Side of said Road, leading from *Van Duerson's Ferry* to *Richmond-Town* and the *Fresh-Kill*, easterly by *Hudson's River*, southerly by the *Bay*, and westerly by a Line beginning on the *Fresh-Kill* at the North-west Corner of the Land and Meadow late of *James Egberts*; and running from thence southerly along the same to *Egbert's Lane*, and then along the same Lane to the road called the *New Road* and then along the same *New Road* westerly to the Land of *Henry Perine*, and then southerly along his easterly Bounds to the *Bay* shall be, and hereby is erected into a Town by the Name of *Southfield*.

"And that all that Part of the said County of *Richmond*, bounded northerly by the *Fresh-Kill*, easterly by *Southfield*, southerly by the *Bay*, and westerly by the *Sound*, shall be, and hereby is erected into a Town by the Name of *Westfield*.

"And that all the Residue of the County of *Richmond*, shall be, and hereby is erected into a Town by the Name of *Northfield*."

Jacob Leisler, a prominent character of that day, exercising both civil and military authority, was intrusted by the magistrates with the administration of affairs, after the departure of *Nichols*, and one of his first acts was to cause *William and Mary* to be proclaimed to the counties of *Richmond*, *Westchester*, *Queens*, *Kings* and *Ulster*, and the *City and County of Albany*, and *East Jersey*. The order to *Richmond* was dated *December 17th, 1689*. On the *30th* of the same month, he issued an order requiring all persons who held commissions, warrants, "or other instruments of power or command, either civil or military," derived from either *Dongan* or *Andros* forthwith to surrender the same to a justice of the peace of the county wherein they resided, except the counties of *New York* and *Richmond*, who were to surrender at the fort in *New York*.

Shortly after the burning of *Schenectady*, and the fearful massacre



KING GEORGE III.

of its inhabitants by the French and Indians, in February, 1690, Leisler issued another order to the military and civil officers of several counties, Richmond being one of the number, that "fearing too great a correspondency hath been maintained between y^e s^d French & disaffected Persons among us," to secure all persons reputed papists, or who are inimical to the government, or who continue to hold any commissions from Dongan or Andros, and bring them before him.

In 1689, Leisler commissioned the following civil and military officers in Richmond County:

Ely Crosson, high sheriff,	Jacques Poullion, Captain.
Jacob Corbett, clerk,	Cornelis Corsen, " "
Obadiah Holmes, justice,	Thomas Morgan, Lieutenant.
Jacques Poullion, " "	John Thennis Van Pelt, " "
Thomas Morgan, " "	Seger Geritsen, Ensign.
Jacob Gerritse, " "	Cornelis Nevius, " "
Cornelis Corsen, " "	

The following residents of Staten Island were members of a military company, commanded by Captain Jacob Milborne, which was ordered to Albany to establish Leisler's authority, the government of that city having refused to recognize it: "Jean Marlett, Francis Mauriss, Hendrick Hendrickson, Jean Laefre, John Rob, John doulier and Peter Henkerson."

We have been unable to discover any evidence to prove that the people of Staten Island took any decided stand relative to Leisler's administration. Generally, they submitted quietly to the authorities placed over them. In fact, Leisler does not appear in connection with the Island further than commissioning some officers and issuing general orders. It is said that he had many friends on the Island, although they were not very demonstrative. To his credit his appointments to office were usually from among the best citizens, which always operated in his favor. No decided steps were taken in his behalf during his subsequent imprisonment and trial; but after his condemnation petitions for his pardon were extensively signed, which had the effect to bring upon the signers the displeasure of the government, who regarded the act as disloyal. Farther than the imposition of fines, which were remitted, and the brief imprisonment of a few individuals no punishment was inflicted upon the offenders.

On the 28th of April, 1691, a letter was presented to the council in New York, over which Henry Sloughter, the new Governor, presided, from the Sheriff of Richmond County, "Giving an Account of severall Riotts and Tumults on Staten Island, and that they were subscribing of papers." The sheriff was ordered to secure the ring-leaders that they might be prosecuted. Thomas Stillwell, the Sheriff, was not dilatory in obeying the order. He arrested several of the citizens of the County, among whom were John Thennison, John Peterson and Gerard Vechten, each of whom he fined three pounds. Others were

obliged to execute bonds for the payment of that amount. It is said that one of the number refused to do either, and he was imprisoned.

When information relative to the Sheriff's proceedings reached his superiors in New York, orders were sent down to the Island to have the bonds cancelled, whereupon the three individuals who had paid their money, demanded that it should be refunded. The sheriff, no doubt conscious that he had exceeded his powers, promised that it should be done; but delayed the matter so long that the aggrieved parties appealed to the council.

At the same time, the same three individuals presented a complaint against the assessors, who exempted themselves and some others from the payment of the tax on "negers," and that poor people who have no "negers" must pay "as much accordingly like Them that has many negers. Therefore your petitioners humbly crave That your Ex^{ly} will be pleased To signify Them iff s^d negers should be excluded ffor paying Tax." There is no record as to the result of these petitions.

The papers which were "subscribed" were petitions in favor of the two condemned men. The people of Westchester County also sent a petition for the same purpose; but the Governor's Council did not recognize the right of petition in such cases, therefore some were cited to appear before that body, while others were imprisoned as promoters of "riots and disturbances."

During the administration of Governor Dongan, Leisler, having imported a cargo of wine, positively refused to pay the duties thereon to Matthew Plowman, the Collector of the Port, because he was a papist. Leisler was, however, compelled to do so, and was ever thereafter a bitter enemy of Plowman. He was very arbitrary during his brief administration, and to gratify his spite he charged Plowman with being a defaulter to the government; then, learning that he was the owner of a quantity of beef and pork stored at Elizabethtown, he ordered John Burger, a sergeant at the fort to proceed to Staten Island and compel such individuals as he might require to go with him and assist in the removal of the provisions. Burger obeyed the order implicitly, and the property was carried to Leisler in New York, who forwarded it to Albany for the use of the soldiers he had sent to that place.

After Leisler's execution, Plowman prosecuted all who were concerned in the removal of his property from Elizabethtown, to recover its value. Among the number were the following residents of Staten Island: "John Jeronison, Thomas Morgan, Lawrence Johnson, John Peterson, Dereck Crews (Cruser), Chauck (Jaques) Pollion and John Bodine." These men, shortly after the arrival of Major Richard Ingoldsby, addressed an "humble Peticon," to him and the council, in which they admit having assisted in the removal of Plowman's property; but that they did so under compulsion, believing that they were

doing service to their Majesties; that they considered it unjust to compel them to pay for the provisions when the whole country had the benefit of them; they therefore pray that they may be relieved from the whole responsibility, or if that may not be done, that every person engaged in the removal be compelled "to pay their equall proporceous of the same." This petition was presented by Plowman himself, who thereby recognized the justice of their cause; but the result of the application is unknown.

The legal and general business of Richmond County centered in Stony Brook until the early years of the Eighteenth century, notwithstanding the fact that the courts were frequently held at other and more convenient places. There is a tradition, strengthened somewhat by imperfect records, to the effect that when, in 1729, it was decided to "abandon ye Court house and Goal at Stony Brook," and to establish one more in keeping with the progress of the age at Cuckoldstowne, (Richmond, the present County Seat), those who advocated the movement urged it upon the ground that "there is a bell by ye church in Cuckoldstowne which could be rung by ye high sheriff, and thus add dignity and respectability to ye court of his maj'ty ye King of Great Britain," etc. So far as we are aware, this argument, coupled with the fact that "Cuckoldstowne is located in ye centre of ye Island," set aside whatever opposition there might have been to the movement in favor of removing the County Seat.

The County Goal had been removed to Cuckoldstowne several years prior to the removal of the County Seat. The structure stood at the north-east side of the terminus of the Richmond road, and was erected in 1710. It was abandoned for its original purpose in 1837, and for many years was utilized as a store-house. It was built of stone and brick, and was destroyed by fire on the night of Friday, April 19th, 1895, through the carelessness of a group of boys smoking cigarettes.

The County Seat was transferred to Cuckoldstown in 1729, when the name of the village was changed to Richmond. A County Court House was erected sometime between that year and 1735. The structure stood where the parish house of St. Andrew's Church now stands, and where Richmond County Hall stood for many years. It was directly opposite the County Jail at the junction of Richmond and Fresh Kill roads. Tradition gives two pictures of the old building. One is that it was a frame structure, shingle-sided and with gable end to the road; the other that it was built of stone in the familiar Holland style of architecture of that day. The latter seems to be the more reasonable, because for many years during the early part of the present century a considerable portion of such a building stood on the spot indicated. It was removed at the time of the erection of Richmond County Hall, in 1822.

The Court House, the County Jail, the Cucklestowne Inn, and another public house that stood on the Fresh Kill road, St. Andrew's

(Episcopal) Church, the old Dutch (Reformed) Church, and a number of other buildings in and around the village were at once more or less occupied by the British soldiers. In the course of a few days two brigades of troops were encamped at the County Seat.

The protection of County records was a question that interested the residents at that time far more than that of the independence of the colonies, for the presence of such a large body of British troops on Staten Island—about 25,000 in all—caused the strongest patriotic hearts to grow faint and to feel that hope was useless. Every day for weeks citizens repaired to the Court House and carried away armfuls of public documents, that they might be preserved in their homes until peace was re-established.

British officers occupied the Court House—one of whom for a time was Captain, afterward Major, André—and the documents were by their orders gathered up and dumped in a rude heap.

During the war a number of attempts were made to capture the British forts on Staten Island, and near the close it was thought by the British commander that Lafayette was arranging, with a large force of Continental troops, to make a desperate attack on Richmond. Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, temporarily in command of the post, issued an order that every public building should be burned to the ground "rather than surrender to the French adventurer!"

One dark winter's night one of the Hatfield Tory band, which had a rendezvous at Bull's Head, mounted on a swift horse, dashed down the steep side of Richmond Hill into the little village. He told the British commander that General Sullivan had landed on the North Shore with a large body of men, and that he was coming to Richmond. All was excitement at that post, and re-enforcements were sent from the headquarters of the army at New Dorp. Tory spies continued to report all through the night and until daylight. General Sullivan's movements being greatly exaggerated, Colonel Simcoe renewed his order to "apply the torch, if necessary."



LIEUT.-COLONEL CHRISTOPHER BILLOPP.

It is evident that some enthusiastic subordinate thought it quite necessary, for in a very brief time nothing but the thick stone walls of the Court House were left standing, and many of the most valuable records of the County had vanished in the flames. The Dutch Reformed Church, which stood directly in front of the site of the present Court House, was also burned to the ground, excepting a portion of its stone walls, "because," the British said, "it was a rebel church." This church was rebuilt in 1808, on the corner of the street leading from the present Court House west and the Fresh Kill road, and abandoned about ten years ago.

Throughout the entire period of the Revolution Supervisors were elected each year; but they had comparatively little to do, as the Island was under martial law. It was practically the headquarters of the British forces in America throughout the period of hostilities. Devastation and ruin everywhere marked the Island. Redoubts, trenches, huts and piles of charred timber and ashes that were once "rebels' homes," told the story of the long and bitter conflict. The sudden lull that came after the long storm that had raged in every home and every heart, left the people in a dazed and demoralized condition. Many of the leading citizens of the Island still clung to royalty, and instead of attempting to reorganize the local government, gathered their families together and migrated to Nova Scotia, Canada or England. Those that remained behind were still divided in opinion, and the quarrels of the Revolution were carried on even for generations!

Considering the meagre population, the burdensome taxes and the general financial depression that pervaded the Island, the building of another Court House was a question of serious importance. The people were divided and very much in earnest. At first the Supervisors considered the proposition to "establish a lottery in ye Bowery for the purpose of raising funds," that being the popular mode of financiering at that time; but the scheme was never carried into effect. Many public meetings were held throughout the county, with a hope of creating public sympathy for the movement to erect a Court House. Some favored returning the County Seat to Stony Brook and enlarging the old Court House and County Jail, which were one building.

The question was agitated until 1791, when by a vote of the people, in a three-days' election, it was decided to build a Court House. It is interesting to note the population of the Island at that time:

								Males,	Females,	Slaves,
Northfield	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	474	436	194
Westfield	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	173	478	286
Castleton	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	101	398	170
Southfield	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	334	341	289
								1,682	1,653	939

Total population, 4,274.

In November, 1791, the Board of Supervisors, consisting of Richard Conner, of Castleton; Cornelius Bedell, of Northfield; George Barnes, of Southfield, and Cornelius Cole, of Westfield, met in the Cuckles-town Inn, and by a unanimous vote decided to "proceed with the building of the Court House, as soon as the contract can be perfected and the weather permits." To make the movement popular, in the face of considerable opposition, a public meeting was held in Richmond, by those in its favor, and a strong resolution was adopted, endorsing "the prompt action of the Board of Supervisors."

There appears to be no further record as to action in the matter

until midsummer of the following year, when the following appeared in the proceedings of the Board of Supervisors:

"July 7: 1792 At a meeting of the supervisors Together with the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Richmond the 26th of June 1792 Lawrence Hillyer and Joseph Barton Jr. were unanimously appointed Commissioners to Superintend the Building of a Court House in the Town of Richmond on the Lott of ground given by Doctor Thomas Frost, and Thomas Frost having since been appointed a Commissioner to be with the said Lawrence Hillyer and Joseph Barton to Superintend Said Court House and to Advertise for Undertakers to receive proposals that may be Consistent with economy and the Interest of the County.

"Richard Conner, clk Supervisors."

In that same year, (1792), a tax of £315, (\$787.50), was levied upon Richmond County to defray the expenses of building a Court House, and the sum of £15 was paid to Dr. Thomas Frost for the "Lott" which the records state he had given to the county. Late in the same year another tax of £84 was levied for completing the Court House. The land in question is located opposite St. Andrew's parish house, on the north side of the Fresh Kill road. It took two years to complete the building.

In October, 1794, the Board of Supervisors met in the "new Court House" for the first time, and accepted the building on behalf of the people of Richmond County. The Board consisted of Abraham Burbank, of Castleton; Cornelius Bedell, of Northfield; Cornelius Cole, of Westfield; and George Barnes, of Southfield.

The building differed very materially in appearance from the present. An old resident of Richmond, describing it to the writer, said, "it was really a beautiful little Court House." It was two stories high and surmounted by a belfry. Its sides were covered with shingles, same as at present. It stood close to the street and its first floor was almost on a level with the ground. The first floor contained two rooms—a small one at the entrance and a large one which was used for many years as a public hall, and there are citizens still living in the county who used to attend "singing school" there in the old days. It was also occupied by the Grand and Petit Juries, while Court was in session, and the records saved from the conflagration of the old Court House during the Revolution found a resting place there. The Court room occupied all of the second floor, and was arranged something similar to the one now in use, but was not quite so large and pretentious! The stairway leading to the Court room ran up from the left side of the entrance.

Near the close of the first quarter of the present century, when the "tax quarrels" had in a measure subsided, and the Island was comparatively prosperous, it became apparent that better provisions should be made for the protection of the county records. In fact, the

County had outgrown the little Court House, and another great question faced the taxpayers. Every interest of the County demanded proper quarters for the County Clerk and Surrogate. Meetings were held in the County Court room, and the subject was advanced and opposed. The discussions were of a very animated character. Besides native talent, paid speakers were brought down from the metropolis to argue for and against. Some of the taxpayers came to blows. The result we leave for the original minutes of the Board of Supervisors to tell:

"1827, May 5th. At a meeting held this day, present Harmanus Guyon, John Totten and Nicholas Crocheron, supervisors, also Richard Crocheron, Esq., James Guyon, Esq., and Walter Betts, Esq., commissioners appointed according to law passed April, 1826, an act to provide for Building a Fire proof Clerk and Surrogate's office in the County of Richmond, whereby it is made the duty of the Supervisors at their annual meeting to cause to be levied and collected a sum not exceeding One Thousand five hundred Dollars over and above the expense of Collecting the same, for the purpose of building a fire proof Clerk and Surrogate's office for said County, to be located in such part of said County as the Judges of Said County, or a majority shall direct, and in which all the public Records and Papers belonging as well to the Clerk as the Surrogate of the said County shall be kept, and the said Judges have fixed Upon the Site of the Old County-house on the East side of the Goal for the locating the same."

The County House was removed to a point about half a mile up the Richmond road and the "fire-proof" building was erected without delay. The "Goal" alluded to was the Old Red Jail, and the Clerk's and Surrogate's "fire-proof office" built on the "Site" of the old County house was the two-story brick building recently destroyed by fire. The exact cost of the "fire-proof" building is not known; but on the following year bills for material and lumber were audited to the amount of \$911.08.

About 1835 Staten Island had a great boom, which continued until the memorable financial panic of 1839. But in the meantime the promise of prosperity was so great that another Court House was built, its original cost being \$4,000. When this was completed, the Board of Supervisors, consisting of Nathan Barrett, of Castleton; Jacob Simonson, of Northfield; Joseph Segnine, of Westfield, and Samuel Coddington, of Southfield, met in their new room, (now the Under Sheriff's parlor), on the 18th of November, 1837, and adopted the following resolution:

"*Resolved*, That the old Court House in the Village of Richmond, and the lot on which it stands be offered at auction, at the Richmond County Hall, in said village, on Saturday, 17th day of December next, at two o'clock p. m., if not previously disposed of at private sale."

The premises were purchased on the above date by John Totten,

who sold them to Walter Betts, who was at that time one of the most prominent citizens of the county and one of the leaders of the Whig party. He had been Under Sheriff, Sheriff, County Clerk, Supervisors' Clerk and Postmaster of Richmond, and was removed from the latter office by President Jackson in 1828. The old building was remodeled and in 1860 was purchased by Mr. Isaac M. Marsh, who occupied it until his death in 1896. It has since been converted into a restaurant and bakery.

CHAPTER XV.

OFFICIAL LIST OF OFFICE-HOLDERS.



THE following citizens of Staten Island have been members of important national, State and county bodies, as indicated:

Members of Provisional Congress:—Adrain Bancker, 2d Prov. Cong., 1775-76; Richard Conner, 1st and 3d Prov. Cong., 1775-76; Aaron Cortelyou, 1st and 3d Prov. Cong., 1775-76; John Journey, 1st and 3d Prov. Cong., 1775-76; Richard Lawrence, 1st and 2d Prov. Cong., 1775-76; Paul Micheau, 1st and 3d Prov. Cong., 1775-76.

Representatives in Congress:—Daniel D. Tompkins, 9th Cong., 1805-6; Henry Crocheron, 14th Cong., 1815-17; James Gnyon, Jr., 16th Cong., 1819-21; Jacob Crocheron, 21st Cong., 1829-31; Samuel Barton, 24th Cong., 1833-37; Joseph Egbert, 27th Cong., 1841-43; Henry I. Seaman, 29th Cong., 1843-47; Obadiah Bowne, 32d Cong., 1851-53; Henry G. Stebbens, 38th Cong., resigned; Dwight Townsend, 38th Cong., 1863-65; Henry B. Metcalfe, 44th Cong., 1875-77.



INTERVIEW IN OLD BILLOIT HOUSE,
BETWEEN LORD HOWE AND JOHN ADAMS,
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN AND EDWARD RUTLEDGE.

From an old painting.

Presidential Electors:—John Garretson, 1808; Joseph Perine, 1812; Jacob Crocheron, 1836; John T. Harrison, 1840; John C. Thompson, 1844; James M. Cross, 1848; Minthorne Tompkins, 1856; Obadiah Bowne, 1864; George Bechtel, 1884; Frederick Bachmann, 1892.

State Senators:—Paul Micheau, 1789-92; Jacob Tysen, 1828; Harman B. Cropsey, 1832-35; Minthorne Tompkins, 1840-41; James E. Cooley, 1852-53; Robert Christie, Jr., 1864-65; Nicholas La Ram, 1866-67; Samuel H. Frost, 1870-71.

Members of the State Constitutional Conventions:—Abraham Bancker and Gozen Ryerss, 1788; Joseph Perine, 1801; Daniel D. Tompkins, 1821; John T. Harrison, 1845; George William Curtis, 1868; William M. Mullen and Thomas W. Fitzgerald, 1896.

Regents of the University:—Abraham Bancker and John C. Dongan,

first board, 1784; Harmanus Garrison, second board, 1784; after which time Richmond County was not represented in the board until April 12, 1864, when George William Curtis was appointed, and continued to hold the office to the time of his death.

Judges of the County Court:—Ellis Duxbury, 1691; Daniel Lake, 1710; Joseph Billop, 1711; Thomas Farnar, 1712; Richard Merrill, 1739; John Le Conte, 1739; William Walton, 1756, also a member of the council from 1758 to 1768, when he died; Joseph Bedell, 1761; Benjamin Seaman, 1775; Paul Micheau, 1786; Gozen Ryerss, 1797; John J. Murray, 1802; John Garretson, 1803; Jacob Tysen, 1823; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1840; William Emerson, 1841; Albert Ward, 1844; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1847; Tompkins Westervelt, 1876; Stephen D. Stephens, 1882.

District Attorneys:—George Metcalfe, 1818; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1826; Thorn S. Kingsland, 1833; George Catlin, 1839; Roderick N. Morrison, 1840; Lot C. Clark, 1841; George Catlin, 1849; George White, 1850; Alfred de Groot, 1853; Abraham W. Winant, 1860; John H. Healey, 1865; Sidney F. Rawson, 1872; John Crook, 1875; George Gallagher, 1881; Thomas W. Fitzgerald, 1890; George M. Pinney, Jr., 1896.

Surrogates, under Colonial Government:—Walter Dongan, 1733; Benjamin Seaman, 1759.

Surrogates, under Federal Government:—Adrian Bancker, 1787; Abraham Bancker, 1792; John Housman, 1809; Cornelius Bedell, 1810; Jonathan Lewis, 1811; Cornelius Bedell, 1813; Tunis Egbert, 1815; Richard Conner, 1820; John Garrison, 1820; Tunis Egbert, 1821; Richard Crocheron, 1830; Lewis R. Marsh, 1843; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1847; Tompkins Westervelt, 1876; Stephen D. Stephens, 1882.

County Clerks:—Francis Williamson, 1682; Samuel Winder, 1684; Jacob Corbet, 1689; Thomas Carhart, 1691; Thomas Coen, 1698; William Tillyer, 1706; Alexander Stuart, 1708; Adam Mott, 1728; Daniel Stillwell, 1738; Daniel Corsen, 1739; Paul Michéau, 1761; Abraham Bancker, 1781; John Mersereau, 1784; Joseph Perine, 1798; John V. D. Jacobson, 1810; Joseph Perine, 1811; Jonathan Lewis, 1815; Walter Betts, 1828; Joshua Mersereau, Jr., 1843; Israel C. Denyse, 1852; James Clobberly, 1855; Israel C. Denyse, 1858; Abraham V. Conner, 1861; Michael O'Brien, 1861; Joseph Egbert, 1867; John H. Van-Cleaf, Jr., 1870; David H. Cortelyou, 1873; Abram V. Conner, 1876; Cornelius A. Hart, 1879; John J. Kenney, 1894⁷; John H. Elsworth, 1894.

School Commissioners:—Harman B. Cropsey, 1813; David A. Edgar, 1856; Henry M. Boelun, 1860; Isaac Lea, 1862; James Brownlee, 1870;

⁶ This was made a county office in 1818.

⁷ John J. Kenney was given the certificate of election; but as there was a question as to his title to the office, the matter was carried to the courts. At the end of six months, how-

ever, Mr. Kenney surrendered the office to his rival amicably.

⁸ The title of the office in 1813 was county superintendent, and the incumbent was appointed by the Board of Supervisors.

C. Henry King, 1878; Theodore Frean, 1883; John J. Kenney, 1888; Julia K. West, 1894.

Sheriffs:—John Palmer, 1683; Thomas Lovelace, 1684; Thomas Stilwell, 1685; Eli Crossen, 1689; Thomas Stilwell, 1691; John Stilwell, 1692; John De Pue, 1689; Jacob Coulsen, 1699; Christian Corsen, 1700; John De Pue, 1701; Lambert Garrison, 1702; William Tillyer, 1709; Benjamin Bill, 1722; Charles Garrison, 1730; Paul Micheau, 1736; Nicholas Larzalere, 1739; John Hillyer, 1751; Thomas Frost, 1775; Abraham Bancker, 1784; Lewis Ryerss, 1788; Benjamin Parker, 1792; Isaac Cubberly, 1796; John Hillyer, 1799; Jacob Crocheron, 1802; Jonathan Lewis, 1806; Daniel Guyon, 1810; Jacob Crocheron, 1811; Jacob Hillyer, 1813; Henry Perine, 1815; John Hillyer, 1819; Jacob Crocheron, 1821; Walter Betts, 1825; Harman B. Cropsey, 1828; Lawrence Hillyer, 1831; Israel Oakley, 1834; Andrew B. Decker, 1837; Jacob Simonson, 1840; Israel O'Disosway, 1843; Jacob Guyon, 1846; Israel O. Disosway, 1849; Abraham Ellis, 1852; Abraham Lockman, 1855; Isaac M. Marsh, 1858; Moses Alston, 1861; Abraham Winant, 1864; Jacob G. Winant, 1867; Moses Alston, 1870; William C. Denyse, 1873; Benjamin Brown, 1876; Abraham V. Conner, 1880; Benjamin Brown, 1883; John J. Vaughan, Jr., 1886; John H. Elsworth, 1889; Edward M. Muller, 1892; John L. Dailey, 1895; Augustus Acker, 1898.

Members of the Colonial Assembly:—John Dally, 1691; Lambert Dorland, 1691; Ellis Duxbury, 1691-95-98; Thomas Morgan, 1692-98-1702; J. T. Van Pelt, 1692-97-98; John Shadwell, 1693-95; Thomas Stilwell, 1693-98; John Tunison, 1694-95-98; John Woglom, 1698-99; Garret Veghte, 1699, 1702; John Stilwell, 1702-25; Abraham Lackerman, 1702-26; Richard Merrill, 1725-37; John Le Count, 1726-56; Adam Mott, 1737-39; Richard Stilwell, 1739-48; Paul Micheau, 1748-51; William T. Walton, 1751-61; Benjamin Seaman, 1756-75; Henry Holland, 1761-69; Christopher Billopp, 1769-75.

County Treasurers:—1766-7-8-9—Jacob Rezeau, 1770—John Bedell, 1771—Lewis Dubois, 1772 to and including '79—Jacob Beagle, 1780—Richard Conner, appointed to fill vacancy caused by death, 1781—Christian Jacobson, 1782-3—Richard Conner, 1784-5—Peter Rezeau, 1786—Benjamin Micheau, 1787—Richard Conner, to fill vacancy until the appointment of Bornt Simonson, 1788—Bornt Simonson, 1789—Gozen Ryerss, 1790-1-2—Richard Conner, 1793, to and including 1826—John V. D. Jacobson, 1827, to and including 1842—Richard Crocheron, 1843-4-5—Stephen D. Stephens, 1846-7-8—David M. Mersereau, 1849-50-1—Stephen D. Stephens, 1851-5-6—Webley J. Edwards, 1857, to and including 1868—Hiram J. Corson, 1868—Edward P. Barton, 1869—Webley J. Edwards, 1870-1—Abram Winant, 1873-4-5—Hugh McRoberts, 1876, to and including 1881—James R. Robinson, 1882, to and including 1886—James Tully, 1887, to and including 1894—Matthew Tully, 1895-6-7—James Wheeler.

Members of Assembly, under the State Government:—Abraham Jones,

1777-78; Joshua Mersereau, 1777-78; no name recorded in 1778-9; Joshua Mersereau, 1779-80, 1780-81, 1781-82, 1782-83; Adrain Bancker, 1784; Johannes Van Wagenen, 1784; Joshua Mersereau, 1784-85; Cornelius Corsen, 1784-85; Joshua Mersereau, 1786; John Dongan, 1786; John C. Dongan, 1787; Thomas Frost, 1787; John C. Dongan, 1788; Peter Winant, 1788; Abraham Bancker, 1788-89; John C. Dongan, 1788-89; Abraham Bancker, 1789-90; Peter Winant, 1789-90-91; Gozen Ryerss, 1791-92-93-94; Lewis Ryerss, 1795-96-97; Paul J. Mischeau, 1798-99; John P. Ryerss, 1800; Paul J. Mischeau, 1801-2-3; John Housman, 1804; John Dunn, 1804-5-6; David Mersereau, 1807-8-9; Richard Conner, 1812; James Guyon, 1811-12; James Guyon, Jr., 1812-13-14; Jesse Oakley, 1814-15; Richard Corsen, 1816; Richard C. Corsen, 1816-17-18; Harmanus Guyon, 1819-20; Sammel Barton, 1820-21-22; Isaac R. Housman, 1823; Henry Perine, 1824; Harminus Garrison, 1825; no election in 1826; Abraham Cole, 1827-28; John Vanderbilt, 1829; John T. Harrison, 1830-31; Jacob Mersereau, 1832-33; Paul Mersereau, 1834; Lawrence Hillyer, 1835; John Garrison, Jr., 1836; Lawrence Hillyer, 1837; Israel Oakley, 1838-39; Bornt P. Winant, 1840; Israel Oakley, 1841; Henry Cole, 1842-43; William Nickles, 1844; Peter Mersereau, 1845; George H. Cole, 1846-47; Epaïm J. Totten, 1848; Gabriel P. Disosway, 1849; Benjamin P. Prall, 1850; William H. Anthon, 1851; Lawrence H. Cortelyou, 1852; Henry De Hart, 1853; Nicholas Crocheron, 1854; John F. Raymond, 1855; William J. Shea, 1856; Joshua Mersereau, 1857; Eben W. Hubbard, 1858; Robert Christie, Jr., 1859; Theodore C. Vermilye, 1860; N. Dane Ellingwood, 1861; Smith Ely, 1862; Theodore Frean, 1863; William H. Rutan, 1864; James Ridgway, 1865; Thomas Child, 1866; Nathaniel J. Wyech, 1867; John Decker, 1868-69-70-71; David W. Judd, 1872; John B. Hillyer, 1873; Stephen D. Stephens, 1874-75; Kneeland Townsend, 1876; Samuel R. Brick, 1877; Erastus Brooks, 1878-79; Oliver Fiske, 1880; Erastus Brooks, 1881-82-83; Edward A. Moore, 1884; Michael S. Tynan, 1885; Edward P. Doyle, 1886; Edward A. Moore, 1887; George Cromwell, 1888; Hubbard R. Yetman, 1889; Daniel T. Cornell, 1890; John Crook, 1891; Hubbard R. Yetman, 1892-3; Michael McGuire, 1894⁹; Michael Conklin, 1895; Gustav Barth, 1896; George Garby, 1897; Charles J. Kuhlmann, 1898.

Supervisors in Early Colonial Times.—There is no record in the County Clerk's office of Supervisors' names earlier than 1766, except in a few instances. This is no doubt the result of the burning of the Court House during the Revolution. Those prior to 1766 are as follows:

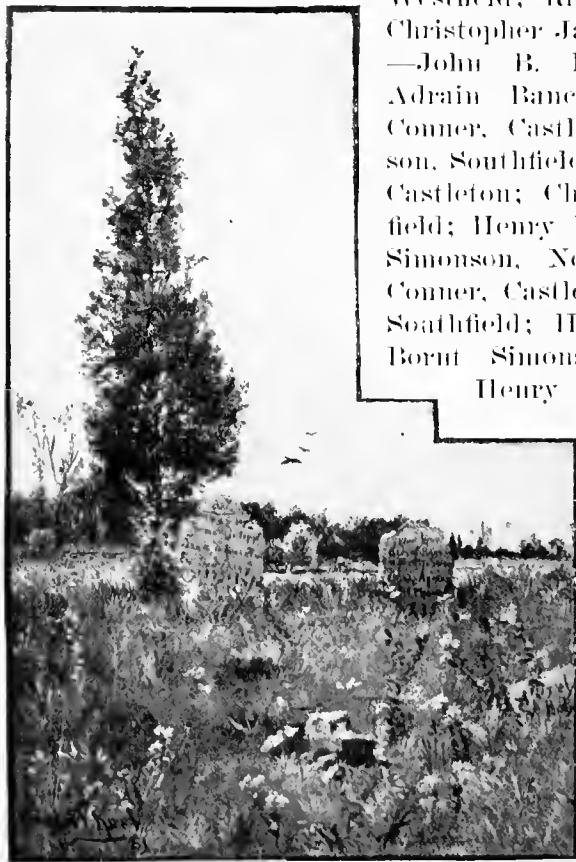
1699—William Tiljen, North; Anthony Tyson, West; Abm. Lake-man, South. 1703—Richard Merrill, North; Stoffel Garrison, South; Anthony Tyson, West. 1704—Richard Merrill, North; Tunis Egbert,

⁹ Michael McGuire was the Democratic candidate, and received the certificate of election. A contest was made by Michael Conklin, the

Republican candidate, and a few days before the close of the session, the case was decided in his favor.

West. 1705—Aaron Prall, North; Tunis Egbert, West; Stoffel Van Sant, South. 1706—Tunis Egbert, West; Aaron Prall, North. 1709—Alex'r Stuart, South; Jacob Corsen, North; Tunis Egbert, West.

Supervisors of the several towns in Richmond County since the beginning of the year 1766:—1766—Richard Conner, Castleton; John Poillon, Southfield; Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield; John Hillyer, Northfield. 1767—Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; John Poillon, Southfield; John Hillyer, Jr., Northfield. 1768—Richard Conner, Castleton; Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield; John Hillerd, Jr., Northfield; John Poillon, Southfield. 1769—Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; John Hillerd, Jr., Northfield; Anthony Fountain, Jr., Southfield. 1770—Richard Conner, Castleton; John Hillerd, Jr., Northfield; Nicholas Dupuy, Westfield; Anthony Fountain, Southfield. 1771—Richard Conner, Castleton; John Hillyer, Jr., Northfield; Adrian Banker, Westfield; Christopher Jacobson, Southfield. 1772—John Hillyer, Jr., Northfield; Adrian Banker,



BILLOPP FAMILY BURYING-GROUND AT THE MANOR OF BENTLEY.

Westfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; Christopher Jacobson, Southfield. 1773—John B. Hillyer, Jr., Northfield; Adrian Banker, Westfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; Christopher Jacobson, Southfield. 1774—Richard Conner, Castleton; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Henry Perrine, Westfield; Bornt Simonson, Northfield. 1775—Richard Conner, Castleton; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Henry Perrine, Westfield; Bornt Simonson, Northfield. 1776—

Henry Perrine, Westfield; Chris-

tian Jacobson, Southfield; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Richard Conner, Castleton. 1777—Henry Perrine, Westfield; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Richard Conner, Castleton. 1778—Henry Perrine, Westfield; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Richard Conner, Castleton. 1779—Richard Conner, Cas-

tleton; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Henry Perrine, West-

field. 1780—Richard Conner, Castleton; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Christian Jacobson, Southfield; Henry Perrine, Westfield. 1781—Richard Conner, Castleton; Bornt Simonson, Northfield; Henry Perrine, Westfield; Christian Jacobson, Southfield.¹¹ 1782—Richard Conner, Castleton; Henry Perrine, Westfield; Cornelius Corsen, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield. 1783—Richard Conner, Castleton; Henry Perrine, Westfield; Cornelius Corsen, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield. 1784—Hendrick Garrison, Castleton; Cornelius Corsen, Northfield; Anthony Fountain, Southfield; John Totten, Westfield; Ariz Ryerss, clerk. 1785—Gozen Ryerss, Northfield; John C. Dongan, Castleton; Peter Winant, Westfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Ariz Ryerss, clerk. 1786—Gozen Ryerss, Northfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; James Guyon, Southfield; Peter Winant, Westfield. 1787—Richard Conner, Castleton; John Wandel, Southfield; Gozen Ryerss, Northfield; Peter Winant, Westfield; Ariz Ryerss, clerk. 1788—Joshua Mersereau, Northfield; John Wandel, Southfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; Cornelius Cole, Westfield; Richard Conner, clerk. 1789—John Tysen, Northfield; Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield. 1790—Richard Conner, Castleton; Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; John Micheau, Westfield; Cornelius Bedell, Northfield; Richard Conner, Jr., Clerk. 1791—John Tysen, Northfield; Richard Conner, Castleton; Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; John Micheau, Westfield; Richard Conner, Jr., Clerk. 1792—John Tysen, Northfield; John Micheau, Westfield; Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; George Barnes, Castleton. 1793—Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; Cornelius Cole, Westfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; Collins Cole, Westfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; Cornelius Bedell, Northfield. 1794—Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; Cornelius Northfield. 1795—Peter Cortelyou, Southfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; Cornelius Cole, Westfield; Cornelius Bedell, Northfield. 1796—Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; John Tysen, Northfield; Daniel Lake, Southfield. 1797—John Tysen, Northfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; Daniel Lake, Southfield; Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield. 1798—Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield; Abraham Burbank, Castleton; John Tysen, Northfield; George Barnes, Southfield. 1799—Jacob Mersereau, Southfield; John Honsman, Castleton; George Barnes, Southfield; Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield. 1800—George Barnes, Southfield; Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield; John Honsman, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield. 1801—Benjamin Larzelere, Westfield; John Honsman, Castleton;

¹¹ "Richmond County, ss. November ye 19 1782 at a meeting of the Judge and Supervisors of said county John Micheau the surviving loan officer came and exhibited his accounts and made it appear that there is still due to the loan officer which has never come into his hands and yet due on the mortgages the sum of four hundred and four pounds sixteen shillings.

" BENJ'E SEAMAN, Judge.

" HENRY PERRINE,

" RICHARD CONNER,

" JAMES GUYON,

" CORNELIUS CORSEN,

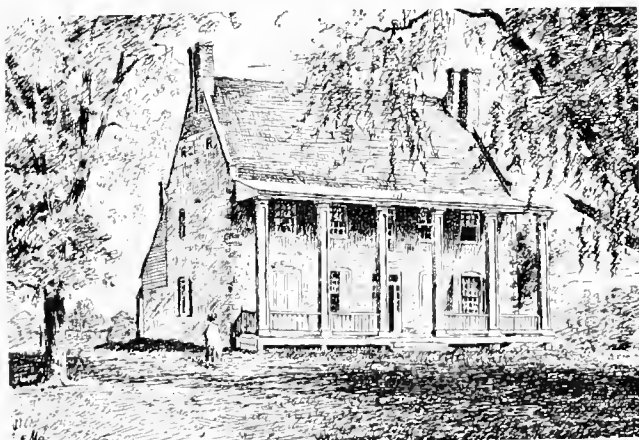
Supervisors.

—*Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors, 1782.*"

Henry Crocheron, Northfield; George Barnes, Southfield. 1802—John Housman, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1803—John Garrison, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1804—Richard S. Cary, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1805—John Tysen, Jr., Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1806—John Tysen, Jr., Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1807—John Tysen, Jr., Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1808—John Tysen, Jr., Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1809—John Tysen, Jr., Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1810—John Housman, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1811—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1812—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1813—Jacob Tyson, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1814—Jacob Tyson, Castleton; Henry Crocheron, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1815—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; David Mersereau, Northfield; John V. D. Jacobson, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1816—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1817—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1818—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1819—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1820—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Northfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1821—Jacob Tysen, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Henry Perrine, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1822—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1823—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Richard Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1824—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; William Prall, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1825—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1826—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Joseph Se-

guine, Westfield. 1827—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Gilbert Totten, Westfield. 1828—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Richard Jackson, Westfield. 1829—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Daniel Mersereau, Westfield. 1830—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Daniel Mersereau, Westfield. 1831—Isaac R. Housman, Castleton; James Perrine, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Daniel Mersereau, Westfield. 1832—Abraham Crocheron, Castleton; James Perrine, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Daniel Mersereau, Westfield. 1833—Abraham Crocheron, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; Harmanus Guyon, Southfield; Daniel Mersereau, Westfield. 1834—John Garrison, Jr., Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; Anthony Johnson, Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. 1835—John Garrison, Jr., Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; Anthony Johnson, Southfield; David Latourette, Westfield. 1836—John Garrison, Jr., Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; Anthony Johnson, Southfield; David Latourette, Westfield. 1837—Nathan Barrett, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; Samuel Coddington, Southfield; Joseph Segnine, Westfield. 1838—Nathan Barrett, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Joseph Segnine, Westfield. 1839—Jacob De Groot, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Joseph Segnine, Westfield. 1840—John C. Thompson, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Israel Oakley, Westfield. 1841—Peter Laforge, Castleton; Peter Mersereau, Northfield; Samuel Coddington, Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. 1842—Peter Laforge, Castleton; Peter Mersereau, Northfield; Samuel Coddington, Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. 1843—Albert Ward, Castleton; Peter Mersereau, Northfield; Samuel Coddington, Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. 1844—Eder Vreeland, Castleton; Peter Mersereau, Northfield; Alexander H. Britton, Southfield; Jacob R. Cropsey, Westfield. 1845—Eder Vreeland, Castleton; Michael Van Name, Northfield; George H. Cole, Southfield; Jacob R. Cropsey, Westfield. 1846—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; Farnham Hall, Southfield; Andrew Eddy, Westfield. 1847—Robert M. Hazard, Castleton; Nicholas Crocheron, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Ephraim J. Totten, Westfield. 1848—Robert M. Hazard, Castleton; Oliver R. Martin, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. 1849—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Jacob Simonson, Northfield; John C. Garrison, Southfield; Ephraim J. Totten, Westfield. 1850—Joseph B. H. Martling, Castleton; Garret G. Post, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Jesse Oakley, Westfield. 1851—Joseph B. H. Martling, Castleton; Lawrence Hillyer, Northfield; James Guyon, Southfield; Samuel

H. Frost, Westfield. 1852—Joseph B. H. Martling, Castleton; Garret P. Wright, Northfield; Samuel Barton, Southfield; Samuel H. Frost, Westfield. 1853—George B. Davis, Castleton; Charles Van Name, Northfield; Jacob W. Mersereau, Southfield; Samuel H. Frost, Westfield. 1854—Joshua Mersereau, Castleton; Richard C. Moore, Northfield; Jacob W. Mersereau, Southfield; Samuel H. Frost, Westfield. 1855—Gabriel Martino, Castleton; James G. Burger, Northfield; Joseph Egbert, Southfield; Samuel Frost, Westfield. 1856—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Lawrence Hillyer, Northfield; Joseph Egbert, Southfield; Samuel H. Frost, Westfield. 1857—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Garret G. Post, Northfield; Samuel Barton, Southfield; Gilbert A. Cole, Westfield. 1858—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Garret G. Post, Northfield; John C. Garrison, Southfield; William H. Rutan, Westfield. 1859—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Garret G. Post, Northfield; John C. Garrison, Southfield; William H. Rutan, Westfield. 1860—John J. Clute, Castleton; Garret G. Post, Northfield; John C. Garrison, Southfield; William H. Rutan, Westfield; Jacob B. Wood, Middletown. 1861—Smith Ely, Castleton; Garret G.



OLD BILLOPP HOUSE, ERECTED IN 1668.
From a sketch by F. W. Kost, in 1886.

Post, Northfield; Dennis Keeley, Southfield; William H. Rutan, Westfield; George B. Davis, Middletown. 1862—Smith Ely, Castleton; Peter C. Laforge, Northfield; Dennis Keeley, Southfield; Gilbert A. Cole, Westfield; Alexander Hornby, Middletown. 1863—David L. Gardner, Castleton; Thomas Child, Northfield; Dennis Keeley, Southfield; Gilbert A. Cole, Westfield. 1864—David L. Gardiner, Castleton; Charles Van Name, Northfield; Dennis Keeley, Southfield; Abraham H. Wood, Westfield; John Bechtel, Middletown. 1865—James H. Crabtree, Castleton; Thomas Child, Northfield; James Cocroft, Southfield; Abraham H. Wood, Westfield; D. Porter Lord, Middletown. 1866—Joseph Esterbrook, Castleton; Israel C. Denyse, Northfield; Ephraim Clark, Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; Theodore Fream, Middletown. 1867—Nathan M. Heal, Castleton; Israel C. Denyse, Northfield; Ephraim Clark, Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; D. Porter Lord, Middletown. 1868—Richard Christopher, Castleton; John H. Van Clief, Northfield; J. S. Ketteltas, Southfield; Samuel R. Brick, Middletown.

1869—Richard Christopher, Castleton; John H. Van Clief, Northfield; Edward P. Barton, Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; Samuel R. Brick, Middletown. 1870—Archie D. Pell, Castleton; John H. Van Clief, Northfield; Philip Brady, Southfield; George W. Ellis, Westfield; Samuel R. Brick, Middletown. 1871—Robert B. Minturn, Castleton; John H. Van Clief, Northfield; Dennis Keeley, Southfield; George W. Ellis, Westfield; Samuel R. Brick, Middletown. 1872—John D. Vermule, Castleton; John B. Hillyer, Northfield; George J. Greenfield, Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; Alvin C. Bradley, Middletown. 1873—John D. Vermule, Castleton; Garret Simonson, Northfield; George J. Greenfield, Southfield; Abraham J. Wood, Westfield; John E. Armstrong, Middletown. 1874—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Garret Simonson, Northfield; George J. Greenfield, Southfield; Henry H. Segune, Westfield; Frederick White, Middletown. 1875—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Garrett Simonson, Northfield; William Corry, Southfield; James Guyon, Westfield; Henry Frost, Middletown. 1876—Richard Christopher, Castleton; Richard Latourette, Northfield; William Corry, Southfield; Jacob M. Guyon, Westfield; Henry Frost, Middletown. 1877—Charles A. Herpich, Castleton; Richard Latourette, Northfield; William Corry, Southfield; Henry H. Guyon, Westfield; Theodore Frean, Middletown. 1878—Charles A. Herpich, Castleton; Richard C. Latourette, Northfield; William Corry, Southfield; Gilbert C. Deane, Westfield; Theodore Frean, Middletown; John Meehan, clerk. 1879—Charles A. Herpich,¹² Castleton; Alfred Z. Ross, Northfield; Timothy D. O'Brien, Southfield; Gilbert C. Deane, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Abram Winant, clerk. 1880—Edward Reilley, Castleton; Cyrus B. White, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Gilbert C. Deane, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Abram Winant, clerk. 1881—Robert Moore, Castleton; Abram Crocheron, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Gilbert C. Deane, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1882—Robert Moore, Castleton; Abram Crocheron, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Jesse Oakley, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1883—Robert Moore, Castleton; Abram Crocheron, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Jesse Oakley, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1884—Robert Moore, Castleton; John H. Van Clief, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Jesse Oakley, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown;

12 In the spring of 1879, the Board of Supervisors voted to appropriate an amount of money to aid in defraying the expenses of unveiling a monument erected in Bethel Cemetery, at Totenville, to the memory of the men who had enlisted from Staten Island and had died in the war. The members of the Board were indicted by the Grand Jury for "misappropriating funds." The money, however, was not

paid out of the treasury, and the indictment was set aside. Charles A. Herpich, the member from Castleton, the chairman, was in Europe at the time. On his return home he resigned as supervisor, because of the indignity thus placed upon him and his fellow members. Edward Reilly was appointed by the Castleton Town Board to fill the vacancy.

Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1885—Robert Moore, Castleton; Cyrus B. White, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Jesse Oakley, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1886—Robert Moore, Castleton; Cyrus B. White, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; A. Sylvester Joline, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1887—Robert Moore, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; A. Sylvester Joline, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1888—Robert Moore, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; George Bechtel, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1889—Robert Moore, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; Julius Credo, Middletown; Clarence M. Johnson, clerk. 1890—Robert Moore, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; Peter H. Wandel, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1891—Robert Moore, Castleton; J. Howard Van Name, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; Julius Credo, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1892—Robert Moore, Castleton; J. Howard Van Name, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; Julius Credo, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1893—James E. Mulligan, Castleton; J. Howard Van Name, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; John L. Feeny, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1894—Daniel Campbell, Castleton; J. Howard Van Name, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; John L. Feeny, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1895—George M. Pinney, Jr., Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; John L. Feeny, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1896—John L. Dobson, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Abram Cole, Westfield; John L. Feeny, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk. 1897—Augustus Acker, Castleton; Edward P. Doyle, Northfield; Nathaniel Marsh, Southfield; Hubbard R. Yetman, Westfield; John L. Feeny, Middletown; Franklin C. Vitt, clerk.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE BILLOPPS AND THEIR HOME.



THE history of Staten Island can not be truthfully and fully written without telling the long and interesting story of the Billopps and their home, for the Island was practically controlled by that noted family for more than a century.

It is well, at the commencement of the story, to go back to the little village of Coventry, in the heart of Old England, in the troublesome days near the close of the Sixteenth Century. Barnard Billopp was born in that place, and at the age of seventeen enlisted as a cavalryman in the service of the Crown. He became an officer as a reward of merit, was repeatedly promoted for bravery, and finally died from the effects of a wound received in a duel with a fellow officer. It is known that his parents resided at Coventry, and left him an orphan at an early age.

Barnard left two sons, Christopher and James, and the latter is said to have won the warm friendship of Queen Elizabeth by once saving her precious life at the risk of his own. He was presented with a commission in the English navy, which he declined and accepted a court appointment as, perhaps, more congenial to his nature. James had a large family. His eldest child, a daughter, is said to have left her home mysteriously, after she had grown to womanhood, and served in the English army as an officer, her disguise not being detected until after several years of active service. According to tradition, James I. was so pleased with her conduct that he ordered her pay to be continued after she had been mustered out of the army. Her brother, Christopher, became a merchant in London, and was a government contractor under Charles I., who granted him this favor because of his marriage to a lady belonging to the court circle.

Christopher had one son, whom he also named Christopher, and who was born in London about 1638. He was educated for a naval officer, by direction of the King, who held his father and mother in high regard. He received a commission as captain, and made several important voyages to distant parts. In one of these he was captured by Turkish pirates, who wounded him severely and left him lying upon the shore for dead. After many weeks of suffering he was picked up by an English vessel and taken back to his home.

In the Spring of 1667, Christopher Billopp sailed from England in the "Bentley," a small vessel carrying two cannon on her deck. She reached the banks of Newfoundland after several weeks of tossing about on the ocean, and almost immediately started to make a cruise

along the coast of New Netherlands. It is not definitely known whether he was in the service of Charles II., or whether the venture was of a private nature.

When it was known in England that New Netherland had been reduced, and was now actually in the possession of the English, Lord William Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, two of the royal favorites, induced the Duke of York, probably influenced by the King, (his brother), to give them a patent for the territory west of the Hudson and the bay, and as far south as Cape May. This was named *Nova Caesarea*, or New Jersey. With thirty emigrants, composed of English and French, Captain Philip Carteret, a cousin of Sir George, and Governor of the new territory, sailed for New York; but by stress of weather was driven into the Chesapeake. While lying there he forwarded despatches to Bollen, who was commissary at the fort in New York, and also to Nicholls.

This was the first intimation the Governor had received of the dismemberment of the extensive territory over which he ruled. He was both astounded and chagrined. He had already conveyed several parcels of land within the limits of the new grant, and regarded the whole of it as the best part of the duke's domain. He remonstrated, but it was too late; the duke evidently thought he had been too precipitate; but as he could not well retrace his steps, he suffered matters to remain as they were. Carteret arrived in New York about midsummer, 1665, and immediately took possession of his government. He chose Elizabethtown as his capital.¹ It is said that when he first landed on the soil of New Jersey, he carried a hoe upon his shoulder, in token of his intention to devote his attention to the promotion of agriculture.

After the Duke of York had conveyed the territory of New Jersey to Carteret and Berkeley, a doubt arose whether Staten Island was not included in the grant, by the terms of the charter. Carteret, the Governor, not the proprietor, did not lay a positive claim to the Island; in a certain way he admitted that it did not belong to his jurisdiction, and accepted a conveyance for a tract of land on the Island from Nicholls, the Duke of York's agent. In 1668, however, the Island "was adjudged to belong to New York," and the old stone house on the beautiful slope overlooking the Raritan bay, still stands to remind the present generation of that important period.

As we cross the threshold of this ancient structure, our minds wander back through the dim avenues of history, and we recall so much that has aided not only to form the early records of Richmond county, but to lay the very foundation of the nation. We go back to that

¹ After the disappearance of Captain Christopher Billopp, his wife, who remained at the Manor of Bentley, received a pension from the King. Some writers believe that he had been ordered back to England, and did not go on his

own accord. In consideration of the fact that his life was lost at sea, while obeying this order, the widow was compensated from the royal treasury.

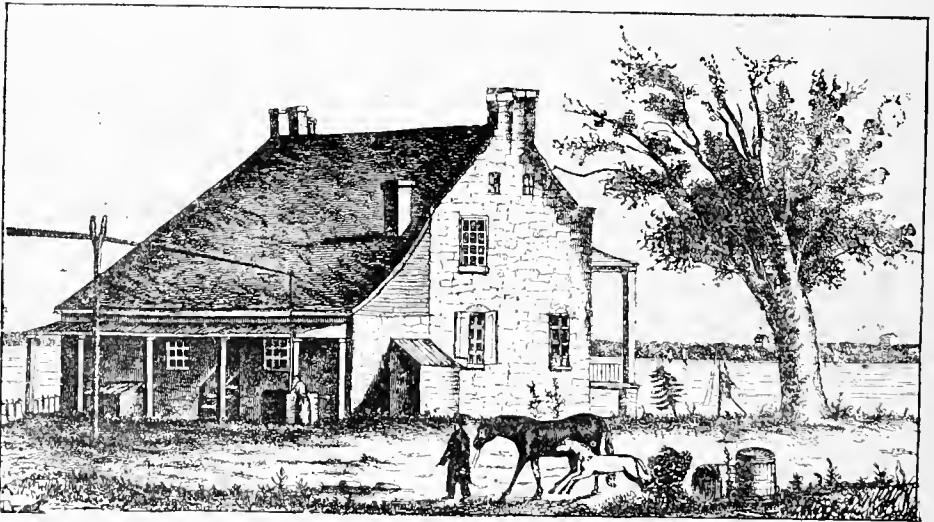
memorable Summer day when the Island woodlands were clothed in their richest verdure, and the winding trails of the Indian lay amid bowers of wild flowers, now and then leading up to an isolated Holland cottage or a rude cluster of wigwams. We glance across the quiet bay, glistening beneath the noonday sun, and we behold a small sailing vessel, after a tempestuous voyage of many weeks, drawing near to the port at the rude little hamlet of Perth Amboy. We witness, too, the dissensions and the clashing among men which sectional strife and personal interests have caused, until at last a half-fledged monarch places upon it all the strong hand of authority. We see the Duke of York, long before he drew near to the fulfilment of his cherished day dream of ascending the throne of England as James the Second, deciding the fate of Staten Island; and this old house stands here to-day as a monument to the memory of that event. As we have before stated, up to the year 1668 it was a disputed question whether Staten Island belonged to New York or New Jersey, and, tired of the annoyance that this fact gave, the Duke decided that all islands lying in the harbor of New York which could be circumnavigated in twenty-four hours should remain in New York, otherwise to belong to New Jersey. Captain Christopher Billopp, as stated, undertook the work and was successful. In consideration of this service, the Duke of York presented Captain Billopp with a tract of land containing eleven hundred and sixty-three acres, on which he built the Manor of Bentley. Most of the material was gathered on the plantation; but the cement, which holds the great thick walls together so firmly, came from England and the bricks from Belgium. Captain Billopp set to work to build the house shortly after he got possession of the land, but he did not receive his deed for the property until 1687. Shortly after his location on the Island he married a sister of Thomas Farmar, who was a Judge of Richmond County in 1714, and afterward removed to Perth Amboy, and a few years later became a Supreme Court Judge of New Jersey.

In 1674, the Duke of York, by permission of the King, organized a company of infantry of one hundred men on Staten Island; of this Billopp was commissioned second lieutenant. In 1677, while residing on his plantation, he was appointed by Governor Andros, who had succeeded Lovelace, "commander and sub-collector of New York, on Delaware bay and river." While occupied with the duties of these offices, he "misconducted" himself by making "extravagant speeches in public"; but of the subject of these speeches we are not informed. They were probably of a political character, and must have been peculiarly offensive, for Andros recalled him the next year, and deprived him of his military commission. This action of the Governor was approved by the Duke of York, who directed that another should be appointed to fill the vacant lieutenantcy.

Billopp then retired to his plantation on Staten Island, there to

brood over the ingratitude of princes, or perhaps over his own follies and indiscretions. Nothing more is heard of him for two years, when he again appears as one of a number who preferred complaints or charges against Andros, to the Duke of York, some of which must have been of a serious nature, as the Duke thought it necessary to send an agent over to investigate the matter, and on receiving his report, Andros was summoned to appear in person in England to render his accounts. This was probably in 1680 or 1681, when Brockholst succeeded Andros.

Here we lose positive historical trace of Christopher Billopp. Tradition says that in the early part of the eighteenth century, he left Staten Island and sailed for England in his ship, the "Bentley," and was never heard of afterward. He left no male issue; but he had at least one daughter. She was born on the 22d of March, 1712, and



OLD BILLOPP HOUSE, AS IT APPEARED IN 1844.

they called her Eugenia. She was tenderly reared by her mother, who remained at the Manor of Bentley, and died at an advanced age and was buried in the family burying ground, now marked by a tall cedar tree standing on a knoll in a field east of the old house.

Eugenia Billopp was educated in the Perth Amboy academy, (still standing and occupied as an almshouse). Her cousin, Thomas Farmar, Jr., (son of Judge Thomas Farmar, to whom we have alluded), attended that school at the same time. Eugenia is said to have been a beautiful and accomplished woman, and Thomas Farmar a young man of marked ability. The cousins were married at an early age and inherited the Manor of Bentley. In order to satisfy the ambition of the widowed mother of Eugenia to perpetuate the family name, young Farmar adopted the name of Billopp.

Thomas Farmar Billopp is well known to the readers of local his-

tory. He became a man of prominence, and was looked up to by not only the people of Staten Island, but by those of this and the adjoining States. He became a Major of the Staten Island militia and an associate judge of the county courts, beside holding various other positions of trust. His charming wife made their home one of the centers of colonial society and entertained in a lavish manner. Their residence in those days was surrounded by a delightful park, beautified by shrubbery and flowers, and in and around the venerable structure all was done to gladden the eye and heart that skill and refinement could dictate. Thomas and Eugenia exercised a great influence with the Indians and allowed a tribe of the Raritans to settle on their estate, and remain there as long as they desired. They encamped about where the center of the village of Tottenville is now located, and relics of the departed race are to this day frequently found in the vicinity.

Thomas and Eugenia died comparatively young, he in his thirty-ninth year and she in her twenty-third. Their remains were laid away in the family burying ground, sad to say to be desecrated in later years.² When the property finally fell into the hands of General Lloyd Aspinwall, he ordered the cemetery entirely demolished, the bones of two generations of Billopps and scores of friendly Indians and faithful slaves removed to a garden near St. Paul's M. E. Church in the village, and the sacred ground to be thrown into a commons.

Several years ago, the writer, in company with a friend, spent many days in and around the old Billopp house. We found the old brown headstone that had formerly marked Thomas Farmer Billopp's grave leaning against the fence on the highway, in a good state of preservation, and we set to work in earnest to discover its mate. We were successful after a time in finding enough of the pieces to make the record perfect, and we placed them together for the purpose of preservation. The inscriptions on these two headstones are as follows:

"Here Lyes y^e Body of Evjenea y^e Wife of Thomas Billopp. Aged 23 years Dec^d March y^e 22^d 1735."

"Here Lyes y^e Body of Thomas Billopp Esq^r Son of Thomas Farmer Esq^r Dec^d August y^e 2^d 1750 In y^e 39th year of his Age."

Thomas and Eugenia had two children—a daughter and a son. Salley, as the daughter was called in the family records, married Alexander Ross, of Elizabethtown, N. J., where she lived for a number of years. The son, born about 1734, was named Christopher, in honor of his grandfather, the founder of the family on Staten Island. He, too, was educated at Perth Amboy, and was left an orphan before he attained mature manhood. Early in life he took an active interest in public affairs, and, inheriting the refined tastes of his parents, also

² The family burying-ground of the Billopps can not be legally taken for any other purpose, as it was reserved in the conveyance of

the property from Christopher Billopp to Caleb Ward. That sale was legal in every respect, and its terms are consequently binding.

rose to social distinction. The following description of Colonel Christopher Billopp is furnished by a friend:

“Christopher Billopp was a very tall, soldierly looking man, when in his prime. He was exceedingly proud, and his pride at times led him to the verge of haughtiness. Yet he was kind-hearted, not only to those whom he considered his equals, but to his slaves, as well as to the poor people of the Island. No one went from his door at the old manor hungry. It was his custom to gather the people of the Island once a year on the lawn in front of his house and hold a ‘harvest home.’ He delighted to talk to them and offer advice for their welfare. He was popular with the people. He was fond of dress, and was scrupulously neat in his attire. He kept his coach and liveried driver and footmen. Passionately fond of horses, his stable was filled with the finest-bred animals in the land. He was a magnificent rider and was very fond of the saddle. He was an expert shot with a pistol, which once saved his life, when he was attacked by robbers. Christopher Billopp was not a man to take advice, unless it instantly met with his favor. He generally regarded his own opinion superior to that of others, especially if theirs did not accord with his own. Life-long friends pleaded with him to join the cause of independence at the commencement of the Revolution; but he chose to follow the fortunes of royalty. He was a good citizen, a noble man—his misfortune being that he was on the losing side of a cause in which he had everything at stake. He saw, when too late, the error he had committed in sacrificing the home of his fathers.”

Christopher Billopp married when quite a young man a sister of Alexander Ross, of Elizabethtown, (the husband of his sister, Sallie). Two daughters were born by this marriage. They married Benjamin and Henry Seaman, of Marshland. His second wife was Jane, daughter of Benjamin Seaman, and it would thus seem that his second wife was a sister to his sons-in-law. The old house in which Christopher Billopp and Jane Seaman were married stood near the southern approach to the Fresh Kill bridge, and was demolished but a few years ago. We once conversed with an aged colored woman, an inmate of the County Almshouse, whose mother was a slave in the Seaman family, and witnessed the marriage ceremony. A large family was the result of this marriage, of which we will speak later on.

About 1750, Christopher Billopp was appointed “Chief of Police of Richmond County,” and held the office for a number of years. He was repeatedly a member of the Colonial Legislature. Immediately upon the arrival of Sir William Howe and his army on Staten Island, Christopher Billopp was commissioned a lieutenant-colonel of militia, and he organized a battalion of infantry. Colonel Billopp was practically the provost marshal of Staten Island throughout the Revolution, and his men did no service beyond that of provost guard, with one or two exceptions, when they were forced to fight to escape capture.

Colonel Billopp's intense loyalty to the British Crown made him exceedingly unpopular with those people of Staten Island and New Jersey who believed in the independence of the colonies. Communication between the Island and New Jersey had been prohibited by the British authorities, and he was very active in enforcing the prohibition. The colonists of New Jersey were very bitter in their hostility to him, and on two different occasions made him a prisoner of war. Perth Amboy is just across the waters of the Raritan bay, and on one of these occasions Colonel Billopp was observed going into his house by some Americans who were stationed in the steeple of St. Peter's church in that town. As soon as they saw him enter his abode, they ran to their boats, rapidly crossed the river, and he was soon made their captive. The British, then in possession of New York, had confined in irons several Americans who had been made prisoners, and to retaliate for this measure Colonel Billopp was taken to the Burlington (N. J.) Jail. We here copy the mittimus, as a matter of curiosity, and as showing the method of doing such things at that eventful period.

"To the Keeper of the Common Jail of the County of Burlington, greeting:—You are hereby commanded to receive into your custody the body of Col. Christopher Billopp, prisoner-of-war, herewith delivered to you, and having put irons on his hands and feet, you are to chain him down to the floor in a close room, in said jail, and there to retain him, giving him bread and water only, for his food, until you receive further orders from me, or the commissary of prisoners for the State of New Jersey, for the time being. Given under my hand, at Elizabethtown, this sixth day of Nov. 1779.

"ELISHA BOUDINOT,

"*Com. Pris. New Jersey.*"

Commissary Boudinot at the same time expressed his regrets to Colonel Billopp that circumstances made such treatment necessary; "but retaliation is directed, and it will, I most sincerely hope, be in your power to relieve yourself from the situation by writing to New York to procure the relaxation of the sufferings of John Leshier and Capt'n Nathaniel Randal." Colonel Billopp's companion while in prison was Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, of the "Queen's Rangers." Colonel Billopp evidently profited by the suggestion of Commissary Boudinot, as he was shortly after released from the Burlington prison. His second capture was effected in the night time, and Colonel Billopp was taken back to Burlington Jail. Being stricken with fever a day or so after his arrival there, he was transferred to the house of a friend, by permission of General Washington, and when able to be removed, was sent to his home on Staten Island, by order of the same general. The insecurity of his home on the banks of the Raritan was no longer a question with Colonel Billopp, and gathering his family around him he took a farewell look at the familiar and

beloved haunts, and departed from them forever. What scenes, what reveries, what hallowed associations must have been reawakened in the mind of the man at that hour, as he sacrificed the ancestral home, with all its dear and tender recollections, to satisfy his conscience in remaining loyal to the government of his fathers.

During the war, however, Colonel Billopp disposed of some parts of his estate. On the 10th of May, 1780, he sold to Joseph Totten a tract of twenty acres and another of three and a half acres in the Manor of Bentley, for £235 currency, and on the 29th of the same month he sold to Benjamin Drake a tract of sixty acres from his estate, for £600 currency. On the first of May, 1781, he and his wife, Jane, conveyed to Samuel Ward, of Richmond County, for £3,730 current money of the city of New York, the tract opposite Perth Amboy, known as the Manor of Bentley, "Containing three hundred and Seventy-three Acres of Land and salt meadow, be the same in Quantity more or Less, being Bounded Easterly by Land of said Albert Rickman Northerly by the river or sound at Low water mark and westerly and southerly by the Bay at Low Water mark." In this conveyance houses, barns, ferry house and dock, out-houses and stables are specified by name. From the tract is reserved for the heirs of Colonel Billopp sixty feet square for a burial place, the headstone of his father being the centre of such reservation. This provision has been cruelly violated.

After the war Colonel Billopp, with fifty-four other families of Loyalists, in 1783, petitioned Sir Guy Carleton for extensive grants of land in Nova Scotia. Colonel Billopp soon after went to New Brunswick, in that province, where for many years he bore a prominent part in the administration of public affairs. He was a member of the House of Assembly, and the council, and on the death of Governor Smythe, in 1823, he claimed the presidency of the government, and issued his proclamation accordingly; but the Honorable Ward Chipman was a competitor for the same station, and was sworn into office.

It is recorded in the Richmond County Clerk's office on July 16th, 1784, that Isaac Van Stontenburgh and Philip Van Cortland, Commissioners of Forfeitures for the Southern District of New York, made the following sale:

"Sold to Thomas McFarren of the City of New York, Merchant, for the sum of four thousand six hundred and ninety-five pounds Lawful Money of the said state—All that certain Tract or parcel of Land situate lying and being in the County of Richmond and Manor of Bentley. *Bounded* Southerly by the Bay or water called Prince's Bay, westerly by the river that runs between the said Land and Amboy Northerly partly by the Land of Jacob Reekhow and partly by the road and Easterly partly by the road and partly by the Bay, Containing Eight hundred and fifty acres and half an acre and which said

tract is divided into the several following Farms and Lots of Land—three hundred and seventy-three acres thereof in possession of Samuel Ward—Two hundred Acres in the possession of Albert Ryckman, Fifty-three acres in the possession of John Manner—Fifty-three acres in the possession of Andrew Prior—Twenty-five acres in the possession of James Churchward, sixty-seven acres and a half acre in the possession of Benjamin Drake—Twenty-three acres and a half acre in the possession of Joseph Totten—Eleven acres and a half acre in the possession of Jacob Reckhow—Together with all the Buildings and Improvements thereon Erected and made Forfeited to and Vested in the People of this state by the Attainer of Christopher Billopp late of the County of Richmond Esquire.”

When we compare the conflicting statements contained in these closing paragraphs, both of which were taken from the records, it would seem that the Government had seized and disposed of a portion of the property which Colonel Billopp himself had sold. But as the parties mentioned in the former paragraph held the therein described property for many years after the war, and portions of it are still in possession of their heirs, we take it for granted that the first statement is correct. The first record was made under the Colonial government, during the Revolutionary war, and the latter under the new Federal government. But it is probable that the legality of the sale was not recognized by the Commissioners.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE BILLOPPS AND THEIR HOME.—CONCLUDED.



WE now return to the period of the Revolution. Prior to Colonel Billopp's departure from the old house it was frequently, if not almost constantly, the scene of much splendor. Colonel Billopp's social and military standing made him a very prominent figure of the day, and in his home he entertained with that superb hospitality characteristic of Colonial times. Generals Howe, Clinton, Kuyphausen, Cleveland, Cornwallis, Burgoyne, and scores of other dignitaries were his pleased and welcome guests. And yet there was one other incident more important than all others that transpired in the old Manor of Bentley. Immediately after the severe battle of Long Island, in 1776, Lord Howe sent a communication to the Continental Congress, then assembled in Philadelphia, by General Sullivan, who had been captured, soliciting that a committee from that body might meet him, to confer on the issues of the war, with a hope that peace might be established. For this purpose, Benjamin Franklin, of Pennsylvania; John Adams, of Massachusetts, and Edward Rutledge, of South Carolina, were appointed.

The old house having been vacated by the Billopps, was now used as a military barrack, and had become very filthy, and the room on the right of the main hall, on entering, was cleansed and prepared for occupancy during the interview.



ROOM IN OLD BILLOPP HOUSE IN WHICH THE INTERVIEW WAS HELD.

Lord Howe desired to dictate terms of peace, and the Continental Congress had appointed these men to learn what he had to say. Along the sloping lawn in front of the house long lines of troops that formed the very flower of the English army were drawn up, between which the distinguished commander escorted his no less distinguished guests.

Lord Howe was no doubt sincere in his oft-expressed desire for peace, and he intimated to the commissioners that he was clothed with sufficient power for the purpose. But as Howe had requested that Congress should send its representatives as private citizens, General Sullivan returned with the word that it would send none save in their official capacities. Howe accepted these terms, and on the 6th day of September, 1776, they came.

Lord Howe met the Commissioners in a very courteous manner, and at once proceeded to explain the nature of the power with which he had been invested, which was simply to extend the royal clemency and full pardon to all repentant rebels who would lay down their arms and return to their allegiance. The Commissioners informed him that they were not authorized to entertain any propositions which did not recognize the political independence of the colonies. Lord Howe replied that he had a great regard for the Americans as a people; but that recognition of their independence was a matter beyond his authority, and could not for a moment be entertained, and that their precipitancy was painful to him and perilous to themselves.

Mr. Franklin answered that the people of America would endeavor to take good care of themselves, and thus alleviate as much as possible the pain his lordship might feel in consequence of any severities he might deem it his duty to adopt. This terminated the brief interview, and the committee rose to make their departure. Lord Howe politely accompanied them to the shore, the party returning between long lines of grenadiers, which, to use the language of Mr. Adams, "looked as fierce as ten furies, and making all the grimaces and gestures, and motions of their muskets, with bayonets fixed, which, I suppose, military etiquette requires, but which we neither understood nor regarded."

On the way down, Lord Howe again expressed his regret that he was unable to regard them as public characters, to which Mr. Adams replied, "Your Lordship may consider me in whatever light you please, and indeed, I should be willing to consider myself for a few moments in any character which would be agreeable to your lordship, except that of a British subject." To this Lord Howe replied, "Mr. Adams appears to be a decided character." The consequence of this exhibition of Mr. Adams' independence and fearless spirit was subsequently apparent, when the list of unpardonable rebels was published, prominent among which was the name of John Adams. The "fortunes of war" were never better exemplified than when a year or so afterward, John Adams was sent to England as the first minister plenipotentiary of the new government of the United States of America.¹

The old Billopp House was enlarged several years prior to the Revolution by the addition of the rear part with the sloping roof. Dormer windows ornamented the roof overlooking the bay, and there was a colonial porch in front. The latter changes were made in

1 "The momentous interview at the Old Billopp House, between the Old World and the New, was an event regarded with extreme solicitude by the people of both at that day. With the developments of time, it rises into the grandeur of a great battle-point and monument of history. The interview was brief,

There was no agreement, no reconciliation. Independence was maintained. The result was blessed by the hand of God, and is seen in the progress of a continent and the achievements of a century all over the world."—*Historical Sketches of Staten Island*, by Hon. Gabriel P. Disbrow.

1844, when the windows were removed and the long piazza erected. An old-fashioned hall runs through the original building, with its staircase free of all ornamentation.

The old kitchen is a place of interest. There is the great fireplace, really large enough for half a dozen people to stand in at a time, while at its back is the huge oven of which so much has been written. And there, too, it is remarkable to state, is the original iron trammel, and hanging to which are all the hooks and chains that were placed there more than a century and a half ago. Above this, on the thick walls of the chimney, are the hooks on which, in days of yore, they used to hang their meat for smoking. The kitchen is in the low part, which also contains a sitting and dining room. There is a unique corner cupboard in the kitchen which formerly stood in one of the large front rooms. It bears evidence of once having been a receptacle for silver and other valuable wares.

A curiosity is the inside stairway to the basement. Little and big steps lead at right angles down into one of the most unique spots imaginable. Above are the great whitcoak beams, so hard that it seems impossible to penetrate them with a knife blade, and they rest on a foundation of huge stones about four feet in thickness, and held together by a flint-like cement. In this old basement is laid one of the scenes in "The Water Witch," one of Fennimore Cooper's novels. The floor is of brick, and close beside the main entrance is a fireplace that corresponds with the one in the kitchen. This basement, there is every reason to believe, was originally used as a kitchen. In the rear of it—or rather, on the North side—is located a strange, dungeon-like cellar, which, tradition tells us, was used for imprisoning many a patriot of the Revolution, while the Billopp House was a British outpost. The theory has been advanced for many years that there was a secret subway from the basement down to the river, about two hundred yards distant.

The room on the right of the entrance to the main hall is the old parlor, and is the one in which the famous interview was held. On the opposite side of the hall is the dining room used during the times of the Billopps. It was originally a very large room, but several years ago was divided into two. One can easily picture in his mind some of the gay banquets that have been given in this old room; can imagine the powdered wigs and rich costumes gathered together in those old days at Bentley. What a charm they add to the willing imagination as the scenes come back to us only in the faded glory that serves to enchant the memory of the past.

On the second floor there have been no material changes during the two long centuries. But those rooms are a study within themselves. How many a soul has "dreampt through the curtain'd sleep" in those old rooms that now sleep a deeper slumber in the ground! Plain, simple, rich with age and embellished with history—that's all that can be said of them here.

The old garret—shades of boyhood, what reveries fill the mind up there! The strong white oak beams, mortised and braced in every direction, hard and firm with age, covered with great, long shingles that were undoubtedly the first to form the roof—how many have they protected from the sun, the wind and the rain! The old “slave quarters” on the north end of the floor were torn away many years ago, and the garret is now one large room. For at least one hundred and fifty years the slaves of the Billopps, the Wards, and other masters slept in that old garret. Among the superstitious there is an ill-founded tradition that a murder was committed in this garret some time prior to the Revolution; but as there is nothing in the Court records to substantiate the statement, we can put it down as one of those flimsy myths that almost always hover over the moss-covered walls of old buildings of this class.

The Billopp house is the oldest structure standing on Staten Island to-day, and is rapidly going into decay. The old doors and windows that were in service at the commencement are still there, but they are greatly worn, and in many places about the house there are evidences of the devastation and ruin of moth and rust.

Colonel Christopher Billopp died at St. John, N. B., March 28th, 1827, being then over ninety years of age. His wife, Jane, who was about twenty years younger, died in the same city in 1802, aged forty-eight years. Colonel Billopp's funeral was an occasion of great solemnity throughout the city, places of business being closed and various other tokens of respect shown. Beside the attendance of civic bodies, the local military organizations accompanied the remains of the old soldier to his grave and fired a farewell salute. The *St. John Daily Telegraph* on March 29th, the day after the death, contained the following notice:

“Died, last evening, in the ninetieth year of his age,⁶ the Hon. C. Billopp, a member of His Majesty's Council in this Province. He was formerly from Staten Island, N. York, where he owned a very valuable property, but from which he was driven by his firm and inflexible loyalty; for his intrepid zeal and indefatigable exertions in the Royal cause during the American Rebellion, brought upon him the vengeance of the Revolutionary government and placed him and his possessions in the proscribed list. Since then he has resided in this Province, and was an active and useful representative in its first House of Assembly; and during a long life he has ever been distinguished for the strictest honor and integrity, and an undeviating independence of mind. His funeral will take place from his late residence in King's street next Monday, at two o'clock, when the friends of the family are respectfully requested to attend.”

The remains were interred in the St. John cemetery, now located

⁶ The age given in the *St. John Telegraph* is 1755, which shows that he was ninety-two years old when he died.

in the center of the City of St. John, and his tomb bears this inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of the Honorable Christopher Billopp, a member of His Majesty's Council in this Province, whose uncompromising loyalty and distinguished exertions as a Lieutenant-Colonel in the Royal cause during the American rebellion, obliged him, at the termination of that contest to abandon, without compensation, his hereditary property on Staten Island, and retire with his family to this colony, wherein he since resided at Saint John, universally respected. He died on the 28th day of March, 1827, in the ninetieth year of his age."

The impression has prevailed that Colonel Billopp died a poor man; but such was not the case. His will shows that he had considerable land and personal property in St. John, N. B., and over \$75,000 worth of stock invested in London. This he divided among his children and grandchildren.

Colonel Billopp had a son, born on Staten Island in 1769, named John Willett, and another, born a few years later, named Thomas. They settled in the City of New York, and had a dry goods store on Broadway, in the vicinity of Trinity Church. John never married. Thomas married Miss Moore, of Newtown, Long Island. When the yellow fever scourged the city, John said to his brother: "Thomas, it is unnecessary that both should stay here. You have a family, and your life is of more consequence than mine. Go into the country until the sickness subsides." Thomas did as requested, while John remained in the city and fell a victim to the disease. Thomas soon failed in business, and then receiving the appointment of captain, from the celebrated Miranda, who, in 1806, fitted out an expedition in the United States for South America, with the view of establishing a republic at Caracas. Thomas was captured by the Spaniards and shot. The old colonel survived both his sons.



SIR EDMUND ANDROS.

Colonel Billopp had four daughters. Louisa married John Wallace, Esq., surveyor of the customs. Mary became the second wife of the Rev. Archdeacon Willis, rector of St. Paul's, Halifax, Nova Scotia, and died there in 1834, at the age of forty-three years. Jane became the wife of the Hon. William Black, of St. John, and died in 1836. Ann, the youngest daughter, was a maiden lady, and was the last of Colonel Billopp's immediate family to visit the ancestral homestead. She came here in 1824, and it is said of her that "she took some flowers of an old trumpet creeper vine that was growing on the house, and some nuts and wild cherries from trees that were growing

in the burial plot, and on her return carried them to her father in New Brunswick. It is said that on beholding them the heart of the old colonel melted with emotion, and he wept like a child."

The descendants of Colonel Christopher Billopp have passed on to the fourth generation, and are now scattered throughout the dominion of Canada, and in England. They are people of whom any community might well be proud. The four grandsons of Mary Billopp Willis are, the Rev. Robert S. Willis, of England; the Rev. Cuthbert Willis, of Halifax; John Willis, also of Halifax, and William Christopher Willis, of Glasgow, Scotland. The grandchildren of Jane Billopp Black are the Hon. John Black, member of the Provincial Legislature of New Brunswick, and Mrs. Harriet Paddock, wife of Morris V. Paddock, of St. John. This estimable lady visited the old Billopp House, in company with the writer, in the autumn of 1896. She inspected the various rooms with an interest indescribable, and beheld them with a sacredness worthy of the honorable memory of her ancestors. Here and there she gathered a mute trophy to carry to her far-off home, to keep as treasured mementoes of this most memorable day in her life.

That Colonel Christopher Billopp did not submit to the confiscation of his Staten Island property, without making an effort to secure payment for it from the English government, is positively proved by the following letter from Colonel John Graves Simcoe, the first governor of Upper Canada:

" WOLFORD LODGE, NEAR HOUSTON,

" August 5th, 1783.

" SIR:—I had the favour of your letter, two posts ago. A very severe illness prevented me from immediately answering it. I am perfectly well acquainted in common with other officers that Col. Billopp was uniform in his opposition to the Rebels against the country and decidedly attached to her interest; that in the beginning of the dispute of the House of Assembly of the province of New York he signalized himself by an open and manly opposition to the prevailing party; & that from the moment of our arrival at Staten Island, to the hour when I left America, he acted as Colonel of Militia,⁵ the part of a brave and loyal subject—some incidents I had the fortune to be particularly acquainted with, that make his character as most strongly deserving of publick favour. And to the notice of this country in these disastrous times of almost avowed selfishness, and party misrepresentations, the true character of military men are only to be found by the estimation in which they are held by the publick enemy. And this rule is most certainly applicable and would justly discriminate the different degrees of merit on which the Loyalist founds his claims, for the support & protection of Government. This test

⁵ The highest rank held by Christopher Billopp was that of Lieutenant-Colonel of militia, although historians generally credit him with

having been a full colonel. We have copied the inscription from his tombstone, in St. John, N. B., which we assume is correct.

Colo. Billopp can fully stand. When he had the misfortune of being taken prisoner, to punish him the Rebel Chieftain Washington broke thro' a fundamental rule. Although he was taken by a party of the Continental Army, as they term it, received his parole as prisoner to it, yet he was given up, or rather turned over, to the State of New Jersey, who also broke thro' another general rule, and under pretence of retaliation for a miscreant, (who was accused of murder), one of the foulest dregs of the people, confined Mr. Billopp, a man of great property, a colonel in our service, in Burlington Goal, where he was chained down to the floor for several weeks and fed on bread and water. This I was witness of, as I was at the same time, for reasons of state, confined in the same Goal.

"I have among my papers a copy of his mittimus, and of the letter that I wrote to Mr. Washington in his behalf, which if they can be of the least service I will send for and transmit to you. After Col. Billopp was releas'd I commanded the outpost of Richmond in Staten Island, & upon the Rebels crossing the Ice on the hard winter was cut off from the main posts of the Island. Col. Billopp immediately joined me, & endeavour'd with myself, but in vain, to prevail on the other inhabitants to throw themselves into the post. His behaviour was most conspicuous, and had it been imitated I had been enabled to have been of great service, which indeed was of little consequence, as the Enemy acted with their accustomed Cowardice & Ignorance. Many, if not all, who then refused to come into my redoubt must become fugitives from their country, and I doubt not will rate their claims as high as those of the Gallant Colonel.

"Thus, sir, I have detailed to you what I know of Colonel Billopp, and if you choose to methodize any certificate or testimonial, I will most readily sign it, as I am impress'd with the highest respect for his character, and he is among those on whose calamities my mind dwells with bleeding attention. I have the honor to be, sir, your most obedient & most humble servant,

"J. GRAVES SIMCOE.

"To Mr. DAVIS."

There is reason to believe that Colonel Billopp was compensated by the English government for the loss of his land on Staten Island, as it is well known that the Loyalists were rewarded for their fidelity. Colonel Billopp was a leader of men and measures and was at all times in favor with the Crown. That part of the estate which was confiscated by the Government has been cut up into sites for hundreds of homes, the village of Tottenville being located upon it, while that known as the Manor of Bentley, including the old Billopp House, remains intact.

Caleb Ward, who purchased the property from Colonel Billopp, just after he vacated it, during the war, was succeeded as owner by his son, A. P. K. Ward. He died in that house. It then became the property of Mr. Grimes. John B. Simonson purchased it in 1844.

and made extensive alterations in the building. Leonard Parkinson owned it later, and it was sold to Lloyd Aspinwall, who held it for many years, and it was for almost half a century occupied by Richard Christopher, who died in 1896. A number of gentlemen, known as the Bentley Manor Company, purchased it in 1887, with the evident intention of making extensive improvements; but financial depression destroyed their plans. At a foreclosure sale it was purchased by Mr. Charles H. Leland, of New York City, who is now the sole owner.

Several attempts have been made to secure control of the venerable building in order that it might be preserved as an historical relic, but as yet without success. The last effort consisted of the appointment of a commission of citizens of Staten Island, composed of the following gentlemen: Read Benedict, Henry P. Morrison and Ira K. Morris, of Castleton; George T. Jones, Paul V. Masters and Frank Foggin, of Northfield; David J. Tysen, N. J. Ostrander and Joseph H. Nelson, Jr., of Middletown; Hubbard R. Yetman, Abram Cole and Arthur W. Browne, of Westfield, and William Allaire Shortt, Henry Seguire and Daniel T. Cornell, of Southfield. The officers of the commission are, Ira K. Morris, President; George T. Jones, Vice-President; Hubbard R. Yetman, Treasurer; Joseph H. Nelson, Jr., Secretary, and William Allaire Shortt, Counsel. The object of the commission is to get control of the old mansion and have it repaired for preservation, and to make it the historical headquarters of the Island.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR.



FROM the time of the discovery of Staten Island one war followed another, and in them all the Indians practiced their cruelties either for their own benefit, or for that of such nations as could secure their friendship. This was generally purchased, and was, consequently, seldom if ever lasting. In all the Indian wars Staten Islanders bore their part of the conflict, and we doubt that a solitary battle-field can be recalled but that it was reddened by the blood of those who had made Staten Island their home. It matters not where the scene of carnage was located—whether in New England, or in far-off parts of the great State of New York, or the Western frontier, or the South—Staten Islanders proved themselves good soldiers and maintained the dignity and honor of their home.

It is not uncommon with historians and others to denounce and execrate the conduct of those early Indian warriors as wanton and savage. They were doubtless cruel—they were savage. We would not become their panegyrist. But let it be remembered that, if they cannot be excused, there are mitigating circumstances which should always be mentioned in connection with their most inhuman barbarities. The influences of Christianity never bore upon them. They inflicted no greater tortures upon the English than they often inflicted upon other prisoners of their own complexion. But in addition, they were fighting for their own country. They were patriots—and they saw



SEAL OF EAST JERSEY.

in the progress and prosperity of the English, the downfall of Indian power—the annihilation of Indian title. They were fathers, husbands, and full well did they know that soon their family relations would be broken up—and the inheritance of their children for ever fail. Who can blame them for wishing to perpetuate their hold on their native hunting-grounds, or leaving to their posterity an inheritance dear to them as ours is to us? We cannot justify their treachery—their indiscriminate and wholesale butcheries; but surely we may admire their bravery, their endurance, their patriotism!

During the three wars of King William, Queen Anne, and George

If, the sufferings of the northern colonies were severe and protracted, or were intermitted only at short intervals. The hostility of the Indians was kept alive, and often kindled into a fresh flame, through the agency of European settlers on their northern border. These took up the quarrel of France and England, and sought occasions to molest the subjects of the English sovereign in America. In one of the wars the French combined with the Indians in bringing fire and sword upon the inhabitants of New England and New York. Staten Island, for the time being, became a place of refuge for many who were driven from their homes.

After a few years of peace, during which the colonies had somewhat repaired their wasted strength and resources, a declaration of war was made between Great Britain and France, in the spring of 1755. There had been an actual state of warfare for two previous years, causing no small grief and annoyance to the colonies, who had fondly hoped longer to enjoy the blessings of tranquility, and prosecute their schemes of improvement. An invaluable blessing, however, ultimately flowed from the renewed conflict of arms—as, from this time, that federation took place among the separated provinces, which was consummated afterwards in their independence as a nation. The prosecution of a common object, such as was presented in the French and Indian war, naturally concentrated and united their energies, and evolved, at length, a better political organization.

The causes of the war grew out of the encroachments of the French upon the frontier of the English colonists in America. Such, at least, was the allegation on the part of England. France had establishments on the St. Lawrence, and at the mouth of the Mississippi, and commenced the gigantic plan of uniting these points by a chain of forts, extending across the continent, and designed to confine the English colonists to the Eastern slope of the Alleghanies. The French possessed considerable military strength in the northern colonies. They had strongly fortified Quebec and Montreal, and, at other points, the frontiers were defended by Louisburg, Cape Breton, and the forts of Lake Champlain, Niagara, Crown Point, Frontenac, and Ticonderoga. And they had, also, a fort of some strength at Du Quesne, now the spot on which Pittsburg is built.

The establishment of French forts on the Ohio, and the attack on Colonel George Washington, were declared, by the British Government, as the commencement of hostilities. The French, however, allege the intrusion of the Ohio Company upon their territory, as the immediate cause of their war. General Braddock, at the head of fifteen hundred troops, had been dispatched to America. On his arrival in Virginia, he requested a convention of colonial governors to meet him there, to confer on the plan of the ensuing campaign. They accordingly met, and three expeditions were resolved upon—one against Du Quesne, to be conducted by General Braddock; one

against forts Niagara and Frontenac, to be commanded by Governor Shirley, and one against Crown Point, to be led by General Johnson. The last-named expedition was a measure proposed by Massachusetts, and was to be executed by troops raised in New England and New York, and included those from Staten Island.

It is not necessary to repeat here the ill-successes of the several campaigns. They, however, roused the people, both in the parent country and in the provinces, to the consideration of more vigorous measures, under more able men. Accordingly, William Pitt, Earl of Chatham, the greatest statesman of modern ages, was brought forward at the present crisis, and infused his own ardent and decisive spirit into the national councils. He sympathized with his trans-Atlantic brethren, and assured them, in a circular which he addressed to the governors of the provinces, that an effectual force should be sent against the French the next year, to operate both by sea and land. In connection with such a force they were expected to raise their full quota of troops, according to the number of the inhabitants. Animated by the favorable change in the parent country, the government of Massachusetts voted seven thousand men, Connecticut five thousand, and New Hampshire three thousand, and the troops were ready for service in the early part of the year (1758). An armament of twelve thousand troops having been sent out from England, commanded by General Amherst, and the British forces already in America, added to the number of soldiers raised by the colonies, constituted an army far greater than had been before seen on this side of the ocean.

We turn away here to give a slight outline of some important events in European history as necessary for an introduction to the memorial of an interesting incident, of which Staten Island was the scene in the autumn of 1761. Between the years 1756 and 1763 the seven years' war raged in Germany. In this remarkable contest Frederick the Great had to defend his recently acquired Silesia and the new kingly dignity of his house against the combined powers of France, Austria and Russia. It was on his part a struggle for existence, in which he would, perhaps, have succumbed but for the aid of England. In that country Frederick, whose religious ideas were of the most unorthodox liberality, came somehow to be regarded as "the Protestant hero," and after ignominiously defeating the French he naturally became the popular idol.

The same seven years' war covers, figuratively, in American history a space of nine years—that of our own French and Indian war. Pitt was now at the head of affairs, and the large army was now hard at work. In July, (1758), Louisburg, which at the former peace had been restored to the French, was recaptured. Fort Frontenac was captured soon after, and the French were compelled to abandon Fort Du Quesne. General Abercromby attacked Fort Ticonderoga, but was obliged to retire.

Greatly encouraged by these successes, the colony of New York renewed her exertions with the utmost energy. In 1759, during the short period of five months, the colony of New York raised \$625,000 to aid in carrying on the war, and levied a force of 2,680 men. In that levy the quota for Richmond County was 55 men. Ticonderoga was captured by General Amherst, early in the season, and Crown Point surrendered a few days later. In July, General Prideaux invested Fort Niagara, and though he was killed in the attack, Sir William Johnson, his successor, in the command, effected its reduction. On the 13th of September, General Wolfe laid down his own life in the moment of victory, when the English banners floated over the towers of Quebec. In 1760, the French made an unsuccessful attempt to recapture Quebec, and on the 8th of September, all the French possessions in Canada, except the two small islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, at the mouth of the St. Lawrence, were surrendered to the English.

The provincial forces which had been engaged in the reduction of Canada, now turned their faces homeward, while a large body of British troops were encamped on the plains of New Dorp, on Staten Island, where they remained for several months. General Robert Monckton had command of this army. During the encampment here an important ceremony, the investment of Sir Jeffery Amherst with the "Order of the Bath" took place. It is certain that Staten Island was never honored with being the scene of a more dignified or important royal ceremony.

On the 28th of August, 1761, General Amherst, having rode on horseback down the west side of the Hudson from Albany, arrived in camp at Staten Island. The Thirty-fifth Regiment of British regulars, called Otway's regiment, from its commander, had arrived on Staten Island from Albany about two weeks previous. The ceremony of investing General Amherst with Knighthood took place October 25th, 1761, in the presence of all the dignitaries of the province and a large concourse of spectators, assembled at the New Dorp camp.

The military order of the Knights of the Bath originated, it is believed, about the time of Henry IV., of England. At the coronation of that King, in 1339, a number of esquires were made Knights of the Bath, because they had watched and bathed meanwhile during the preceding night. From that time it was usual for the Kings of Great Britain to create Knights of this Order on great and joyous occasions, such as their own coronation or the birth or marriage of princes, or on the eve or following the successful issue of some great foreign expedition.

The investment of General Amherst was probably in honor of the advantageous conclusion of the struggle with the French on the Canadian frontier. The badge of the Order was of pure gold, a sceptre of three united imperial crowns, from which grew the rose, the thistle

and the shamrock, and around which was inscribed the ancient motto, "*Tria juncta in uno*." It was hung by a red ribbon from the collar obliquely over the right shoulder. Other accessories of the insignia were a massive gold collar, rich in engraved designs, and a silver star resembling the badge and with a glory of rays proceeding from its centre, to adorn the left shoulder. The Order was divided into three ranks, designated in importance as first, Knights grand crosses; second, Knights commanders, and third, Knights companions. The



GOV. THOMAS DONGAN.

proper place for their installation to be celebrated was in the nave of Henry the Seventh's chapel, Westminster Abbey, which in this instance was impracticable. The warrant for the ceremony on Staten Island was found in the following letter from the prime minister of England:

"WHITERHALL, July 17th, 1761.

"SIR:—His Majesty having been graciously pleased, as a Mark of His Royal Approbation, of the many and eminent Services of Major General Amherst, to nominate him to be one of the Knights Companions of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath; and it being necessary that he should be invested

with the Ensigns of the said Order, which are transmitted to him, by this Opportunity; I am to signify to you the King's Pleasure, that you should perform that Ceremony; and it being his Majesty's Intention, that the same be done in the Most Honorable and Distinguished Manner that Circumstances will allow of, you will concert, and adjust with General Amherst such Time and Manner for Investing him with the Ensigns of the Order of the Bath as shall appear to you most proper for shewing all due Respect to the King's Order, and as may, at the same Time mark in the most publick Manner, His Majesty's just sense of the Constant Zeal, and Signal abilities, which General Amherst has exerted in the Service of His King and Country.

"I am, &c.,

W. PITT.

"Honourable Robert Monckton."

In the presence of the large concourse of people assembled at New Dorp, General Monckton read the foregoing letter, and then proceeded to place the ribbon over General Amherst's shoulder, at the same time apologizing because circumstances would not admit of more formal investiture. General Amherst replied as follows:

"Sir: I am truly sensible of this distinguishing mark of His Majesty's royal approbation of my conduct, and shall ever esteem it as such. And I must beg leave to express to you the peculiar satisfaction I have, and the pleasure it gives me to receive this mark of favor from your hands."

There were great demonstrations of applause following the ceremony, and a few days later, when General Amherst went from Staten Island to the city, his arrival there was greeted by the firing of seventeen guns from Fort George. He was now spoken of as "His Excellency Sir Jeffery Amherst, K. B., from the army on Staten Island." Following this ceremony General Monckton was installed Governor of New York, and the city was illuminated.

But Governor Monckton remained but a short time at the seat of state. He appointed a deputy, and when the army on Staten Island had rested, went with it on an expedition to the West Indies. The army encamped at New Dorp consisted of eleven regiments which had returned from the Canadian frontier, under Generals Monckton, Amherst and Otway. Its sojourn continued from August to November. They formed a market at New Dorp, and invited the farmers to bring in stock and produce to sell to the army. When all was in readiness the army embarked on board of a fleet of one hundred sail of vessels, which on the 15th of November put out to sea with a fair wind, leaving behind the troops that had enlisted from the Island for the war. There were two companies of these, one commanded by Captain Thomas Arrowsmith and the other by Captain Anthony Waters.

One of the most important services in the war was the capture of the French Fort Frontenac, on the 27th of August, 1758. With three thousand men, mostly provincials, Colonel Bradstreet traversed the dismal wilderness between Albany and Lake Ontario, carrying with him eight pieces of cannon, and three mortars. Among these troops was a regiment commanded by Colonel Corse, of Queens County, and in that regiment was Captain Thomas Arrowsmith's company of Staten Islanders. The regiment contributed materially to the expedition. Colonel Corse volunteered to erect a battery during the night of the 26th, and effected his purpose under a continuous fire from the fort. On the morning of the 27th, this battery opened on the enemy, who at once deserted the fort and fled. The material captured with the fort consisted of forty-six pieces of cannon, sixteen mortars, and a very large quantity of military stores, provisions and merchandise.

Lotteries were the popular mode of raising funds, when emergencies arose in those days, and the following advertisement appeared in connection with the efforts to raise war funds in April, 1756:

“ SCHEME

“ Of a Lottery for raising One Hundred and Fifty Pounds.

“ Whereas the Free holders and Inhabitants of the County of Richmond, are enabled by an Act of the Governor, Council and General Assembly, of the Colony of New York, to raise by the Way of Lottery a Sum not exceeding the sum of One Hundred and Fifty Pounds, to purchase Arms and Accoutrements, for the Use of such Persons, in the said County, as are unable to provide themselves therewith, in Cases

of Necessity. And whereas the said County of Richmond is a Frontier County, and liable, in Case of an Attack, to be the first invaded, it is hoped all Lovers of their Country will generously encourage the said Lottery.

No. of Prizes.		Pieces of Eight.		Whole Value.
1	of	375	is	375
2		187	and a half are	375
4		125		500
10		25		250
25		12		300
40		10		400
60		5		300

142 Prizes.

858 Blanks.

1,000 Tickets at 2 and a Half Pieces of 8 is 2,500

“As soon as the Lottery is finished Drawing, the Prizes will be published in the *New York Gazette*, and the Money paid to the Possessors of the fortunate Tickets, fourteen Days after the Drawing of the said Lottery, Fifteen per Cent, being first deducted out of the Whole; which several Deductions of Fifteen per Cent, are to be applied for the Purposes aforesaid.

“Proper Notice will be given by the Persons appointed to manage the said Lottery, of the precise Time of Drawing the same; which persons are Mr. Samuel Brooms and Colonel Benjamin Seamans, who are to give Bond, and be under Oath, for the faithful Performance of the Trust reposed in them.

“Tickets are to be sold by the said Managers at their respective Dwellings, in the said County, and by the Promoters hereof.”

As a matter of record we would mention here that on the 18th of September, 1760, the whole French possessions in Canada were surrendered to the British power. But the war still continued in Europe, and a few provincial troops were raised in 1761 and 1762; but New England remained exempted from all border hostilities. On the 10th of February, 1763, a general peace was signed at Paris, and soon after ratified by Great Britain and France. This was an era of joy to the colonies. They had experienced no such relief since the commencement of King William's war, in 1689. A few short intervals of peace had indeed been enjoyed; but during nearly eighty years, they were generally doomed in every exposed point to pillage, captivity and slaughter. Relieved from their miseries and dangers, they reoccupied their plantations and new ones were commenced, and population began to spread with rapidity.

It may be added, and it is due to the colonists to add, that they were not unmindful of their obligations to that Being by whose fostering

care they had been preserved during so many and so severe trials and privations. They had put their trust in Him, and He had saved them from the hands of their foes. Many had indeed fallen—many had suffered; but now, relieved from foreign invasion and savage butchery, they publicly united in giving God thanks on a day set apart for the purpose, and went on their way rejoicing.

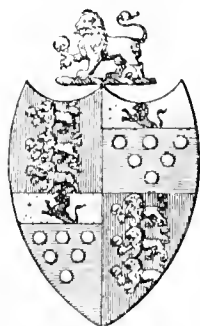
CHAPTER XIX.

APPROACHING THE REVOLUTION.



IN 1764, the news of the passage of the Stamp Act, (which rendered all deeds, bonds, notes, etc., invalid, unless written on stamped paper, which should pay a duty to the Crown), excited universal indignation among the people. An organization was soon formed in this, as well as in some other of the adjacent States, called "The Sons of Liberty," which offered the most daring resistance to this aggression upon the rights of the people.

Governor Colden attempted to enforce the act; but the attempt called down the hostility of the people upon him, and but for his age, he would undoubtedly have suffered in person. As it was, his effigy was carried about the city, and hung upon a gallows erected for the purpose, and his carriage and other property destroyed. When the stamps arrived, he was obliged to surrender them to the city corporation, and await the action of the Governor, Sir Henry Moore, who arrived in July, 1765, and by the advice of his council, was deterred from attempting further to enforce the act.



THE DONGAN ARMS.

On the first Tuesday in October, 1765, a Congress composed of delegates from Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland and South Carolina, met at New York, to take into consideration the invasion of the rights of the colonies, by the Stamp Act. New Hampshire, Virginia, North Carolina and Georgia did not send delegates; but two of them expressed their sympathy with the Congress, and the others had no meeting of their Legislatures in time to appoint delegates. This Congress made a declaration of the rights and privileges of the colonies, and petitioned for redress.

The Stamp Act was repealed on the 18th of March, 1766; but the offensive declaration accompanied the repeal that "Parliament possessed the power to bind the colonies in all, whatsoever." In 1767, Charles Townsend, chancellor of the English exchequer, proposed a new bill, levying duties on glass, paper, paints and tea. This passed, and the inhabitants entered, as they had previously done, into non-importation agreements, by which they pledged themselves to use

none of these articles, nor, so far as it could be avoided, other articles of British manufacture. In 1769, five-sixths of these duties, and in 1770, all of them, were repealed, except the duty on tea. The people of New York, as well as of the other colonies, rigidly abstaining from the use of this beverage, no excitement was produced; and from 1770 to 1774 a period of calmness ensued, although the English government and the colonists regarded each other with jealousy.

Attempts were made, in 1767, to settle the boundary between Massachusetts and New York. Massachusetts, under her charter, claimed to the Pacific ocean, and had repeatedly attempted to make settlements within the bounds of New York. The attempt to establish these settlements had produced collision, and in several instances bloodshed. Commissioners from the two colonies met at New Haven, in October, 1767, and determined that the Massachusetts line should run twenty miles east of Hudson river, but could not agree in regard to the manner of running that line.

Sir Henry Moore dying in 1769, Governor Dunmore assumed the government in 1770; but his administration continued only a few months. He was the first Governor supported by the Crown, a measure against which New York protested, as calculated to make the executive independent of the popular branch of the government. During his continuance in office a contest took place in the Legislature, in regard to quartering the King's troops, to which the Assembly were wholly averse; but to which, under the threats of the British, they were obliged to submit.

Liberty poles had, at this period, been frequently erected in New York City, and as often cut down and destroyed by the British soldiery, who entertained the bitterest hostility to the citizens. After repeated efforts, the inhabitants erected one upon private grounds, so firmly encased in iron, that the soldiers could not destroy it.

In 1772, the New Hampshire grants became a renewed source of serious disquietude to the colony. Governor Tryon, who had just succeeded Governor Dunmore, offered a reward of fifty pounds for the apprehension of Ethan Allen, Seth Warner, and six others of the most obnoxious of the settlers; and the New York Assembly passed an act, declaring the opposition of these citizens to the government of New York, felony. Allen and his coadjutors, in return, hurled their defiance at the Governor, and those who were sent to arrest them.

In the spring of 1775, matters appeared to be approaching a crisis, in regard to this territory. A collision took place between the officers of New York and the citizens of Westminster County, Vermont, in which one man was killed and several wounded. But for the occurrence of the battle of Lexington at this juncture, probably a serious civil war would have ensued.

The British government resolved, in 1773, to accomplish by cunning what it had failed to attain by force. It remitted to the East India

Company the customary duties on tea, and permitted them to ship to America, with only a duty of three pence per pound, to be paid, on landing it, at any American port. It was supposed that as this would make the price of tea lower than in England, the colonists would not object to it; but the colonists saw, in this measure, the same principle against which they had been contending.

The course adopted by the different colonies is well known. In New York, a meeting of "The Sons of Liberty" was called, on the receipt of the intelligence, and resolutions passed that the tea should not be landed. Accordingly, when, in April, 1774, the tea ship, the *Nancy*, commanded by Captain Lockyer, arrived off Sandy Hook, the pilots, who had already received their instructions, refused to bring her any nearer the city. The captain, however, came up, and was waited upon by a committee, who informed him that he must return immediately to England, with his cargo; and for the purpose of preventing his sailors from deserting, a strong guard was stationed near the ship at Sandy Hook. Finding it useless to resist, he submitted to their commands.

Meanwhile the news was received that Captain Chambers, of the ship *London*, a man loud in his professions of patriotism, had brought out eighteen chests of tea, as a private venture. Being questioned by the committee, he denied it; but upon their assuring him that their evidence was so strong that they should search the ship, he confessed it, but attempted to apologize. His apologies did not avail. His tea was emptied into the harbor of New York forthwith, and he permitted to withdraw. Embarking on board of Lockyer's ship, he sailed for England, to hide his shame and disgrace.

About this period a committee of observation was organized in New York, consisting of fifty persons, who were invested with discretionary powers, with regard to the administration of government. On the 5th of September, 1774, a Congress from the different colonies met at Philadelphia. It adopted several resolutions, and prepared addresses to the King and both houses of Parliament, and to the people of Great Britain and Canada. To these addresses and resolutions, the Assembly of New York refused to give its assent. On the contrary, it addressed an exceedingly loyal and humble letter to the King, in which it represented its grievances, but without seeming much afflicted by them. The Assembly was undoubtedly influenced to this course by Governor Tryon, a man of very popular manners and artful, insinuating address, who had the skill to mould the Assembly to his will.

This step of New York exerted a very important influence upon the future destiny of the colonies, for the British ministry were upon the point of yielding to their just demands, when the news of the defection of New York reached them. Stimulated by this, they continued that course of aggression, which ultimately led to the establishment of our liberties.

Governor Tryon sailed for England in April, 1774, and returned in June of the following year. In April, 1775, a provincial convention was convened at New York, and elected delegates to the 11d Congress, which assembled at Philadelphia in May following. The news of the battle of Lexington, (Mass.) on the 19th of April, the same year, caused great excitement in the city of New York. At the desire of the committee of observation, a committee of superintendence was elected by the citizens, consisting of one hundred of the most respectable citizens, and the arms in the city arsenal, and others about to be shipped to Boston, were seized. Ticonderoga, Crown Point, and Skenesborough, (afterwards changed to Whitehall), were captured in May by Colonels Ethan Allen and Benedict Arnold, and the entire command of Lake Champlain obtained.

Governor Tryon returned in June from England, and was welcomed by the citizens; but his strenuous exertions to promote the royal cause soon rendered him unpopular, and in October, considering his personal safety endangered, he took refuge on board the *Asia*, a ship of war lying in the harbor off Staten Island.

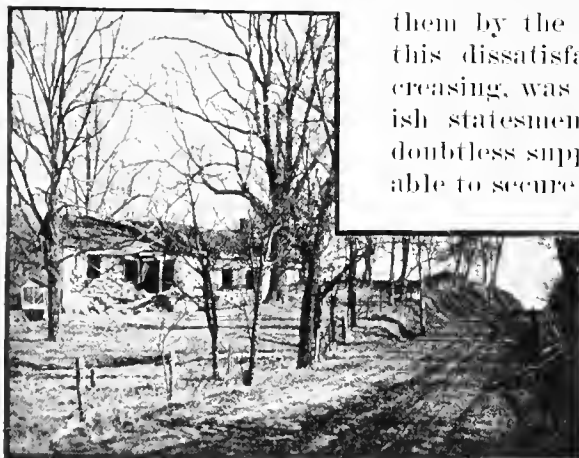
On the 22d of May, 1775, a provincial Congress was convened at New York, and efficient measures were taken for the military organization and defence of the country. Two regiments were authorized to be raised, bounties were offered for the manufacture of gunpowder and muskets in the province, fortifications were projected at Kingsbridge and the Highlands, and Philip Schuyler and Richard Montgomery were recommended to the Continental Congress for appointment, the first as a major-general and the second as a brigadier-general. Upon the adjournment of this Congress in September, for a month, it delegated its powers to a committee of safety, composed of three members from the city and one from each of the counties.

Generals Schuyler and Montgomery, at the direction of Congress, undertook an expedition against Quebec, which, though at first, promising a favorable result, finally terminated unfortunately, in the death of Montgomery and the repulse of the army. Many of the inhabitants of Tryon County espoused the side of the mother country, under the direction of Sir John Johnson, and made preparations to fight against the colony. General Schuyler was ordered by Congress to disarm them, and calling out the Albany militia, who rallied around his standard to the number of three thousand, he proceeded into that county and dispersed about six hundred loyalists. The loyalists on Long Island also entrenched themselves, but were disarmed, and their leaders secured, by the Jersey militia. These events occurred in the winter of 1775.

July 9th, 1776, the provincial Congress met at White Plains and took the title of "The Representatives of the State of New York." On the first day of their meeting, they received the Declaration of Independence, and immediately passed a resolution approving it. Soon

after, they enacted a law, that all persons residing in the State, and enjoying the protection of its laws, who should be found guilty of aiding its enemies, should suffer death.

The revolution of America was an extraordinary event, and at the time of its occurrence was unlooked for, both by the government and nation of Great Britain. That the colonies had long been dissatisfied



BRITTON HOMESTEAD NEAR STONY BROOK, ERECTED ABOUT 1660, DEMOLISHED 1896.

with the measures adopted towards them by the parent country, and that this dissatisfaction was gradually increasing, was well known; but the British statesmen at home designed, and doubtless supposed, that they should be able to secure the submission of the colonies to whatever line of policy they might please to adopt.

But they little understood the American character. Had they reflected upon the circumstances in which the colonies originated, and their steady progress in wealth

and population, they might well have anticipated the final result. Certain it was, that oppressive and coercive measures would only tend to weaken their affection for the parent country. Kindness and conciliation might have preserved the bond of union—indeed, it was possible to have confirmed the colonies in their regard for the land of their birth; but the line of policy which could alone have effected that object, was overlooked or disregarded by British statesmen; and through their infatuated counsels, they hastened the very event which they so much deplored. Let us recall some of the remote and proximate causes which brought about this rebellion.

First.—Objects proposed by the colonies in their settlement of America: At the era of the Revolution, thirteen colonies had been planted. These were Virginia, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York, New Jersey, Delaware, Pennsylvania, Maryland, North and South Carolina and Georgia. Virginia, the first, was settled in 1607, and Georgia, the last, in 1732. Different objects led to the establishment of the various colonies. The leading object of some was pecuniary profit. They were induced, either by associated or individual proprietors, who themselves remained in England, to come to America, with the hope of profitable returns for the advance of their capital. But the more northern colonies came on their own concern, at their own expense, and with reference to the

enjoyment of freedom and peace in religion, which they could not find at home.

Now, was it to be expected that those who had left home, and all its endearments, for the sake of enjoying a larger liberty, would consent to have that liberty abridged, especially after having tasted the blessing for years? If the Pilgrim Fathers had such motives themselves, was it to be supposed that their children would cherish less manly and patriotic sentiments? The spirit of liberty does not easily die, where there is alimnt to keep it alive. The blood of freemen, or of those who aspire to freedom, instead of becoming weaker, as it flows down in successive generations, usually becomes purer and more excitable. This was verified in the history of the colonies, anterior to the Revolution. They were men in whom the principles of liberty had taken a strong hold. Their distance from the mother-country—her neglect of them—the exercise of civil and religious freedom for a number of years—all served to excite and strengthen a desire for independence. Such an event was the natural result of the principles with which the colonies began their career. It was the natural result of the physical courage and strength acquired in felling forests, resisting savages, and in carrying out those plans and enterprises in which a young, ardent, and ambitious people are likely to engage.

Second.—Their forms of government were conducive to independence. In the settlement of the colonies three forms of government were established. These were usually denominated Charter, Proprietary, and Royal governments. The difference arose from the different circumstances under which the colonies were settled, as well as the different objects of the first emigrants. The Charter governments were confined to New England. The Proprietary governments were those of Maryland, Pennsylvania, the Carolinas, and New Jersey. The others were Royal governments, or those which were immediately under the British Crown.

As early as 1619, only twelve years from its settlement, a provincial legislature, in which the colonists were represented, was introduced into Virginia. In Plymouth and in Massachusetts the colonists organized their body, politic and social, upon principles of perfect equality. And, as the Puritans spread themselves over New England, they gave to the distinct communities which they established, constitutions still more democratic. In January, 1639, three years from the commencement of the Connecticut colony, the planters on Connecticut river convened at Hartford, and formed a system of government which continued, with scarcely any alterations, to the year 1818. Of this system, Dr. Trumbull observes:

“With such wisdom did our venerable ancestors provide for the freedom and liberties of themselves and their posterity. Thus happily did they guard against any encroachment on the rights of the subject.

This, probably, is one of the most free and happy constitutions of civil government ever formed. The formation of it, at so early a period, when the light of liberty was wholly darkened in most parts of the world, and the rights of man were so little understood in others, does great honor to their ability, integrity, and love of freedom."

In Maryland and Pennsylvania, the first assemblies established a popular representation, and in all their political regulations proceeded upon broad views of civil freedom. The same remark may be extended to the Carolinas and New York. The very first principles, then, of the colonists in relation to government were anti-monarchical. In their incipient colonial state they had the feelings of freemen; and all their institutions, so far as they were allowed to carry them, spoke of liberty and equality. This spirit was never lost to the colonies. In the variety of fortune which they subsequently encountered—in every change of monarch abroad—in every shift of rulers at home—through royal smiles and royal frowns—in times of war and times of peace—their love of liberty continued unabated, and even increased. Thus early began those sentiments of freedom and independence which, uniting in their course with other streams, ended at length in a deep, broad, irresistible current against British oppression.

Third.—Influence of the expenses incurred by the colonies in their settlements, and in their several wars and those of the mother-country. All the thirteen colonies, with the exception of Georgia, were established, and had attained to considerable strength, without the slightest aid from the treasury of the mother-country. Neither the Crown nor the Parliament paid a dollar towards purchasing the soil of the Indians—the original masters of that soil. These purchases were made by the colonists themselves. The settlement of the province of Massachusetts Bay alone cost two hundred thousand pounds—an enormous sum at an era at which it was effected. Lord Baltimore expended forty thousand pounds in his establishment of the colony of Maryland. On that of Virginia, immense wealth was lavished by the first settlers. The first planters of Connecticut consumed great estates in purchasing lands of the Indians and in making settlements.

In like manner, when assailed by fierce and warlike tribes, the mother-country furnished no aid whatever—neither troops nor money. She erected no fortifications; entered into no negotiations, and manifested no sympathy, or even interest, in the fate of her offspring. Some of the most considerable Indian wars in which the colonies were involved, were the immediate result of the rashness and cupidity of the royal governors. The testimony of Lord Brougham on this subject is worthy of special notice. In his work on "Colonial Policy," he observes:

"The old colonies of North America, besides defraying the whole expenses of their internal administration, were enabled from their

situation to render very active assistance to the mother-country upon several occasions, not peculiarly interesting to themselves. They uniformly asserted that they would never refuse contributions, even for purposes strictly imperial, provided these were constitutionally demanded. Nor did they stop at mere professions of zeal.

"The whole expense of civil government in the British North American colonies, previous to the Revolution, did not amount to eighty thousand pounds sterling, which was paid by the produce of their taxes. The military establishments, the garrisons and the forts in the old colonies, cost the mother-country nothing."

Fourth.—Measures of oppression. Within little more than a generation from the commencement of the plantations, the royal government began those formal inquiries into their population and manufactures, which were so often renewed until the period of the Revolution. The object or occasion of those inquiries was two-fold—a jealousy, lest the colonies should grow too fast; and, then, a desire to monopolize, for the benefit of Great Britain, all their trade and the proceeds of their manufacturing industry.

The various acts of monopoly which passed Parliament during a series of years, it is not necessary to particularize. They uniformly bore heavily on the commercial and manufacturing enterprises of the colonies, and were designed "to keep them in a firmer dependence upon England"; "to render them more beneficial and advantageous"; "to employ and increase the English shipping," and "to make a vent for English manufactures."

After the peace of 1763, a still more grinding policy was proposed—that of taxing the colonies, with the avowed purpose of drawing a revenue into the royal exchequer, and on the plausible, yet unwarrantable ground that Great Britain had contracted a debt in their defence. Hitherto, when money was wanted in the colonies, the Parliament of England had been content to ask for it by a formal requisition upon the colonial legislatures, and they had supplied it with a willing hand. But now, it was thought that a shorter method of obtaining it might be resorted to with better effect. Measures were adopted, denominated "writs of assistance," which were orders issued by the superior court of the province, requiring the sheriffs and other civil officers to assist the person to whom it was granted, in breaking open and searching every place, even private dwellings, if suspected of containing prohibited goods.

The first application for a writ of this kind was made by the deputy collector at Salem in November, 1760. Doubts being expressed by the court as to the legality of the writ, or the power of the court to grant it, the application was deferred to the next term, when the question was to be argued. At the appointed time, Mr. Grindley, a distinguished lawyer, appeared for the Crown, Mr. Thatcher and Mr. Otis for the merchants. The trial took place in the council chamber of the

old Town-house in Boston. The judges were five in number, including Lieutenant-Colonel Hutchinson, who presided as chief justice; and the room was filled with all the officers of government and the principal citizens, to hear the arguments in a cause that inspired the deepest solicitude.

The case was opened by Mr. Grindley, who argued it with much learning, ingenuity and dignity, making all his reason depend upon this consideration, "That the Parliament of Great Britain was the sovereign legislator of the British empire." He was followed by Mr. Thatcher on the opposite side, whose reasoning was ingenious and able, and delivered in a tone of great mildness and moderation. President Adams, writing, of the event, said: "Otis was a flame of fire; with a promptitude of classical allusion, a depth of research, a rapid summary of historical events and dates, a profusion of legal authorities,



WALTER DONGAN, OF CASTLETON CORNERS.

a prophetic glance into futurity, and a rapid torrent of impetuous eloquence, he hurried away all before him." "I will to my dying day," said Otis, "oppose, with all my power and faculties God has given me, all such instruments of slavery on the one hand and villany on the other. It appears to me the worst instrument of arbitrary power, the most destructive of English liberty, and the fundamental principles of law, that was ever found in an English law-book."

The occasion was intensely exciting—the liberties of the people were in danger. Their dwellings, though sanctuaries where every man should feel himself safe, were in jeopardy. And the vast throng gathered on the occasion so thought, especially as their excited feelings became more intense under the thrilling appeals of the eloquent Otis. "Every man of an immensely crowded audience," wrote President Adams, "appeared to me to go away, as I did, ready to take up arms against writs of assistance. Then and there was the first scene of the first act of opposition to the arbitrary claims of Great Britain."

The court postponed a decision of the question until the following term; and in the meantime wrote to Great Britain for information on the subject. Writs were afterward granted, but were extremely unpopular. In Connecticut writs of assistance, it is said, were never granted. The passage of the celebrated Stamp Act soon followed this measure. When the bill was ushered into the House of Commons, petitions from Virginia, Connecticut and South Carolina, in every way

respectful, but in tone firm and decided, were offered in opposition to it. But the House refused even to receive them, on the ground that the right of Parliament to tax the colonies was denied; and, too, that it was contrary to a rule of the house "to receive any petition against a money-bill."

The debate therefore proceeded. The chief advocates of the bill were the prime minister and Charles Townshend. In the opposition were Mr. Pitt—who, however, was absent by reason of sickness—General Conway, Alderman Beckford, Colonel Barre, Mr. Jackson, Sir William Meredith and others. Conway and Beckford opposed the bill on the ground of its injustice; Colonel Barre and others on the ground of its inexpediency. The purpose of the minister, however, was fixed; and, rallying his surprised and half-hesitating followers, he took the question—a large majority expressed in favor of the bill—two hundred and fifty were for it and fifty against it. On its coming into the House of Lords, it received the entire concurrence of that body, and on the 22d of March obtained the royal assent.

This act, so celebrated in American history, both as an act of flagrant injustice, on the part of the British Parliament, and one of the proximate causes of the Revolution, consisted of fifty-five specific duties, laid on as many different species of instruments, in which paper was used, such as notes, bonds, mortgages, deeds, university degrees, licenses, advertisements in newspapers, and even almanacs, varying from one-half penny up to six pounds.

As an illustration of the heavy burdens designed to be put upon the colonies by this act, it may be stated that previous to the passage of the act, a ream of common printed bail-bonds cost fifteen pounds—stamped, one hundred. A ream of stamped policies of insurance amounted to one hundred and ninety pounds—of common ones, without stamps, twenty. A piece of paper, or parchment, used as a diploma, or certificate of a degree taken in any university, academy or college, was taxed two pounds. For a piece of paper for a license for retailing spirituous liquors, twenty shillings were demanded. For one for a license for selling wine only, four pounds; for wine and spirituous liquors, three pounds. For letters of probate, administration, or guardianship, ten shillings. For a common deed, conveying not exceeding one hundred acres of land, one shilling and sixpence. For a newspaper, containing half a sheet or less, one half-penny; one sheet, one penny. Pamphlets, one shilling per sheet. Advertisements, two shillings each. Almanacs, fourpence.

This act was ordered to take effect on the 1st of November. Meanwhile, the people in various parts of the country were anxious to express their detestation of the measure, which the lapse of a few months was to bring into operation. One day in the month of August, the effigy of Andrew Oliver, the proposed distributor of stamps in Massachusetts, was found hanging on a tree, afterwards well known

by the name of Liberty-tree, in the main street of Boston. At night it was taken down and carried to a bier, amidst the acclamations of an immense collection of people, through the court house, down King street, to a small brick building, supposed to have been erected for the reception of the detested stamps. This building being soon levelled with the ground, the rioters next attacked Mr. Oliver's house, and having broken the windows, entered it, and destroyed part of the furniture.

On the arrival of the 1st of November, on which the stamp act was to go into effect, the day was ushered in at Boston by the tolling of the bells. Many shops and stores were shut, and effigies of the authors and friends of the act were carried about the streets, and afterwards torn in pieces by the populace. This feeling spread throughout the country, and similar demonstrations of dissatisfaction were made in numerous other places. The opposition to the Stamp Act was so universal and so formidable, as to prevent all hope of its successful operation. Had this measure been persisted in, the Revolution in America would doubtless have dated at an earlier day.

To the new ministry it early became apparent that, in respect to the colonies, a crisis was now at hand; either existing measures must be relaxed, or a resort must be had to arms. The former being deemed the wiser plan, a repeal of the Stamp Act was moved in Parliament, and, on the 18th of March, passed the House by a majority of two hundred and seventy-five to one hundred and sixty-seven. In the House of Lords the majority was one hundred and five to seventy-one.

In America, the intelligence of the repeal was received with acclamations of the most sincere and heart-felt gratitude by all classes of people. Public thanksgivings were offered up in all the churches. The resolutions which had been passed on the subject of importations, were rescinded, and their trade with the mother-country was immediately renewed with increased vigor. The home-spun dresses were given to the poor, and once more the colonists appeared clad in the produce of British looms.

All this, however, was soon changed and the greatest excitement prevailed in America. Several events occurred which served to increase the excitement of the colonies. Among these may be mentioned the arrival, at Boston, of a man-of-war and transports, from Halifax, with nine hundred troops on board. Such a proceeding, on the part of the British ministry, was eminently calculated to excite the jealousy and indignation of the colonists. They felt disgusted and injured; and the more so, from the haughty and imperious bearing of the officers and troops. In a few weeks this force was augmented by the arrival of several more transports from Cork, with the Sixty-fourth and Sixty-fifth regiments, under Colonels Mackay and Pomeroey.

Another measure, adopted about this time by the British ministry,

and one which perhaps struck more vitally at the liberty of the colonists than any which preceded, was an order to the provincial governors to procure information "touching all acts of treason," etc., and to transmit the same, with the names of the suspected persons, to England, in order that they might be ordered thither for trial. The design of it was to terrify the patriotic party into submission; but well might it have been foreseen that such an offensive measure would only serve to rouse opposition, and confirm the whole civilized world in the righteousness of the common cause.

Parliament again convened, January 9th, 1770, soon after which, (28th), the Duke of Grafton resigned his office of first lord of the treasury. Lord Chatham, having recovered from his illness, had now returned to Parliament, and, with his wonted vigor, attacked the system and measures of the administration. Lord North, chancellor of the exchequer, succeeded the Duke of Grafton; "and from this time commences an administration which forms a momentous era in the history of Great Britain. During his administration, which lasted to the close of the Revolution, Great Britain lost more territory and accumulated more debt than at any former period of her history."

The first measure of Lord North's administration was in part conciliatory—being a motion to repeal the port duties of 1767, with the exception of the duty on tea. This his lordship, in spite of the friends of the colonies, determined to retain. To this partial repeal, Governor Pownall strongly objected. It would produce nothing but civil discord and interminable contention. Repeal all or none! Why retain this single duty, as a pepper-corn rent, to show the tenor by which the colonists hold their rights, and, by so doing, jeopardize his majesty's entire interest in the American colonies? "I have lived in America," he said; "I know the character of the people. Depend upon it, with their views, they will never solicit the favor of this house; never more will they wish to bring before Parliament the grievances under which they conceive themselves to labor."

CHAPTER XX.

PREPARING FOR THE STRUGGLE.



WHILE high and angry debate was in progress on the other side of the water, on this side events were transpiring which were giving increasing irritation to already excited feelings, and adding to the force of the gathering storm. Collisions and quarrels, between the soldiers and the citizens, were not unfrequent, and at length, on the evening of the 5th of March, 1770, resulted in an effusion of blood, called, by way of eminence, "The Boston Massacre."

Three men were killed and two mortally wounded, who died soon after. Mutual exasperations preceded. Neither citizens nor soldiers



DONGAN MANSION, CASTLETON CORNERS.

were exempt from the charge of insult and provocation. But a sentinel, who had been brought to the ground by a blow, on rising, fired, as did, at the same time, a sergeant and six men who were with him. Great excitement followed. The murderers were arrested. Captain Preston, to whose company the soldiers belonged, and who was present, was also arrested and committed to prison.

The following morning the authorities of Boston, urged on by an exasperated people, required the troops to be withdrawn from the town. The Lieutenant-Governor, for a time, resisted the demand; but on learning that no other course would satisfy or restrain the people,

he expressed his willingness that they should be withdrawn to the castle, which was accordingly done.

The funeral of the victims was attended with extraordinary pomp. Most of the shops were closed, all the bells of the town tolled on the occasion, and the corpses were followed to the grave by an immense concourse of people, arranged six abreast, the procession being closed by a long train of carriages, belonging to the principal gentry of the town. Captain Preston and the party of soldiers were afterwards tried. The captain and six of the men were acquitted, and two were convicted of manslaughter, a result which reflected great honor on John Adams and Josiah Quincy, the counsel, and on the jury.

Two days after the massacre, the news reached Staten Island, and there was great excitement. Hundreds of people, hailing from every part of the Island, gathered at Richmond, eager to learn the latest and to wonder what would come next. The newspapers gave but meagre accounts of events in those days, no matter how important they might be; but each time a story was repeated verbally it grew in mighty proportions. In every Staten Island home the story of insult and bloodshed was repeated, and the people, long secure in peaceful pursuits, suddenly awakened to the possible realities of war. All night long people lingered in and around Old Cucklestowne Inn, awaiting further rumors, and on the following day went to their quiet homes to ponder over their fate.¹

A week after this event a formal meeting was held in Richmond. The people of the Island were divided into three distinct classes. One was composed of the majority who naturally sympathized with the Government, and another who were too timid to take a stand publicly, and another still who were outspoken in favor of Revolution. The leader of the Revolutionists was Colonel Jacob Mersereau, who afterward distinguished himself as a patriot and soldier, and his bold action won not a few of his timid neighbors. He referred in his speech to the action of the Virginia Assembly, which, under the leadership of Patrick Henry, had forcefully declared "that the General Assembly of this colony have the sole right and power to levy taxes and impositions upon the inhabitants of this colony; and that every attempt to vest such power in any other person or persons whatsoever, under the General Assembly aforesaid, has a manifest tendency to destroy British as well as American freedom."

From that hour on Colonel Mersereau was a marked man. Many of his neighbors, although thoroughly sympathizing with him, were afraid to express their sentiments, lest their lives and property should

¹ The Island was not in a condition to defend itself against the incursions of any foe who might approach it with respectable force. As an example of the poverty of its material strength shortly before the war, we submit the following extract from the records: "January 6, 1770 then the Supervisors Examined into the

account of the arms that was bought for the county and Benjamin Semans Esq Brought in the account of What quantity Was in his hands, thair was in his hands £36—Delivered to Captain Wright 12 guns and 12 hangers and guns With Baguits to Mr. Broons and one Gun With a baguit to Cornoral Dongan."

become endangered. The meeting in question was presided over by Judge Seaman, an ardent supporter of the English Government throughout, and he declared that Colonel Mersereau was guilty of treasonable conduct. The only effect of the meeting was to widen the breach between neighbors, and to make the existence of those who desired separation from the parent government one of continual danger and annoyance. There is no record of any other formal meeting being held by the citizens of the Island prior to the final outbreak. The people continued, however, to meet at the County Seat day and night to learn the news, and heated discussions frequently led to conflicts, the effects of which were felt for generations after hostilities had ceased.

The month of June, 1772, furnished a new source of disquietude and animosity. On the 9th of that month, the Providence packet, while sailing into the harbor of Newport, was required, by the King's revenue cutter, the "Gaspee," Lieutenant Doddington commanding, to lower her colors. This the captain of the packet deemed repugnant to his patriotic feelings, and the "Gaspee" fired at the packet, to bring her to. The American, however, still persisted in holding on her course, and, by keeping in shoal water, dexterously contrived to run the schooner aground in the chase. As the tide was upon the ebb, the "Gaspee" was set fast for the night, and afforded a tempting opportunity for retaliation; and a number of fishermen, aided and encouraged by some of the most respectable inhabitants of Providence, being determined to rid themselves of so uncivil an inspector, in the middle of the night manned several boats, and boarded the "Gaspee." The lieutenant was wounded in the affray; but, with everything belonging to him, he was carefully conveyed on shore, as were all his crew. The vessel, with her stores, was then burned, and the party returned unmolested to their homes. When the Governor became acquainted with the event, he offered a reward of five hundred pounds for the discovery of the offenders.

The news had reached Staten Island that there had been a similar attempt to that at Sandy Hook, to force a cargo of tea into Boston, and it was plainly apparent that the event would prove another fruitful source of mutual ill-feeling between the British ministry and the colonists. The tea was thrown into the harbor, at Boston, the same as at Sandy Hook, while at Charleston, South Carolina, where a third cargo was sent, it was stored in cellars; but it also perished.

The geographical position of Staten Island gave the people of every faction, at that time, considerable anxiety, and subsequent events proved that their fears were not unfounded. They believed that, which ever army, in the event of war, should occupy New York City, would naturally covet Staten Island for an outpost; and they believed, too, that, friend or foe, the Island must necessarily suffer by the occupancy of a military force. This led the leaders of the various

factions to make several attempts to draw the people together and organize for mutual interest and protection. But without avail. One faction demanded implicit subjection to the parent-government, while another proclaimed unconditional independence, and the third remained silent and neutral.

Something might have been accomplished for the mutual benefit of the people, had not a majority of the British ministers, when the intelligence of the destruction of the tea reached Great Britain, at once resolved on more energetic measures to compel the colonists to respect the revenue laws. The ministers found themselves supported by Parliament in their plans of coercion, regardless alike of the great principles of the constitution, and of the permanent peace and prosperity of the Kingdom. Lord North, it is said, declared "that he would not listen to any complaints or petitions from America, till she was at his feet!"

This sent terror to the souls of the timid; but it increased the determination of the brave. Day and night, through sunshine and storm, our people gathered in little Richmond, to learn what next was coming; and when the tidings came that a bill was introduced "for the immediate removal of the officers concerned in the collection of customs from Boston, and to discontinue the landing and discharging, lading and shipping goods, wares and merchandise, at Boston, or within the harbor thereof," and that the bill also levied a fine upon the town, as a compensation to the East India Company, for the destruction of their teas, and was to continue in force during the pleasure of the King, there was consternation, for it was generally believed that war would surely come.

The first of June, 1774, was fixed for the Boston port-bill to go into operation, and the blockade was consequently to commence on that day. On the 13th of May, at a meeting of the inhabitants of Boston, it was resolved to invite the other colonies to unite in refusing all importations from Great Britain, and to withhold all commercial intercourse with her. To secure their co-operation, a special messenger was dispatched to New York, Philadelphia, and other places, in every one of which he was received with great cordiality, and resolutions were immediately adopted, corresponding to the views of the people of Boston.

Such indeed was the state of affairs in the colonies generally, in May, when General Gage arrived in Boston, as the successor to Governor Hutchinson, who had been recalled. At a former period, he had been, for several years, commander-in-chief of the British military forces in America. Notwithstanding the prejudices of the people to the appointment of a military man, he was received with due honor, and even great ceremony, by the council and citizens, all of whom expressed a hope that his administration would conduce to the peace and welfare of the province. All this was considered by the citizens of Staten Island.

A short time, however, served to develop the character of General Gage, and his servility to an arbitrary ministry in the mother-country. He threatened to remove the general assembly to Salem; gave his negative to thirteen of the council chosen by the assembly; refused to appoint a day for special prayer, at the request of that body; and, finally, sent a proclamation, by his secretary, to dissolve it.

At this period of increasing turmoil and agitation the second general congress assembled, (September 5th, 1774), at Philadelphia, in which all the colonies were represented, excepting Georgia. Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, was elected President, and Charles Thompson, of Philadelphia, secretary.

The most eminent men of the various colonies were now, for the first time, brought together. They were known to each other by fame; but



VISCOUNT CORNBURY.

they were, personally, strangers. The meeting was solemn. The object which had called them together, was of incalculable magnitude. The liberties of no less than three millions of people, with that of all their posterity, were staked on the wisdom and energy of their councils. No wonder, then, at the long and deep silence, which is said to have followed upon their organization; at the anxiety with which the members looked around upon each other; and at the reluctance which every individual felt to open a business so fearfully momentous! In the midst of this deep and death-like silence, and just when it was becoming

painfully embarrassing, Patrick Henry arose slowly, as if borne down by the weight of the subject. Of this incident, Wirt, in his "Life of Henry," says:

"After faltering, according to his habit, through a most expressive exordium, in which he merely echoed back the consciousness of every other heart, in deploring his inability to do justice to the occasion, he launched gradually into a recital of the colonial wrongs. Rising, as he advanced, with the grandeur of his subject, and glowing, at length, with all the majesty of the occasion, his speech seemed more than that of mortal man. Mr. Henry was followed by Mr. Richard Henry Lee, in a speech scarcely less powerful, and still more replete with classic eloquence. One spirit of ardent love of liberty pervaded every breast, and produced a unanimity, as advantageous to the cause they advocated, as it was unexpected and appalling to their adversaries."

The congress proceeded with great deliberation; its debates were held with closed doors, and the honor of each member was solemnly engaged not to disclose any of the discussions, till such disclosure was

declared advisable by the majority. On the 14th of October, a series of resolutions, regarding the rights and grievances of the colonies, was passed and promulgated. They were couched in strong and undisguised language, and set forth to the world what were considered, by this noble body of men, to be the rights and privileges of the people of America, in defence of which they were ready to peril life, liberty and fortune. Mr. Pitkin, writing on the subject, many years ago, said:

“A majority of the members of this congress had little doubt, that the measures taken by them, if supported by the American people, would produce a redress of grievances.

“Richard Henry Lee said to Mr. Adams: ‘We shall undoubtedly carry all our points. You will be completely relieved; all the offensive acts will be repealed, the army and fleet will be recalled, and Britain will give up her foolish projects.’

“George Washington was of opinion that, with the aid of both the non-importation and non-exportation system, America would prevail. Patrick Henry concurred in opinion with Mr. Adams, that the contest must ultimately be decided by force. The proceedings of congress met with the almost unanimous approbation of the people of America. The non-importation agreement, entered into by their delegates, was adopted as their own. Committees of vigilance were appointed in all the towns and districts, and the names of those who disregarded it, were published as the enemies of public liberty.”

Before the close of the year, the busy note of preparation resounded through almost every colony. The Massachusetts committee were indefatigable in providing for the most vigorous defence in the spring. They had procured all sorts of military supplies for the service of twelve thousand men, and had engaged the assistance of the three neighboring provinces of New Hampshire, Rhode Island and Connecticut.

While the notes of warlike preparation were thus sounding louder and louder through the country, the British Parliament assembled on the other side of the waters. In January, 1775, Lord Chatham, having taken his seat, moved—

“That an humble address be presented his majesty, most humbly to advise and beseech his majesty, that, in order to open the way towards our happy settlement of the dangerous troubles in America, by beginning to allay ferments and soften animosities there; and above all, for preventing, in the meantime, any sudden and fatal catastrophe at Boston, now suffering under daily irritation of an army before their eyes, posted in their town; it may graciously please his majesty, that immediate orders may be dispatched to General Gage, for removing his majesty’s forces from the town of Boston, as soon as the season and other circumstances, indispensable to the safety and accommodation of the said troops, may render the same practicable.”

This motion was persuasively urged by Lord Chatham, and ably

supported by Lord Camden, Lord Shelburne, and the Marquis of Rockingham, nevertheless it was rejected by a large majority. Immediately following its rejection, the ministry proposed, in the House of Commons, a joint address to the King, on American affairs. In this address, which was carried by large majorities, Parliament declared that Massachusetts was in a state of rebellion; and that this colony had been supported by unlawful combinations, and engagements entered into by several of the other colonies, to the great injury and oppression of his majesty's subjects in Great Britain.

Assuring his majesty of their determination never to relinquish the sovereign authority of the King and Parliament over the colonies, they requested him to take the most effectual measures to enforce obedience to that authority, and promised him their support, at the hazard of their lives and property. Opposition to the address was made in both houses, but in vain. The King, in his answer, declared his firm determination, in compliance with their request, to enforce obedience to the laws and authority of the supreme legislature of the kingdom. His answer was followed by a message requesting an increase of his forces by sea and land.

Thus the determination of King and Parliament was formed. Left of God to follow the counsels of a proud, overbearing, and obstinate ministry, they had now made declarations and taken positions, from which there was no retreat but by concessions, which were not to be expected. In due time, "the news"—and, such intelligence had not before been borne across the waters of the Atlantic—so exciting—so appalling—so maddening—"the news arrived of the King's speech at the opening of Parliament; of the resolutions adopted by that body; and, finally, of the act by which the inhabitants of Massachusetts were proclaimed rebels. All the province flew to arms; indignation became fury,—obstinacy, desperation.

"We must look back no more!" said the colonies; 'we must conquer or die! We are placed between altars smoking with the most grateful incense of glory and gratitude, on the one part, and blocks and dungeons on the other. Let each then rise and gird himself for the combat. The dearest interests of the world command it; our most holy religion enjoins it; that God, who eternally rewards the virtuous and punishes the wicked, ordains it. Let us accept these happy auguries; for already the mercenary satellites, sent by wicked ministers to reduce this innocent people to extremity, are imprisoned within the walls of a single city, where hunger emaciates them, rage devours them, death consumes them. Let us banish every fear, every alarm; fortune smiles upon the efforts of the brave!' By similar discourses, they excited one another, and prepared themselves for defence." "The fatal moment is arrived," says Botta's History; "the signal of civil war is given!"

Thus was the way prepared for a contest which King and Parlia-

ment might, at one time, have easily avoided. Had they listened to the warning voice of Chatham, descending to his grave, or had they regarded the dictates of common political wisdom, America might have been retained, and with all her loyalty and affection, as a dependency. But God designed a better portion for her; and hence He allowed the monarch and the statesmen of England to adopt measures the most impolitic and oppressive—the result of which was, as we shall see, the independence of the colonies, and the loss to the British crown of its brightest jewel.

CHAPTER XXI.

COMMENCEMENT OF THE REVOLUTION.



THE immediate cause of the battle, or, more properly, rencontre at Lexington, was an attempt of a detachment of British troops to execute an order of General Gage to destroy certain military stores, which the provincials had collected at Concord, a town situated about eighteen miles from Boston. In anticipation of an approaching contest, the provincial assembly of Massachusetts had passed a resolution for the purchase of all the gunpowder that could be found, and of every sort of arms and ammunition required for an army of fifteen thousand men.

As these objects abounded principally in Boston, the inhabitants employed all their address to procure and transport them to places of safety in the country. Cannon balls and other instruments of war were therefore collected and transported in carts, apparently loaded with manure; powder in the baskets and panniers of those who came from Boston market, and bullets were concealed even in candle-boxes. By these means, and through other channels, a considerable quantity of arms and ammunition had been collected at Concord.



OLD RED JAIL, 1710; COUNTY CLERK'S AND SURROGATE'S OFFICES, 1827.

Recently destroyed by fire.

Becoming excited by loyalists, General Gage at once resolved to send a few companies to Concord, for the purpose already stated. It was said, also, that he had in view, by this sudden expedition, to get possession of John Hancock and Samuel Adams, two of the most ardent patriot chiefs, and the principal directors of the provincial congress, then assembled in the town of Concord.

In pursuance of this purpose, on the evening of the 18th of April,

1775, several British officers dispersed themselves here and there upon the road and passages, to intercept the couriers that might have been dispatched to give notice of the movements of the troops. The Governor gave orders that no person should be allowed to leave the city; nevertheless, Dr. Warren, one of the most active patriots, had timely intimation of the scheme, and immediately dispatched confidential messengers, some of whom found the roads interdicted by the officers who guarded them; but others made their way unperceived to Lexington, a town upon the road leading to Concord.

The intelligence was soon divulged; the people flocked together; the bells in all parts were rung to give the alarm; and the continual firing of cannon spread the agitation through all the neighboring country. In the midst of this tumultuous scene, at eleven in the evening, a strong detachment of grenadiers and of light infantry was embarked at Boston, to land at a place called Phipps' Farm, whence they marched to Concord.

The British troops were under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, who led the vanguard. The militia of Lexington, as the intelligence of the movement of this detachment was uncertain, had separated in the course of the night. Finally, at five o'clock in the morning of the 19th, advice was received of the near approach of the royal troops. The provincials that happened to be near, assembled—to the number, however, of only seventy. The British appeared, and Major Pitcairn, galloping up to the provincials, commanded, in a loud voice, "Disperse, rebels! lay down your arms, and disperse!"

But the provincials did not obey, and Major Pitcairn, advancing nearer, discharged a pistol, and, brandishing his sword, ordered his soldiers to fire. Eight Americans were killed, three or four of them by the first fire of the British; the others after they had been taken from the scene of action. Several were also wounded. Many years afterward a handsome monument was erected to the memory of the killed, on the green where the first of them fell. The soldiers advanced toward Concord, where the inhabitants assembled; but seeing the numbers of the enemy, they fell back, and posted themselves on a bridge, north of the town. The light infantry assailed them with fury, routed them, and occupied the bridge, while the others entered Concord, and proceeded to the execution of their orders. They disabled two twenty-four pounders, threw five hundred pounds of ball into the river and wells, and broke in pieces about sixty barrels of flour.

The militia being re-inforced, Major Buttrick, of Concord, who had gallantly offered to command them, advanced towards the bridge; but, not knowing of the transaction at Lexington, ordered his men not to give the first fire, that the provincials might not be the aggressors. As he advanced, the light infantry retired to the Concord

side of the river, and began to pull up the bridge, and on his nearer approach, they fired, and killed a captain and one of the privates. The provincials immediately returned the fire. A skirmish ensued, and the regulars were forced to retreat, with some loss. They were soon joined by the main body, which now retreated with precipitancy. Meanwhile, the people of the adjacent country flocked in, and attacked them in every direction. Some fired from behind stone walls and other coverts, while others pressed on their rear during their retreat to Lexington.

General Gage, becoming apprehensive for the fate of the English, had dispatched nine hundred men and two field-pieces, under command of Lord Percy. These troops arrived very opportunely at Lexington, at the moment when those whom they were sent to assist had entered the town from the other side, pursued with fury by the provincial militia. It is quite probable that, without this re-inforcement, they would have all been killed or captured. Their strength, as well as their ammunition, was exhausted.

Looking back through the distance of time, the rencontre at Lexington was, in itself, an inconsiderable affair. But, in its relation and influence can scarcely be estimated. It was the first real outbreak of indignant feeling, which, for months and years, had been acquiring strength; but which, until now, had been suppressed. It was indeed a solution of the problem, whether the wrongs of America could be redressed without a resort to arms. It developed the spirit and determination, as well of the king and parliament, as the Americans themselves. It shut the door for further negotiations; it cut off hope for the colonies, but through an appeal to arms. In fact, it was a signal for war—it was war itself.

The affair had two practical results. The first was to demonstrate how false and ridiculous were the vaunts of those who, within Parliament, as well as without, had spoken in such unworthy terms of American courage. From that very moment, the English nation, and especially its soldiers, persuaded themselves that the struggle would be far more severe and sanguinary than had been at first believed. The second effect of the combat was, greatly to increase the confidence of the colonists, and their resolution to defend their rights. It should be added, also, that the reports of the cruelties of the British troops produced an incredible excitement in the minds of the inhabitants, which was still further increased by the public honors which were paid to those who had fallen in the opening contest. Their eulogies were pronounced, and they were styled martyrs of liberty, while their families were the objects of universal veneration. They were cited as the models to be imitated in the approaching conflict.

The provincial congress of Massachusetts later went into session at Watertown, ten miles distant from Boston. On receiving intelligence of the battle, it took immediate measures to raise thirteen

thousand and six hundred men, and chose for their General Colonel Artemus Ward, an officer of much reputation. This militia was designed to form the contingent of Massachusetts. The provinces of New Hampshire, Connecticut and Rhode Island were invited to furnish theirs, in order to complete an army of thirty thousand men, to be commanded by General John Thomas, an officer of great experience.

Connecticut dispatched, immediately, a considerable corps, under the command of Colonel Israel Putnam, an old officer, who, in two late wars, had often given proof of courage and intelligence. New York and the other provinces were not slow in causing their standards to move, and, in a short time, an army of thirty thousand men was found assembled under the walls of Boston. So great and so universal was the ardor produced among the inhabitants by the battle of Lexington, that the American generals were obliged to send back to their homes many thousand volunteers.

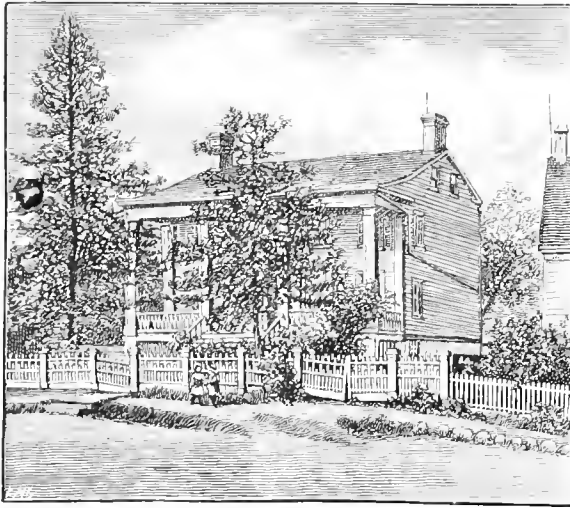
Putnam took his station at Cambridge, and Thomas at Roxbury, upon the right wing of the army, to cut off entirely the communication of the garrison, by the isthmus, with the adjacent country. In a few days after the affair of Lexington, the capital of the province of Massachusetts was closely besieged. Thus a multitude assembled in haste, of men, declared rebels and mean-spirited cowards; yet they held in strict confinement, many thousands of veteran troops, who were commanded by an able general, and combating under the royal standard.

As the scenes at Boston and elsewhere, at the commencement of the Revolution, were really preludes to the events which came later to Staten Island, the writer deems it necessary to devote considerable space in this chapter to their pressing importance. Boston, which for a considerable time had been the point of greatest interest in the American colonies, was not less so immediately following the battle of Lexington. The engagement served to quicken the already excited pulse of thousands. The fires of patriotism burned brighter. Sires and sons, mothers and daughters, seemed to rejoice that the crisis had come, and were ready to make every needful sacrifice for their country's good.

The fifteen thousand troops under General Ward awaited events. Towards the end of May, a considerable royal re-inforcement arrived at Boston from England, which, with the garrison, formed an army of about twelve thousand men, all veteran troops. At the head of this re-inforcement were three distinguished and practical generals—Howe, Clinton and Burgoyne. The difference in numbers was on the American side; not so, however, their military science, arms, or ammunition. They had, in all, but sixteen field pieces, six of which, at the very utmost, were in a condition for service. Their brass pieces, which were few, were of the smallest calibre. They had, however,

some heavy iron cannon, with three or four mortars and howitzers, and some scanty provision of balls and bombs. But of powder, they were almost totally destitute.

The situation of the English troops was now daily becoming more perplexing and critical, and the necessity was increasingly apparent, if they intended to retain their position, of fortifying certain points in the neighborhood. The two regarded of greatest importance were



THIRD COUNTY COURT HOUSE, ERECTED IN 1794.

the heights of Dorchester and Charlestown. The former presenting superior inducements, it was determined to occupy and fortify that first, and, afterwards, the latter.

The Americans having learned the intentions of the British general, it became a very serious question what course was most prudent for them to adopt. For a time a difference of opinion prevailed among the American patriots; but, at

length, the Committee of Safety recommended to the council of war to occupy and fortify Bunker's hill at once, and Dorchester heights, (now South Boston), as early after as practicable. In conformity with this suggestion, on the following day, (June 16th), General Ward issued orders to Colonel Prescott to proceed to Charlestown, and occupy and fortify Bunker's hill.

The troops detached for this service amounted to about one thousand men. They were ordered to take provisions but for a single day. In the early part of the evening of the 16th, they were mustered on Cambridge common, near the colleges. They were commended to the protection and guidance of Almighty God, in a prayer by President Langdon, after which, "led by the valiant Prescott, attired in a calico frock, and himself preceded by two sergeants with dark lanterns, and accompanied by Colonel Gridley and Judge Winthrop, they took their destined path."

When they reached the ground a question arose which of the two hills was intended as Bunker's hill. The northern eminence was more generally spoken of under that name, while the southern, commonly called Breed's hill, was evidently the one best fitted for the purpose. After long deliberation, it was decided to construct the principal work on Breed's hill, and to erect an additional and subsid-

iary one on Bunker's hill. Accordingly Colonel Gridley proceeded to lay out the principal work. "Midnight arrived, however, before a spade entered the ground; there remained therefore less than four hours before daylight, when the operations would, of course, be seen by the British. The men, however, now began, and they *worked*."

The night, on the part of the American troops, was one of sleepless vigilance and incessant toil. Shovels, pickaxes and spades were in incessant motion, and, by four o'clock in the morning, they had thrown up a redoubt, eight rods square and four feet high. At this time the captain of a British ship, called the "*Lively*," discovered the work, and opened a fire upon it. The alarm was given to the British in Boston, and to the men-of-war in the river, and a heavy cannonade was commenced. The fire from a battery of six guns, on Copp's hill, proved most annoying; but the Americans, regardless of bombs and balls, continued their labors with unshaken constancy. The first martyr who had the honor of shedding his blood, on that ever-memorable hill, was a private soldier by the name of Asa Pollard, of Bellerica, and the shot which killed him was the only one which took fatal effect during the forenoon.

But we shall refrain from giving a detailed account of the battle of Bunker's hill. Readers of history will readily recall that the Americans twice repulsed the British; but, when their ammunition was exhausted they were overpowered and driven from the works, leaving General Warren dead upon the ground. The battle was of about two hours' continuance, having commenced at three o'clock. The Americans engaged were estimated at about three thousand five hundred. The number killed and missing was one hundred and fifteen; three hundred and five were wounded, and thirty taken prisoners.

The British force engaged in this battle was four thousand. Their loss General Gage, in his official account, acknowledged to be one thousand and fifty-four—two hundred and twenty-six killed, and eight hundred and twenty-eight wounded, including nineteen officers killed and twenty-eight wounded. Their loss, according to the official account of the action by the Massachusetts congress, was fifteen hundred.

Charlestown was entirely destroyed. On the retreat of the Americans, the British took possession of Bunker's hill, from which they kept up a fire of artillery during the night. The Americans occupied Prospect and Winter hills. It was a bold attempt on the part of General Howe to carry the American redoubt by an attack in front. In consequence of this, his troops were exposed to the direct and galling fire of men who were each able to take deliberate aim. A censure was indeed cast upon him for so doing; but a too vain confidence in the bravery and discipline of his soldiers, and an equally mistaken estimate of American valor, led him to reject a plan proposed by General Clinton, and the adoption of one which, had it suc

ceeded, would have secured more honor, but which obviously was so hazardous and doubtful in its issue, as might well have gained for the other the preference.¹

If, previous to the battle of Bunker's hill, doubts existed in the minds of any, whether the contest between Great Britain and the American colonies would be settled without a struggle, the sanguinary scene on that hill must have dispelled them. Both parties had received a wound not likely to be healed. If the British had won the field, they had gained but little, if any honor; and in the repulse, which the Americans had met with, while they had lost no honor, they had acquired self-confidence, and added to their already high-wrought valor and determination.

The battle was fought on Sunday afternoon. Before Sunday night, the intelligence was spread more than a hundred miles distant from the scene of action. All were roused to the highest pitch of resentment, and set about preparing themselves for a long and bloody struggle. Companies were raised and equipped with the utmost dispatch; all hopes of reconciliation were lost. Squads of men flocked to headquarters, some of them having traveled eighty miles in twenty-four hours.

While events of so much importance were occurring in and around Boston, the more immediate theatre of the war, the second general congress was in session in Philadelphia, in deep consultation as to measures which the cause and exigencies of the country required. Their session had commenced on the 10th day of May preceding. Various matters of interest engaged their attention, and required all their wisdom and firmness. As the war had commenced, it was essential to keep up the zeal of the people; to prevent revolt to the royal standard; to introduce discipline into the army which had been collected in haste; to provide for the growing expenses of a war, the end of which could not be predicted; to prevent, in the conduct of the war, the revivals of jealousies which had existed between the different colonies; and, finally, to place the army in the hands of some commander-in-chief, in whom the country could confide, and whose commands the army would cheerfully obey. Goodrich, in writing of the events of the time, said:

"The importance of this last duty magnified, the more it was contemplated; and difficulties presented themselves which occasioned no small anxiety and embarrassment. A mistake here might prove

¹ The night of the 19th of June was one of more sadness to the British than to the Americans, notwithstanding that the latter had been driven from their position, and the colors of the former were waving on Bunker's Hill. To the British belonged the field—to the Americans, *in effect*, the victory. What the former had gained, was of no use to them, as their forces were not sufficiently numerous to hold possession of so extended a line. Their loss

in numbers was grievous; but this was small in comparison to the mortification experienced in view of their repeated repulses. Nor was that mortification lessened when it became known that the retreat of the Americans was caused by a want of ammunition. Had the *material* of battle not failed, who can say that the Americans would not have maintained their position?—*Spark's Life of Warren*.

fatal to the liberties of the country for an indefinite period to come.

“ Upon whom, then, should their choice fall? Gates and Lee were held in high estimation as military men. The first, for his experience; the second, because to experience he joined a very active genius. But they were both born in England, and, in case of misfortune, it would be difficult, however upright and faithful they might have been, to persuade the people that they had not been guilty of treason, or at least of negligence in the accomplishment of their duties.

“ Besides, Lee had an impetuosity of temper, which, in some hour of excitement, might spur him to the adoption of measures inconsistent with the safety of the army, and prejudicial to the interests of the patriot cause. There were also Ward and Putnam, who were already in the field, and who had demonstrated the most signal valor and ability in all the actions which had taken place in the vicinity of Boston. Putnam had seen much service, and, for energy and promptitude, had few equals; but he had declared himself too openly in favor of independence; this, congress devoutly wished to procure, but without in a propitious time.

“ As to General Ward, New England, it was well known, entertained an exalted opinion of him, and many were strongly wishing and anticipating that the lot would fall on him. He had served in the French war, in which he had acquired an honorable distinction. In addition, he was both a scholar and a gentleman, and the army itself was uncommonly prepossessed in his favor. But besides that he also had openly expressed himself in favor of independence. It was well known that the provinces of the middle, and more so of the south, were in a measure jealous of New England, in which the physical force of the country confessedly predominated, and they would naturally be reluctant to have the cause of American freedom confided to the hands of an individual who might allow himself to be influenced by certain local prepossessions, at a time in which all desires and all interests ought to be common.

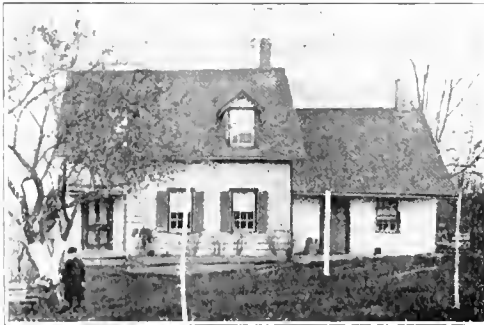
“ Nor was it a small desideratum with some of the sages of that era, that the commander-in-chief should himself possess an estate of such value as to offer a guarantee of his fidelity, and elevate him above the sordid and selfish motives of personal gain.

“ Surrounded by such difficulties, and embarrassed by such opposite considerations, what was to be done? One point was clear—*union must be preserved*, at any sacrifice. Union was strength. If in harmonious concert the colonies could not proceed, their doom was sealed. The country, and the whole country, must come in. The pulsation must beat through all hearts. The cause was one, and how many soever bore a part in sustaining and defending it, they must act as impelled but by one motive, and using but a single arm.

“ To the final question, it had been foreseen for some time, the congress must come. Out of doors, the subject had been considered and

debated; but, as yet, no settled opinion had been formed, and no decided action had been had. In this anxious and inquiring period, the Father of mercies—the Almighty Being by whose care the colonies had been planted, and hitherto sustained—whose blessing was daily sought by thousands of families, morning and evening—whose guidance the public councils, whether provincial, or continental, were never ashamed to implore—that good and gracious Benefactor was not slow in pointing to the man who should lead the armies of his American Israel!

“ One morning, the elder President Adams was walking in Congress hall, apparently absorbed in thought, when Samuel Adams, a kinsman and a member of Congress, approaching him, inquired the subject of his deep cogitation. ‘ The army,’ he replied; ‘ I am determined what to do about the army at Cambridge.’ ‘ What is that?’ asked his kinsman. ‘ I am determined to enter on a full detail of the state of the colonies, before the house this morning. My object will be to induce Congress to name a day for adopting the army of the United Colonies of North America; and, having done this, I shall offer a few hints on my election of a commander-in-chief.’ ‘ I like your plan, cousin John,’ said Samuel Adams; ‘ but on whom have you fixed as this commander?’ ‘ George Washington, of Virginia, a member of this house.’ ‘ That will never do, never, never.’ ‘ It *must* do,’ said John Adams, ‘ and for these reasons: The Southern and Middle States are loath to enter heartily into the cause, and their arguments are potent; they say that New England holds the physical power in her hands, and they fear the result.



HOUSE IN PROHIBITION PARK—RELIC OF THE
REVOLUTION.

A New England army, a New England commander, with New England perseverance, all united, appall them. For this cause, they hang back. The only way to allay their fears, and silence their complaints, is by appointing a southern chief over the army. This policy will blend us in one mass, and that mass will be resistless.’

“ Mr. Adams now went in, and taking the floor, put forth his strength in the delineations he had prepared, all aiming at the adoption of the army. *He* was ready to own the army, appoint a commander, and vote supplies. His speech was patriotic, eloquent and thrilling; but some doubted, some objected, some feared. To all these doubts and hesitations he replied: ‘ Gentlemen, if this Congress do not adopt this army, before ten moons have set, New England will have a Congress of her own, which *will* adopt it, and she will undertake the

struggle *alone*—with a strong arm and a clear conscience.’ This had the desired effect, and they agreed to appoint a day.

“The day was fixed, and came, and the army was adopted. And now followed the question as to a commander. Mr. Adams again rose. He proceeded to a minute delineation of the character of General Ward, according to him merits and honors, which then belonged to no one else; but at the end of this eulogy, he said: ‘This is not the man I have chosen.’ The peculiar situation of the colonies requires another and a different man, and one from a different quarter. These qualifications were now set forth in strong, bold and eloquent terms; and, in the sequel, he said: ‘Gentlemen, I know these qualifications are high; but we all know they are needful at this crisis, in this chief. Does any one say that they are not to be obtained in the country? I reply, they are; they reside in one of our own body, and he is the person whom I now nominate: George Washington, of Virginia.’

“At the moment, Washington was intently gazing, as were others, upon Mr. Adams, wrought up by an eager curiosity for the annunciation of the name. Without a suspicion that it would be his own, as it transpired from the lips of the speaker, he sprang from the seat and rushed from the hall. Samuel Adams, already in the secret, immediately moved an adjournment of the house, in order that the members might have time to deliberate on a nomination so unexpected and so surprising.”

Two days after the battle of Bunker’s hill, on June 15th, Congress convened to decide the important question. As individuals, they had given the subject a deep and solemn deliberation, commensurate with its vital importance to the country. Until the annunciation of Washington’s name by John Adams, probably no one had even thought of him; but now, but one sentiment prevailed. He was *the* man, and their ballots unanimously confirmed the choice. In a few days, following the appointment of Washington, Congress published a manifesto, setting forth to the world the causes which had led them to take up arms. After enumerating these causes, in a tone of manly assurance, and yet of humble dependence upon Almighty God, they said:

“Our cause is just—our union is perfect—our internal resources are great—and, if necessary, foreign assistance is undoubtedly attainable. We gratefully acknowledge, as signal instances of Divine favor towards us, that His providence would not permit us to be called into this severe controversy, until we are grown to our present strength, had been previously exercised in warlike operations, and possessed of the means of defending ourselves. With hearts, fortified with these animating reflections, we must most solemnly, before God and the world, declare, that, exerting the utmost energy of those powers, which the beneficent Creator hath graciously bestowed upon us, the arms we have been compelled by our enemies to assume, we

will, in defiance of every hazard, with unabating firmness and perseverance, employ for the preservation of our liberties; being, with one mind, resolved to die freemen, rather than to live slaves." Finally, they added: "With an humble confidence in the mercies of the supreme and impartial Judge and Ruler of the universe, we most devoutly implore His divine goodness, to protect us happily through this great conflict, to dispose our adversaries to reconciliation and reasonable terms, and thereby relieve the empire from the calamities of civil war."

The manifesto was sent into every part of the country, and read from the pulpits by the ministers of religion, with suitable exhortations. In the camps of Boston it was read with particular solemnity. Major-General Putnam assembled his division upon the heights of Prospect hill to hear it. It was followed by a prayer, analogous to the occasion; the General having given the signal, all the troops cried, three times, *amen!* and, at the same instant, the artillery of the fort fired a general salute. The colors, recently sent to General Putnam, were seen waving with the usual motto: "*An appeal to Heaven*"; and this other, "*Qui transiit sustinet*." The same ceremony was observed in the other divisions. The joy and enthusiasm were universal.

It may be added, in this connection, as an evidence of the piety of our fathers—of the belief of a superintending providence, which characterized that generation, that Congress recommended a public fast to be observed in all the colonies, on the 20th of July. The soldiers, they recommended to be "humane and merciful," and all classes of citizens, "to humble themselves, to fast, to pray, and to implore the Divine assistance, in this day of trouble and of peril."

Congress, in a body, attended divine services on that day, in one of the churches in Philadelphia. Just as they were about to enter the temple, important intelligence was received from Georgia. It was, that that province, which had hitherto held itself aloof from the common cause, had joined the confederation, and had appointed five delegates for its representation in Congress.

Having elected a commander-in-chief, Congress proceeded to the selection of other experienced officers. Artemus Ward, Charles Lee, and Philip Schuyler were appointed Major-Generals, and Horatio Gates adjutant-general. These appointments were followed, a few days later, by that of eight brigadier-generals; Seth Pomeroy, William Heath, and John Thomas, of Massachusetts; Richard Montgomery, of New York; David Wooster and Joseph Spencer, of Connecticut; John Sullivan, of New Hampshire, and Nathaniel Greene, of Rhode Island.

General Washington, accompanied by General Lee, repaired to the camp near Boston in July (1775). On their journey they received the highest honors from the most distinguished citizens. On making a

review of the army, soon after his arrival, Washington found an immense multitude, of whom only fourteen thousand five hundred were in a condition fit for service. But even these, in respect to uniform, equipment, and discipline, exhibited a variety most disheartening and painful to a commander. As to discipline, it scarcely existed. The subordinate officers were without emulation, and the privates, having been unaccustomed to the rules and regulations of a camp, were impatient of all subordination.

The newly-appointed generals soon arrived, fortunately, and with great alacrity set to work to reconstruct the army. General Gates, who was versed in the details of military organization, exerted a powerful influence in his work. In a short time the camp presented an improved aspect. The soldiers became accustomed to obedience; regulations were observed; each began to know his duty; and, at length, instead of a mass of irregular militia, the camp presented the spectacle of a properly disciplined army. It was divided into three corps—the right under the command of General Ward, the left under General Lee, and the centre under General Washington, who established his headquarters at Cambridge.

The providing of gunpowder had now become an essential consideration. Accordingly, it was recommended, by a resolution of Congress, that all the colonies should put themselves in a state of defence, and provide themselves with the greatest possible number of men, of arms, and of munitions; and, especially, that they should make diligent search for salpetre and sulphur. An exact scrutiny was therefore commenced, in the cellars and in the stables, in pursuit of materials so essential to modern warfare. In every part, manufactories of gunpowder and foundries of cannon were seen rising; every place resounded with the preparations for war. The provincial assemblies and conventions seconded admirably the operations of Congress; and the whole people obeyed, with incredible promptitude, the orders of these various authorities. In addition to these measures, several fast-sailing vessels were dispatched to the coast of Guinea, where they procured immense quantities of powder, having purchased it of European ships, engaged in the trade.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE CRISIS ON STATEN ISLAND.



URING the active movements of the British and Colonial armies in the East, all was excitement on Staten Island. The arrival of the mail-coach at Richmond Town was each day greeted by hundreds of people, and the news from the seat of war created animated controversies that resulted in hand-to-hand combats.



PRESENT COUNTY COURT HOUSE, ERECTED IN 1837; COUNTY JAIL IN THE REAR, ERECTED IN 1860.

The population of the Island consisted of about three thousand people, including men, women, children and slaves. The men were about evenly divided in their support of the English government, and families soon became disunited and at enmity over the vital

issues of the day. The first movement, however, that resulted in open disloyalty to the King was the partial organization of two military companies which offered their services to General Washington. Before the General's answer could be received, the British army arrived, with all its pomp and glitter, and the inexperienced natives were so terrified that they thought it wiser to be on the stronger side, and so consented to be mustered into the King's service.¹

This was a stinging blow to the patriots who were anxious that Staten Island should be in possession of the Colonial army, and they called a secret meeting at Smoking Point (Rossville) for the purpose of recruiting citizen soldiers who were opposed to the oppression of the parent government. But the leaders were betrayed and the meeting prohibited.

Before proceeding farther let us review the social and political condition of Staten Island at the commencement of hostilities. The geographical position of the place gave positive direction to the political sentiments of its inhabitants. Commanding the approach to the metropolis of the province, whoever possessed it took advantage of its natural facilities in a military point of view. The Dutch had a fort on the heights of the Narrows, (now Fort Wadsworth),

1 "There were some, however, who had no faith in the protestations of the British commander, and too much manhood to conceal their sentiments; to these the political atmosphere of the Island was decidedly unhealthy, and they had to escape for their lives.

"Among these was Colonel Jacob Mersereau. He was the son of Joshua Mersereau and Maria Corson, his wife. By the records of the Reformed Church, Port Richmond, he was baptised May 24th, 1730, and died in September, 1804, in the seventy-fifth year of his age. He resided in the old stone-house in Northfield, not far from Graniteville, now [1877] occupied by his son, the venerable and Hon. Peter Mersereau. Soon after the beginning of the war, he became apprehensive for his personal safety, and fled to New Jersey. During his protracted residence there, he made occasional stealthy visits to his family by night, and on one of these occasions had a very narrow escape from capture. Having crossed the Sound, and concealed his boat, he took his course for home across fields, avoiding the public roads as much as possible. It was while crossing a road from one field to another, that he was met by a young man whom he knew well; but as neither spoke, he imagined the young man did not know him. In this, however, he was mistaken, for he was recognized at once.

"There was no British post just then nearer than Richmond, and thither the young Tory hastened and informed the commanding officer, probably Colonel Simcoe, of his discovery. Preparations were made immediately to effect the arrest of Colonel Mersereau, but it was near daylight in the morning before the party set out. They were in no haste, for they sup-

posed he intended to remain concealed at home during the day. The family, as was their custom, had arisen early; but they did not discover the soldiers until they were within a few rods of the house. The alarm was immediately given, which, being perceived by the approaching party, a rush was made, and as they reached the door, the Colonel sprang out of the upper northwest window of the house, upon a shed beneath it, and thence to the ground.

"A few rods west of the house is a small elevation, and it was while crossing this that he was discovered. On the other side of the hill was a hedge row, terminating at a swamp, along which he ran on all fours, to keep himself out of sight, until he reached the swamp, in the middle of which he found a place of concealment. When he was discovered crossing the hill, those who had begun a search within were called out, and pursuit was made; but when the top of the hill was reached, the Colonel was nowhere to be seen. The swamp was discovered, and it was at once concluded that he was there concealed; but as the pursuers were ignorant of its intricacies, they could proceed no further.

"Dogs were then put upon the track, which they followed to the edge of the swamp, where they chanced to scent a rabbit, and away they went in chase of the new game. Here the pursuit terminated, and the Colonel, after remaining concealed the whole day, escaped during the following night to New Jersey. For a week thereafter a close watch was kept upon the house by day and by night. It is some consolation to know that the treacherous young Tory did not receive the reward which had been offered for the patriot's capture."—*Clute's Annals of Staten Island.*

during their control; the English enlarged and strengthened it; the State of New York increased its importance during the war of 1812, and the National Government, purchasing it in 1861, has from time to time added to its importance, until it is now one of the strongest points of defence in the whole country.

Whoever, then, possessed this important point, before the Revolution, to a certain extent possessed and controlled the Island and the metropolis. "Whilst the English held the government of the province, the people naturally imbibed English sentiments; freedom of opinion on political subjects, so far as the nature and character of the government was concerned, was not tolerated. It is not to be wondered at, then, that a people who, for more than a century had been taught to believe that it was little short of treason to doubt the divine origin of monarchy, and especially of the English monarchy, should be conscientiously opposed to a change which was calculated to overturn all their most cherished institutions. More than half of the population of the Island, at the dawn of the Revolution, were either of English birth or descent"; and many entertained the idea that the rebellion could not by any possibility succeed. Many indeed who favored rebellion hoped against hope.

A great majority of the early Dutch settlers were in favor of independence, and those of French descent were about equally divided on the question. Quite a number of the French having settled here before the conquest of the province by the English, had intermarried with the Dutch, who were then the dominant class, and had imbibed Dutch opinions, manners and customs, and had even fallen into the use of the Dutch language. In some of the families bearing French name, and of French descent, at the present day, are to be found family records, such as they are, written in the Dutch language.²

In February, 1775, Richmond County was represented in the Colonial Assembly by Christopher Billopp and Benjamin Seaman, and when, on the 23d of the same month, a motion was before the house "that the sense of this House be taken, on the Necessity of appointing Delegates for this Colony, to meet the Delegates for the other Colonies on this Continent, in General Congress, on the 10th day of May next," these representatives of Richmond voted in the negative.

The character of Staten Island was now pretty thoroughly established. The people of Elizabethtown had been eagerly watching and

² There was, however, another and more marked difference between the people of the several nationalities than mere political sentiments and opinions. The Dutch were imbued with a deep religious feeling; they were not generally as well educated as the English, but they could read and write, and keep their own accounts. The English had their religion, too; but they were more formal and less earnest and devoted than their neighbors. The French in this, as in other respects, accommodated

their religion to that of the class with which they had amalgamated. The Whig (or democratic) cause throughout the country was calculated to foster religious enthusiasm, for, being conscious of their own weakness as compared with the mighty power and resources of Great Britain, they naturally looked to a higher power than that of man to sustain them in what they conscientiously believed to be the cause of right.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

waiting to see what movement would here be made. The stand which the Islanders would take was no longer in doubt, and the Committee of Observation of Elizabethtown on February 13th, 1775, issued the following interdict:

"Whereas the inhabitants of Staten Island have manifested an unfriendly disposition towards the liberties of America, and among other things have neglected to join in the General Association proposed by the Continental Congress, and entered into by most of the Townships in America, and in no instance have acceded thereto. The Committee of Observation for this Town, taking the same into consideration, are of opinion that the inhabitants of their District ought, and by the aforesaid Association are bound, to break off all trade, commerce, dealings, and intercourse whatsoever with the inhabitants of said Island, until they shall join in the General Association aforesaid; and do Resolve that all trade, commerce, dealings, and intercourse whatsoever be suspended accordingly, which suspension is hereby notified and recommended to the inhabitants of this District to be by them universally observed and adopted.

"GEORGE ROSS, Clerk."

In the course of a day or two afterwards, an oyster boat, belonging to James Johnson, of Staten Island, crossed the Kills and went up the creek to the stone bridge, and the owner endeavored to make sale of his freight. But a pair of horses were speedily attached to the boat by the indignant people, and the poor craft was hauled up the street to the Court House. Johnson was advised by James Arnet to seek redress from Jonathan Hampton, chairman of the Committee of Observation, who was also a magistrate. Hampton was found and gave him protection, and in the evening permitted him to return to Staten Island.

This incident, trivial enough, was reported to Rivington in New York, and an account of it appeared in his *Royal Gazetteer* of March 2d, in which the affair was magnified into a disgraceful and turbulent riot. Mr. Hampton was accused of being "completely drunk," and Messrs. Blanchard and Dayton, two of the aldermen, were represented as having "exerted themselves greatly to suppress those violences, but they were only able to check them." Rivington's informant says of the mob, (February 18th), that "about four o'clock, they proceeded to abuse all the people in the town who were known to be well affected to the Constitution [the Tories]; they erected a gallows, and fixed up a liberty pole in the town." Both, however, were soon taken down.

The people of Staten Island assembled on the 11th of April following, to take action in regard to sending delegates to the Provincial Congress, which was to convene in New York soon after, and the result was almost unanimously against sending delegates. It is evident that those in favor of independence must have improved a later

safe to our hand, and with the majority of our committee considered the contents. We, agreeable to your request, have caused by advertisement the freeholders and inhabitants in our county to be convened on this day, in order that their sense might be taken whether they will choose deputies to represent them in a Provincial Congress or not. Accordingly, a number of the said freeholders and inhabitants did appear; a regular poll was opened, and continued till six o'clock; at the conclusion of which it appeared that a majority was, for the present, for sending no deputies. Our former conduct in sending of deputies to represent us in Provincial Congress, was elevated with encouraging hopes of having, ere this, obtained the so much desired point in our view, namely, a reconciliation with Great Britain. But, with anxiety we express it, that the hopes of obtaining so desirable an event, is now almost vanished out of our sight; and, instead of which, we behold with horror, every appearance of destruction, that a war with Great Britain will bring upon us. Under these apprehensions, and in our particular situation, we hope you will view us, and when candidly considered, we trust will furnish you with sufficient reason, for the present, to forbear with us.

"We wish and pray that if yet any hope of reconciliation is left, that measures might be adopted, if possible, to obtain that desirable end, in wishing of which we consider ourselves

"Your most obt.

"And most humble serv'ts,

"JOHN TYSEN,

"DANIEL CORSEN,

"JOSEPH CHRISTOPHER,

CHRISTIAN JACOBSON,

PETER MERSEREAU,

LAMBERT MERRILL,

JOHN POILLON.

"TO NATH'L WOODHULL,

"Pres't. of Prov'l. Congress, New York.

"P.S.—Should the Congress think it necessary for further information of the state of our county, they will please to order two of our committee to appear before them for that purpose."

Congress passed resolutions on the 21st of December, censuring Richmond County for its delinquency, and resolved "that if within fifteen days a list of the names of those who oppose a representation in Congress be not sent to that body, the whole county shall be considered delinquent, and entirely put out of the protection of Congress, and that intercourse with them shall be interdicted, and that the names of delinquents shall be published in all the newspapers of the colony."



GENERAL THOMAS GAGE.

The Committee of Safety was in session during the recess of the Congress. On the 12th of January, 1776, Richard Lawrence and Christopher Jacobson appeared before the committee and represented that the majority of the people of Richmond County were not averse, but friendly to the measures of Congress. Lawrence was a member of the committee for Richmond County. On the 22d of the same month the following letter was received by the Committee of Safety from the Richmond County Committee:

“ Richmond County, Jan'y 19, 1776.

“ GENTLEMEN:— Whereas the committee for this county have caused by advertisement the freeholders to be convened on this day, in order to elect two members to represent this county in Provincial Congress; accordingly a poll was opened for that purpose, without any opposition, at the close of which it appeared by a majority, that Messrs. Adrian Baucker and Richard Lawrence were duly elected to represent this county in Provincial Congress until the second Tuesday in May next, which we hope will be agreeable to the rest of that body.

“ We are, gentlemen,

“ Your mo. obt. and most humble servts.,

“ CHRISTIAN JACOBSON

LAMBERT MERRILL,

“ JOHN TYSEN,

PETER MERSEREAU,

“ GEORGE BARNES

MOSES DUPUY,

“ DAVID LATOURTTE,

DANIEL CORSEN,

“ HENRY PERRINE

JOSEPH CHRISTOPHER.

“ To the Committee of Safety on recess of the Provincial Congress in New York.”

Richmond County's reputation for want of sympathy in the Colonial cause was known by the Continental Congress, and that body also made it the subject of action, as is shown by the following extract from the minutes:

“ IN CONGRESS, Feb'y 8th, 1776.

“ The inhabitants of Richmond County, in the Colony of New York, having refused to send Deputies to represent them in Provincial Convention, and otherwise manifested their enmity and opposition to the system and measures adopted for preserving the liberties of America; and as a just punishment for their inimical conduct, the inhabitants of that Colony having been prohibited by the Convention from all intercourse and dealings with the inhabitants of the said county; and this Congress being informed by the Committee of Safety of that Colony, that the freeholders of the said county did afterwards, without any opposition, elect deputies to represent them in Provincial to the consideration of Congress, it was apprehended Deputies would not be received until the sense of Congress should be communicated. Convention; but as the proceedings against them had been submitted

“ Resolved, That it be referred to the said Provincial Convention to

take such measures respecting the admission of the Deputies, and revoking the interdict on the inhabitants of the said county, as they shall judge most expedient, provided that the said Deputies and major part of the inhabitants of said county shall subscribe the association entered into by that Colony.

“ Extract from the minutes.

“ CHAS. THOMPSON, Sec’y.”

The Provincial Congress then ordered that the resolution of the Continental Congress be transmitted to the deputies lately elected by the people of Richmond County.

Being apprehensive that General Clinton would land upon Staten Island, for the purpose of making depredations and carrying off live stock, the Continental Congress requested the Provincial Congress of New Jersey to detail Colonel Herd, with his regiment, to the Island to prevent it, and fearing that he might not reach here in time, a like request was made to the Committee of Safety of Elizabethtown. The people of Staten Island became considerably excited at this measure, and became suspicious of the errand of Colonel Herd and his troops.

Accordingly, on February 19th, the two Deputies, Adrain Bancker and Richard Lawrence, hastened to inform the Congress that they had subscribed to the association entered into by the Colony, and that “ seven-eighths of the people had done so likewise, long since,” and that the coming of Colonel Herd, “ with a large body of men, to call the people to account for their inimitable conduct,” just at that time, “ when many of the people were coming into the measures, and the cause gaining ground daily, would have an injurious effect,” and they suggested that the stopping of the New Jersey forces would quiet the minds of the people.

Congress on the same day replied and assured the Deputies that “ Colonel Herd’s errand to Staten Island did not in any manner relate to the people of the county, except to protect their property, and that a counter request had been forwarded to New Jersey.” At the same time the two Deputies were requested to attend the Congress, and to bring with them the proof that the majority of the people had subscribed to the association, to enable them to take their seats.

The Committee of Safety of Elizabethtown had caused the apprehension and imprisonment at that place of Isaac Decker, Abraham Harris and Minne Burger, and had held Richard Conner under bond to appear before them, upon charges not specified. The Congress of New York entered into a correspondence with the committee at that place, and requested them to “ send the delinquents of the county where they belonged, to be tried by the County Committee.” The Committee of Richmond were also informed of the action of the Congress, and were instructed to try the delinquents and mete out to

them impartial justice, and report to Congress. On February 23d, Adrain Bancker's name appears among those of the members of the Congress. On February 28th, Decker and Burger were returned to their own county, and the charges against them and Richard Conner were also transmitted to the Committee of Richmond. No mention is made of Harris in this connection. At the time of surrendering them, the Committee of Elizabethtown disclaimed all knowledge of their offences; but intimated that they had been arrested by Colonel Herd, at the instance of either the New York or the Continental Congress.

General Charles Lee originated the proposed expedition of Colonel Herd to Staten Island, the object being the protection of live stock. General Lee communicated his apprehensions to the Committee of Safety, which addressed a letter to the Provincial Congress of New Jersey, on February 10th, 1776, in which they say: "The entrance of Genl. Clinton into our port on pretence of *merely* paying a visit to Govr. Tryon, though he has been followed by a transport with troops, which we have good reason to believe are only a part of 600 that embarked with him at Boston, renders it highly probable that some lodgement of troops was intended to be made in or near this city."

As no troops from New York could be spared from its defence, and as Colonel Herd's regiment was so near Staten Island, General Lee deemed it proper that he should be sent over for its protection. On the following day the Committee addressed another letter to the same convention, containing information that the "Mercury," a ship of war, with two transports under her convoy, had left the port, and anchored near Staten Island, and expressed fears that the colonel would arrive too late. The New Jersey Congress replied to the Committee on the 12th that Colonel Herd, with seven hundred men, had been ordered to march immediately to Staten Island. On the 17th, Congress expressed its thanks to Colonel Herd for his alacrity in its service; but as the danger had now passed, (probably by the departure of the ships), his services would not be required.

Hendric Garrison, of Staten Island, forwarded a complaint to Congress on the 8th of March, that while he was attending as a witness before the Committee of Richmond, and while under examination, the said Committee "permitted the defendants, Cornelius Martino, Richard Conner and John Burbank, to insult and abuse him," and he asked the protection of Congress, "as he considered his person and property unsafe."

Lord Stirling, as commander of the Continental troops in New York, issued a warrant "to apprehend John James Boyd, of Richmond County, and to have him brought before the Congress." Captain John Warner, to whom the warrant was delivered for execution, laid it before that body on the 14th of March, when it "was considered and decided that Boyd was so unimportant and insignificant a person as not to deserve the trouble and expense of apprehending

him." This depreciation of importance Boyd resented, and on the 21st sent a note to the Committee of Safety, claiming to be "a steady and warm friend to his country." He pronounced any accusation against him unfounded.

Christian Jacobson, as chairman of the County Committee, on the first of April, 1776, reported the organization of four companies of militia on the Island, the officers of which were to be duly commissioned. This was the



OLD CHRISTOPHER HOMESTEAD, WILLOW BROOK.
House in which Committee of Safety met during the Revolution

battalion commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Christopher Billopp, and contained the two companies previously alluded to as being raised for the Continental service. They were stationed on Staten Island throughout the war, and served as a provost guard. They were in two or three skirmishes, but were not very reliable soldiers.

On the 3d of April, Mr. Lawrence, a member from Richmond, reported that the county was "already furnished with fourteen good flats or scows, which was sufficient for the removal of the stock from the Island, and that the building of two more, as previously ordered, would be a useless expense." These scows, or flats, were held in readiness to remove the cattle to New Jersey, if the English ships of war on the coast should attempt to seize them, as they had done in several other places.

Lord Stirling informed the Committee of Safety, on April 12th, that he had General Putnam's orders to march with a brigade of troops for Staten Island, and that he would be under the necessity of quartering the soldiers in the farm-houses for the present. He requested the people "to be notified of the fact, so that they might prepare quarters most convenient to themselves, and to be assured that he would make the residence of the troops as little burdensome as possible." The Committee of Richmond were requested to "prepare empty farm-houses, barns, etc., for the reception of the soldiers, and to use their influence with the inhabitants to consider the soldiers as their countrymen and fellow citizens, employed in the defence of the liberties of their country in general, and of the inhabitants of Richmond County in particular, and endeavour to accommodate them accordingly."

Hendric Garrison, chairman of the County Committee, was present at the meeting of the Committee of Safety, and inquired "whether

the people would be paid for fire-wood furnished to the troops in Richmond County, and for their labor in preparing the guard house, at the request of Lord Stirling,"³ and was referred to Colonel Mifflin. This is proof that Lord Stirling's troops were encamped upon Staten Island prior to the arrival of Sir William Howe, a fact which some historians deny.

General Washington wrote to the Committee of Safety, informing it that "Peter Poillon, of Richmond County, had been arrested for supplying the king's ships with provisions." On the 8th, Poillon was taken before the Committee and examined. He did not deny the charge; but pleaded in extenuation that "the regulations for preventing intercourse with the King's ships had not been published in Richmond County until the 2d or 3d of that month, and that therefore he was ignorant of them." He stated further that "he left home with a considerable sum of money, to discharge a debt in Kings County, together with some articles of provision for New York market, of the value of about three pounds"; that "while passing the warship 'Asia,' at as great a distance as he safely could, he was fired at and could not escape." He proved further, by reputable witnesses, that he "was a respectable man, and had always been esteemed a friend to the liberties of his country." Poillon was discharged, with a caution "hereafter to keep at a safe distance from the King's ship, and to warn his fellow-citizens of Richmond County to do the same."

On May 18th, 1776, a certificate, signed by Christian Jacobson, chairman of the Richmond County Committee, dated April 22d, 1776, was presented to the Provincial Congress, and attested by Israel D. Bedell, clerk, and directed to Paul Michean, Richard Conner, Aaron Cortelyou and John Journeay, was read and filed, whereby it appears that these gentlemen had been elected to represent Richmond County in that body, with power to any two of them to meet to constitute a quorum, the second Tuesday of May, 1777.

June 5th, 1776, Congress issued an order for the "arrest of a number of persons in several counties, who were inimical to the cause of America." Those from Richmond County were Isaac Decker, Abm. Harris, Ephm. Taylor and Minne Burger. They also ordered that "several persons who held office under the King, should be summoned to appear before the Congress," and among them are found the names of Benjamin Seaman and Christopher Billopp. There is nothing in the "Journal of Congress" to show that these orders and resolutions were ever carried into effect.

³ Washington, writing to General Livingston, says: "The known disaffection of the people of Amboy, and the treachery of those on Staten Island, who, after the fairest professions, have shown themselves our most inveterate enemies, have induced me to give directions, that all persons of known enmity or doubtful character should be removed from

places where they might enter into a correspondence with the enemy, and aid them in their schemes. For this end, General Herd, [of Woodbridge], has directions to apprehend such persons, as from their conduct have shown themselves inimical, or whose situation, connexions, or offices have given just cause of suspicion."—*Spark's Life of Washington*.

CHAPTER XXIII.

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND.



E have reached the dawn of a new era. A resolution had been submitted June 7th, 1776, to the General Congress, by Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, to the effect "That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown; and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved." On the 10th, having been freely and earnestly discussed for three days, it was adopted in committee of the whole, by a bare majority of the several delegations. For the sake of greater unanimity, it was reconsidered and postponed until the 1st of July.

In the meantime, it was warmly debated among the people, and in several provincial Congresses. The consideration of the question was resumed in Congress on Monday, July 1st, in committee of the whole, and passed by the vote of nine colonies. Being reported to the House, it was deferred until the next day, Tuesday, July 2d, when it was passed by the vote of twelve colonies, the Delegates from New York, though personally favorable, being restricted by official instructions from voting. The Declaration of Independence, having been referred to a special committee, was reported on the 28th of June, and, having been closely scrutinized on the evening of the 4th of July, was adopted unanimously.¹

"The die was cast. The state of vassalage was terminated. The House of Hanover was dethroned. Royalty was abolished. All dependence on Britain was abjured. A Republic was inaugurated. A Nation was born. The struggle ceased to be a civil war. Rebels were

¹ It has long been claimed that the first declaration of independence was made by the people in Charlottetown, Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, in May, 1775. All doubt on this subject is now dispelled, and the honor of such declaration must be accorded to them. In a letter from Mr. Bancroft, American minister at London, to Governor Swain, of North Carolina, dated London, July 4th, 1848, he says: "You may be sure that I have spared no pains to discover in the British state paper office a copy of the resolves of the convention of Mecklenburg, and with entire success. The first account of 'the extraordinary resolves of the people in Charlottetown, Mecklenburg county,' was sent over to England by Sir

James Wright, then Governor of Georgia, (to whom they had found their way) in a letter of the 20th of June, 1775. The newspaper thus transmitted is still preserved, and is the number 498 of the *South Carolina Gazette and County Journal*, Tuesday, June 13th, 1775." * * * "It is identically the same with the paper which you enclosed to me." The letter of Sir James Wright, referred to by Mr. Bancroft, closes as follows: "By the enclosed paper, your lordship will see the extraordinary resolves of the people of Charlottetown, in Mecklenburg County. I should not be surprised if the same should be done everywhere else."

now patriots. The British were foreign foes. The war was henceforth to be waged by rival nations. Loyalists were now traitors, and to be treated as foes to their country. Neutrality could no longer be tolerated. King or Congress must rule. Sides must be taken. Every man must be a friend or a foe—for or against his country. He could not be neither."

Now let us turn our attention to the movements of the British forces on Staten Island. In January, 1776, General Clinton having been sent by Sir William Howe on an expedition along the Atlantic coast, while on his way from Boston to Virginia, came to anchor at Sandy Hook and had an interview with Governor Tryon and other representatives of the Crown who had been obliged to take shelter in vessels, after which they went on their way southward. General Howe with his army, numbering about twelve thousand, evacuated Boston on March 17th, and falling back to Halifax, awaited for a time with the fleet for the arrival of his brother, with re-inforcements from England. But becoming impatient of delay, he sailed from that place for the expected seat of war at New York on the 12th of June, and arrived off Sandy Hook on the 25th. There he awaited the arrival of the fleet, which came up on the 29th.

Admiral Lord Howe, with a portion of the re-inforcements from England, arrived at Halifax soon after his brother's departure; but



LORD BELLOMONT.

without dropping anchor he followed and joined him here. The British general, on his approach, found every part of New York Island, and the most exposed parts of Long Island, fortified and well defended by artillery. Finding Staten Island but meagerly fortified the fleet anchored just off our shore, and Sir William at once determined to make use of the spot for a rendezvous while awaiting the arrival of other forces and the completion of arrangements for penetrating into the country and maturing any other plans for action.

The fleet moved up to the Narrows on the 3d of July, and the grenadiers and light infantry were landed under cover of the frigates and sloops of war. General Howe declared this was done "to the great joy of a most loyal people, long suffering on that account under the oppression of the rebels stationed among them, who precipitately fled on the approach of the shipping."² The remainder of the army were landed

² The Staten Islanders had made profession of patriotism, it has been seen, and so were allowed to resume trade with their neighbors at Elizabethtown. The value of their profes-

sions may be seen from the report of Governor Tryon, of New York, to Lord George Germain, dated, "Dutchess of Gordon, off Staten Island, 8th July, 1776." General Howe disembarked

in the course of the day, and the whole were distributed about the Island where they found refreshments. The landing was effected at the present Quarantine station at Clifton, and the greater portion of the army immediately marched to New Dorp, where headquarters were established by General Howe in the old Rose and Crown farm house, which was on an elevation between New Dorp lane and the Black Horse tavern.

According to the writings of a British officer, the landing of the troops was made in a very orderly manner, under the direction of Captains Raynor, of the ship "Chatham," and Curtis, of the ship "Senegal," and to the entire satisfaction of General Howe. As the Americans were strongly posted and in great force, both on Long Island and at New York, having upwards of a hundred cannon for defending the city, General Howe resolved to defer his scheme of ascending the North River, and to remain in his present position until he should be joined by General Clinton, and the expected reinforcements from England. The latter arrived at Staten Island on the 12th of July, and Lord Howe assumed the command of the fleet on the American station.

The fleet numbered one hundred and thirteen sail, and they lay in a line extending from the mouth of the Kill van Kull to Simonson's ferry at the Narrows. As they were coming in, the "Asia," which brought up the rear of the fleet, was fired at from a small battery on Long Island commanding the Narrows. The fire was returned by about forty 24-pounders, one of which lodged in the wall of a private house. Another shot struck the house of Denysé Denyse, which stood where Fort Hamilton is now located,³ wounding a negro servant in the foot and narrowly missing the kitchen, where a number of the family were assembled. A second shot struck the barn on the same place, and a third destroyed much of the garden fence opposite the front door of the mansion house. This is said to have been the first blood shed in this quarter in the war.

The *Pennsylvania Journal* of July 10th, 1776, contains the following news in connection with this event:

"As soon as the troops landed they paraded the North Shore, and

the troops under his command on Staten Island the 2d Instant without opposition, on which occasion the inhabitants of the Island came down to welcome the arrival of their deliverers, & have since afforded the army every supply & accommodation in their power. On Saturday last [6th] I received the Militia of the Island at Richmond Town, where near four hundred appeared, who cheerfully, on my Recommendation, took the Oath of Allegiance & fidelity to his Majesty. Tomorrow I am to have another muster for the enlistment of Volunteers to form a Provincial Corps for the defence of the Island.—*New York Colonial Documents*, viii, 681.

³ Denysé Denyse afterward removed to

Staten Island, and located on the east shore. His son, Denysé Denyse, Jr., became colonel of the Staten Island militia during the first quarter of the present century, and was promoted to brigadier-general; his command included both Staten Island and Long Island militia. He carried on an extensive business at Tompkinsville. His brother was the father of ex-Sheriff William C. Denyse, still residing at Tompkinsville. General Denyse's sister married General Van Buren, a prominent resident of Tompkinsville and a particular friend of Governor Tompkins. His residence still stands at Tompkinsville, not far from the foot of Pavillion Hill.

on Wednesday morning made their appearance near Elizabeth-Town Point; but the country being soon alarmed, they retreated, took up the floor in the draw-bridge in the salt meadows,⁴ and immediately threw up some works.

" Their near approach to Elizabeth-Town Point greatly alarmed the inhabitants of Essex County, [Elizabeth, now in Union, at that time being in Essex County], and particularly the people of Elizabeth-Town and Newark; but they are now in a condition to receive them whenever they may think proper to approach.

" Two young men from Elizabeth-Town crossed the river in a canoe last Thursday, and tired upon the Regulars; but a number of them rushing out of the woods, they were obliged to retreat and cross the river again.

" A sloop of twelve six-pounders, belonging to the fleet from Halifax, lying in the Kills, near Mr. Decker's ferry, [Port Richmond], was almost torn to pieces last Wednesday morning, by a party under the command of General Herd, from the opposite shore, with two eighteen-pounders. The crew soon abandoned the sloop, and we suppose she is rendered entirely unfit for any further service.

" We hear two men-of-war now lay near Amboy, in order 'tis supposed, to stop all navigation that way."

The story comes down to us that when, on the morning of the 4th of July, 1776, a battalion of grenadiers marched into secluded little Richmond, the County Court was in session. Benjamin Seaman, the County Judge, was an ardent royalist, and " on behalf of His Majesty's Court of the County of Richmond, he directed the Sheriff, Thomas Frost, to welcome His Majesty's troops to the County seat."

Sheriff Frost was not in sympathy with the cause of England, and positively refused to obey the instructions of the Court; whereupon Judge Seaman directed that he should be summarily punished for contempt of Court! The Sheriff was very popular, even among those who differed with him on the vital question of the day—rebellion against the King, for the purpose of establishing the independence of the colonies. Hundreds of citizens had assembled in the village, and notwithstanding the presence of the King's troops, there was a spontaneous appeal to Judge Seaman that Sheriff Frost should go unpunished.⁵

Judge Seaman was evidently too shrewd a reader of human nature

⁴ The point in question is known as Holland's Hook. The ferry there was originally arranged by the Indians, and was probably the first regular crossing place established on the Arctur Kill. The " works," or redoubts, built by the British were located on the high ground commanding the meadows, a short distance east of the elevation. It was an important outpost throughout the Revolution, and was the scene of several very exciting skirmishes. The redoubts were the first built

by the British on Staten Island, and were demolished soon after the war.

⁵ For some reason, unknown to the writer, Frost changed his opinion shortly afterward, and became one of the most radical Tories on Staten Island. He was indicted for cursing the " rebels " and otherwise acting disloyally, when the war was over, and his trial for the same was the first one under the new county government. He pleaded guilty, but there is no record of the result.

to ignore the popular demand, and he acquiesced as gracefully as circumstances would permit.

Four days later, the 9th of July, the Provincial Congress convened in the Court House at White Plains, Westchester County; but there were no deputies from Richmond County in attendance. At this meeting the Declaration of Independence was received and read. It was also officially reported that "the British had taken possession of Staten Island without opposition, and detachments had advanced toward Bergen Point and Elizabeth-Town." The Declaration having been read, it was unanimously adopted, and the Congress passed a resolution to support the same, "at the risk of our lives and fortunes." It was ordered to be published. It was then—

"Resolved and Ordered, that the style or title of this House be changed from that of the 'Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York,' to that of 'The Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York.'"

The convention recognized the impracticability of electing senators and members of assembly in the southern district of the State, Westchester County excepted; but as it was reasonable and right that the people of the district should be entitled to representation in legislation, they proceeded to appoint these officers. Joshua Mersereau and Abraham Jones were appointed for Richmond County; but the latter was subsequently denied his seat, on account of his sympathy for the enemy.

After this the county does not appear to have been represented in the Legislature of the Colony or State for a long time. There were representatives who were entitled to their seats; but they were not permitted to leave the Island. Communication with the mainland or with New York or Long Island, was prohibited, forbidden, except by permission, and consequently in the succeeding sessions of the Legislature the name of a representative from Richmond does not appear.

Sir William Howe and his generals read the Declaration of Independence in the old Rose and Crown farm-house, at New Dorp. A staff officer, writing of the incident to a friend in England at the time, said:

"I was sitting beside his Excellency, who was engaged in earnest conversation about building redoubts at various points on the Island. General Cleveland, who had, on the day previous, been appointed the chief engineer of His Majesty's army in America, was designating certain points which he deemed practicable to defend. Two or three



GENERAL WILLIAM HOWE.

locations had been pointed out, when General Vaughan approached in a somewhat excited manner, so as to attract the instant attention of all present, and without even stopping to salute his superior officer, handed him a newspaper.

"Sir William at first seemed a little amused at General Vaughan's unusual condition—for he was one of the coolest of men—and smiled greatly when he read the heading in the newspaper: 'Declaration of Independence.' He read a paragraph or so, and his expression changed to one of marked seriousness. Then handing the paper over to General Cleveland, requested him to read it aloud, which he did.

"Sir William fixed his gaze down across the tented fields that spread out between headquarters and the bay and remained perfectly silent until fully a moment after the reading was finished.

"Then breaking the deep silence he said in a subdued tone: 'Those are certainly determined men.'

"A slight wave of the hand, indicated that there were more serious thoughts in his mind than the building of redoubts, at that moment, and General Cleveland folded the map and laid it on a chair standing beside him.

"Our commander took the paper again in his hands and scanned the list of names carefully—it seemed to me that he must have read them all over three or four times.

"His face was a subject to study. There was a struggle between a smile and a frown; but the latter seemed to prevail. Tossing the paper to the chair where the map was lying, he started to speak to General Vaughan, who was still standing in front of him. 'General,' he said, and then hesitated. The sentence was never finished. There was an animated council of war at headquarters that evening, every one present seeming to realize that the situation was becoming more and more critical."

Lord Howe arrived at Staten Island on the 12th of July, 1776, six days after his brother, Sir William, had read the Declaration. Cannons boomed, bands played and there was every other mark of honor shown the distinguished officer at New Dorp. He at once became his brother's guest at the Rose and Crown. It was there that he, too, read the full text of the famous document. On the following day, the 13th, the two commanders called their chief officers together, and nearly the whole day was consumed in planning for the immediate future.

On the 14th, they issued a proclamation, inviting all persons to return to their allegiance to the King. Their combined forces reached nearly thirty-five thousand men, though only about half were encamped on the Island. The first object to engage the attention of General Howe was the conciliation of the American loyalists, and, to this end, he had several interviews with Governor Tryon and other prominent men in New York and New Jersey, "all of whom led him





to believe that large numbers of the people were anxious to flock to his standard the moment it was unfurled."

Delancey, of New York, was appointed a brigadier-general; Skinner, of Perth Amboy, a colonel, and Billopp, of Staten Island, a lieutenant-colonel of the native loyalists or tories. Proclamations were issued promising protection to the people so long as they remained peaceably at home and manifested no sympathy for the rebels or their cause. Misled by the specious promises which Howe had promulgated, a large number of the whig inhabitants of Staten Island remained peaceably at home to reap the fruits of their credulity in having soldiers quartered upon them—in enduring, submissively, the insults and outrages committed upon themselves and families, their houses and barns openly and defiantly plundered, their cattle driven away or wantonly killed, their churches burned, and, not infrequently, some of their own number barbarously, and without provocation, murdered.

There were many, however, who had no faith in the protestations of the British commander, and also had too much manhood to conceal their sentiments; to these the political atmosphere of the Island was very uncomfortable, and they had to escape with their lives.

The building of forts, or redoubts, at once attracted the attention of the British army. As before stated, the first were the two at Holland's Hook. Then General Cleveland, the chief engineer, set to work in great earnest. The Hessians were employed chiefly to do the manual labor. Three redoubts were built at Richmond—one on Richmond Hill, three hundred yards or so from St. Andrew's church; another, which is still standing,⁶ about a third of a mile west, and another on the hill overlooking the meadows, west of Richmond, where the Bedell homestead graveyard was afterward established. Along the shore below New Dorp, for a mile or so, there was a chain of earth-works, calculated to defend the encampment on the plain back of it.

An important redoubt was built about where the Westfield entrance to the Fresh Kill bridge is located, and another at Blazing Star [Rossville], in the vicinity of Mr. H. H. Decker's residence. On the elevation at Kreischerville, about where the Kreischer cottages stand, was a large redoubt. Near the Billopp House was a stone fort and earth-work; at Prince's Bay, several feet out in front of the Red Bank lighthouse, was a plain earthen redoubt, capable of accommodating several guns. Just to the east of Purdy's Hotel, at Prince's Bay, was a small redoubt.

⁶ The land on which this redoubt stands belongs to Mr. Joseph Simonson, of Port Richmond. He has the deed, given some time prior to the Revolution, in which there is a proviso that "if the owner of the property goes out of sight of the same, he shall forfeit

his right and title." The owner did "go out of sight" in a very hasty manner, however, on the arrival of the British, and thus forfeited his claim. Being a "rebel," it is safe to assume that he recovered title when peace was established.

All along the shore at odd intervals the British threw up breast-works. Quite a substantial one was built on the heights of the Narrows, where Fort Wadsworth now stands, and another at the landing place, near the present Quarantine station. Two were built on what is now known as Pavilion Hill. They were re-built by the Americans in 1812, and one still marks the spot, although almost leveled by the storms of years. Over beside the reservoir on Fort Hill were two large redoubts, the last of the embankment being demolished about eight years ago, when the Water Works Company enlarged its facilities at that point. Another, still standing, is located on the property of Mr. Charles A. Herpich.

Near New Brighton corner, the entrance to the kills, there was a chain of earth-works, which contained, according to official reports, about twenty field guns. East of the Cove, at West New Brighton, was a breast-work about fifty yards in length, and a small redoubt where the building lately occupied by the Athletic Club now stands. Another stood exactly where the Church of the Ascension is located. The last fort erected, of which there is any authentic record, stood where the St. James Hotel in Port Richmond now stands. It was the site of the residence of Decker, the tory guide, and was destroyed by Lord Stirling. A stone fort was built on the spot, and was demolished when Judge Mersereau built his handsome residence, which was afterward converted into a hotel.

It is remarkable that but four of these structures still stand to tell the story of the war on Staten Island. The writer was, however, many years ago, informed by a venerable citizen of the Island who had always taken a deep interest in the its history, and to whom we are indebted beyond measure for valuable information, that "the people who resided here immediately after the war, generally desired to be considered on the patriot side, and showed their hatred for the British by removing everything that would remind them that they once controlled this part of the country." The same venerable informant said that "although he was born here in 1789, he had not personally seen more than eight of the redoubts." His father told him where the others were located.

The British were not allowed to remain in peaceable possession of Staten Island. The first skirmish of any importance occurred on the 25th of July, when the Continental batteries at Perth Amboy opened fire on the British troops on this side of the water. The trouble began by the Continentals firing upon four or five shallops, as they were coming down the sound. The account of the event continues:

"Captain Moulder, with his two field pieces, was ordered to the shore (Perth Amboy); but being encamped at some distance, before he could come up, the shallops had all nearly past; however, he began a well directed fire, and though they had got to a considerable distance, hulled one of them.

" When the vessels were past, the firing ceased on both sides. We had the misfortune of losing one of the Second battalion, and having another wounded. * * * There was a horse killed which was standing in a wagon near the General's door. The enemy appear to have some very heavy field pieces. They sent some 12-pounders among us. It is surprising they did not do more execution, as there were so many of our people on the bank opposite to them without the least covering.

" The enemy appear to be very strong, and are constantly reinforcing, as our troops come in. They are throwing up breast-works along the shore to prevent our landing."

The American troops in New Jersey had been very busy, and by the end of July their posts opposite Staten Island were well secured. More than five thousand troops were distributed at the different stations from Newark bay down the Sound to Amboy. The headquarters were at Perth Amboy, which was considered the strongest point of the line. The strength of the British on Staten Island was unknown to them; but was believed to be about ten thousand. It is also supposed "that a considerable encampment was established behind the low bluff at Manor of Bentley, (Tottenville). One account of the engagement on the 25th says that "in less than half an hour after our fire on the shallops began, a large body were seen coming over the hill." The British were evidently as ignorant of the numbers of the Americans on the opposite shore.

The capture of New York City was what General Howe desired the most at this time, and an attack upon some other point, by which a flank movement could be effected, and the city approached by more accessible means than a direct attack, was expected. Long Island and the Jersey shore both stood in suspense, ready to take alarm at the first movements of the British in either direction. About the 8th of August deserters from the British fleet carried the news to the Americans that Howe was taking his field pieces on board and preparing for an attack by land and water simultaneously upon Long Island and the city. On the other side the people of Elizabethtown were about the same time aroused by an alarm that the regulars were about to make an immediate attack upon that point. Every man capable of bearing arms was summoned to defend it. These alarms appear to have been without important results until the latter part of the month.

The forces of General Howe, in the meantime, were strengthened by the arrival at Staten Island of the fleet which returned from South Carolina, under Generals Clinton and Cornwallis, in the early part of the month, and the first and second divisions of the foreign troops which arrived in the Lower bay on the 12th. The fleet which brought the latter numbered about one hundred and ten sail of vessels, on board of which were eight thousand Hessians and Waldeck-

ers and a few English guards. All these were sent into camp on Staten Island. Estimates of the numbers on Staten Island at this time make them to be about twenty-two thousand men. The naval forces were accommodated on board the ships "Asia" and "Eagle," each carrying sixty-four guns, and the "Roebuck" and "Phoenix," of forty-four guns each, about twenty frigates and sloops of war and above three hundred sail of transports, store ships and prizes.

The battle of Long Island—the memory of the awful carnage of which will ever send a thrill of horror and regret to every American heart—was planned in the famous old Rose and Crown farm-house at New Dorp. The state of affairs on the eve of this decisive battle is told very effectively in a private letter, written in New York, August 22d, 1776. From it we quote:

"This night we have reason to expect the grand attack from our barbarous enemies, the reasons why, fellow. The night before last,



OLD "ROSE AND CROWN" FARM HOUSE, NEW DORP, ERECTED BY THE HUGUENOTS ABOUT 1665; DEMOLISHED IN 1851.

From a sketch by Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris.

a lad went over to Staten Island, supped there with a friend and got safe back again undiscovered; soon after he went to General Washington, and upon good authority reported,—that the English army amounting to fifteen or twenty thousand, had embarked, and were in readiness for an engagement,—That seven ships of the line, and a number of other vessels of war were to surround this city and cover their landing,—That the Hessians being fifteen thousand were to remain on the Island and attack Perth Amboy, Elizabeth-town point, and Bergen, while the main body were doing their best here; that the Highlanders expected America was already conquered, and that they were only to come over and settle on our lands, for which reason they had brought their churns, ploughs, etc.; being deceived, they had refused fighting, upon which account General Howe had shot one, hung five or six, and flogged many.

"Last evening, in a violent thunder storm, Mr. ———, (a very intelligent person), ventured over. He brings much the same account as the above lad, with this addition,—That all the horses on the Island, were by Howe's orders killed, barreled up and put on board; the wretches thinking that they could get no landing here, of any

consequence and would be soon out of provision. That the Tories were used cruelly, and with the Highlanders were compelled to go on board the ships to fight in the character of common soldiers against us. The British army are prodigiously incensed against the Tories, and curse them as the instruments of the war now raging. Mr. ——— further informs that last night the fleet was to come up, but the thunder storm prevented. The truth of this appears, from the circumstances of about three thousand red coats landing at ten o'clock this morning on Long Island, where by this time it is supposed our people are hard at it. There is an abundance of smock to-day on Long Island, our folks having set fire to stacks of hay, etc., to prevent the enemy's being benefited in case they get any advantage against us. All the troops in the city are in high spirits and have been under arms most of the day, as the fleet have been in motion, and are now, as is generally thought, only waiting for a change of tide. Forty-eight hours or less, I believe, will determine it as to New York, one way or the other."

General Howe, having signified to the admiral that it was his intention to make a descent on Gravesend bay, on Long Island, on the morning of the 22d of August the necessary dispositions of the fleet were made, and seventy-five flat boats, with eleven batteaux and two galleys (built for this service) were prepared for landing the troops. Howe delegated the direction and superintendence of the embarkation of the army from Staten Island entirely to Commodore Hotham, by whom it was conducted with the greatest dispatch.

The troops who were to compose the second and third embarkations were, on the afternoon of the 21st, put on board transports which had been sent up from Sandy Hook to Staten Island for that purpose. At an early hour in the morning of the 22d, the "Phoenix," "Rose," and "Greyhound," frigates, commanded by Captains Parker, Wallace and Dickson, together with the "Thunderer" and "Carcass," bombs, under the direction of Colonel James, were placed in Gravesend bay, to cover the landing of the army.

Immediately after the covering ships had taken their respective stations, the first embarkation of the troops from Staten Island commenced. These, consisting of the light infantry and the reserve, both forming a body of four thousand men, and under the command of General Clinton, made good their landing without opposition. The transports with the brigades which composed the second debarkation, consisting of about five thousand men, moved at a little distance after the flat-boats, galleys and batteaux, and by eight o'clock were ranged on the outside of the covering ships. The transports, with the remainder of the troops, followed in close succession, and before noon fifteen thousand men and forty pieces of cannon were landed on Long Island.

Howe ordered General de Heister with two brigades of Hessians

from Staten Island, to join the army on the 25th, leaving one brigade of his troops, a detachment of the Fourteenth regiment of foot from Virginia, and some convalescents and recruits, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Dalrymple, to take care of Staten Island. The landing of the troops on Long Island was effected without opposition.

The story of the awful battle of Long Island need not be repeated here. Suffice it to say the British succeeded in gaining possession of New York, which was their main object. But to keep possession after having obtained it, required a strong force, and, in consequence, the greater part of the British forces on Staten Island were withdrawn; enough, however, were left to defend it against any force the Americans might be able to bring against it. Upon the whole, the result of the battle was beneficial to the people of Staten Island, as it left fewer soldiers here to depredate upon them, and to rob them of their property.

From British military records we learn that the state of the army on Staten Island, prior to the debarkation for Long Island, was as follows:

Commander-in-Chief, General the Honourable Sir William Howe; *Second in Command*, Lieutenant-General Henry Clinton; *Third in Command*, Right Honourable Lieutenant-General Earl Percy.

First Brigade.—Major-General Pigot; 4th Regiment, Major James Ogilvie; 15th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Bird; 27th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel J. Maxwell; 45th Regiment, Major Saxton.

Second Brigade.—Brigadier-General Agnew; 5th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Wolcot; 28th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Rob Prescott; 35th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Robert Carr; 49th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Sir Henry Calder, Bart.

Third Brigade.—Major-General Jones; 10th Regiment, Major Vassass; 37th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Robert Ambercromby; 38th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel William Butler; 52d Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Mungo Campbell.

Fourth Brigade.—Major-General James Grant; 17th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Mawhood; 40th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Grant; 46th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Enoch Markham; 55th Regiment, Captain Luke.

Fifth Brigade.—Brigadier-General Smith; 23d Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel J. Campbell; 43d Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel George Clark; 14th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Alved Clarke; 63d Regiment, Major Francis Sill.

Sixth Brigade.—Brigadier-General Gen. Robertson; 23d Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Benj. Bernard; 44th Regiment, Major Ferry Hope; 57th Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel John Campbell; 64th Regiment, Major Hugh McLeroch.

Seventh Brigade.—Brigadier-General William Erskine, quartermas-

ter-general; 17th Light Dragoons, Lieutenant-Colonel Birch; 71st Highlanders, 1st Battalion, Major John McDowell; 2d Battalion, Major Norman Lamont.

Brigade of Guards.—Major-General Matthew; Light Infantry Brigade, Brigadier-General Honourable Alexander Leslie; 1st Battalion Light Infantry, Major Thomas Musgrave; 2d Battalion Light Infantry, Major Straubenzie; 3d Battalion Light Infantry, Major Honourable John Maitland; 4th Battalion Light Infantry, Major John Johnson.

Reserve.—Right Honourable Lieutenant-General Earl of Cornwallis; Brigadier-General the Honourable John Vaughan; 33d Regiment, Lieutenant-Colonel Webster; 42d Regiment, (Royal Highland), Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Stirling; 1st Battalion Grenadiers, Lieutenant-Colonel Honourable Henry Monckton; 2d Battalion Grenadiers, Lieutenant-Colonel William Meadows; 3d Battalion Grenadiers, Major Thomas Marsh; 4th Highland Grenadiers, Major Charles Stewart; Royal Artillery and Engineers, Brigadier-General Cleveland.

CHAPTER XXIV.

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND—CONTINUED.



THE battle of Long Island, which resulted so disastrously to the Americans, caused a spirit of gloom to rest over the struggling colonists. The army of Washington had lost considerably over a thousand, while the British had lost scarcely four hundred. Generals Sullivan, Stirling and Woodhull were prisoners. The British were greatly elated with victory, and would have followed up the assault but for the prudence of their commander.¹

Fortunate would it have been for the Americans, had their ill-fortune terminated in the defeat experienced on Long Island. To other and not much less mortifying reverses they were destined, ere the deepest point of depression should be reached.

It was the ardent wish of Washington to retain possession of New York; but, finding, as he said, in a communication to Congress, the militia "dismayed and intractable," and "leaving the camp in some instances almost by regiments, by half-ones, and by companies at a time"; he was compelled to relinquish the place to his enemies, and to abandon, which he still more regretted, all the heavy artillery, and a large portion of the baggage, provisions, and military stores. On leaving the city, the American army took post on Harlem Heights.



OLD BLACK HORSE TAVERN, NEW DORP.

From a sketch by F. W. Kost in 1883, prior to its being reconstructed.

Here Washington had time to ponder upon his situation, and form his plans. His army had become seriously reduced, and from the despondency and dismay which were visible among them, it might become at any time still more reduced. On the other hand, the forces

¹ To Washington and his officers the great defect in the American army was apparent. It was twofold: first, the employment of by far too large a proportion of militia, and, secondly, the utter impracticability of introducing among them that discipline and subordination which could place them on equal footing with the practiced and veteran troops of the enemy. At length, convinced of the justness of the views of Washington on these

points, Congress decided that a regular army should be formed, in which the soldiers should be enlisted to serve during the war; and that it should consist of eighty-eight battalions, to be raised in all the provinces, according to their respective abilities. A bounty of twenty dollars and a grant of land were offered. At a subsequent date soldiers were allowed to enlist for three years; in which case, however, they were not entitled to the grant of land.

of the enemy were numerous, and withal consisted of regular and well-disciplined troops. It was futile, therefore, to attempt to maintain offensive operations against them. Far better in his judgment to risk no general engagement; but by retreating gradually before them, to lead them as far as possible from their resources; and in the mean while to inspire his own troops with courage, by engaging them in skirmishes, where success was probable. Having adopted this cautious system, he prepared to put it in practice.

A few days after the battle of Long Island Lord Howe sent General Sullivan, who was still a prisoner of war, with a verbal message to the Continental Congress, requesting that body "to appoint some of its members in a private capacity, to meet him for the purpose of adopting such measures as might be agreed upon for the restoration of peace in the country," intimating that "he was clothed with sufficient power for that purpose." On the 6th of September, 1776, Benjamin Franklin, of Pennsylvania; John Adams, of Massachusetts, and Edward Rutledge, of South Carolina, were appointed such committee, and on the 14th they met Howe at the old Billopp House, on Staten Island. The story of this event is told at some length in a previous chapter. Nothing, however, came of the interview.

After this event Lord Howe determined to effect a landing at Kipp's bay, and accordingly sent five frigates from the Staten Island fleet to that point. On the evening of the 13th they passed up the East river, where by keeping close to the Long Island shore they were able to endure without serious damage the constant fire of the Americans from the fortifications on the New York side. Three battalions of Hessians, which were encamped at Hessian Springs (near New Brighton corner), were also detailed to take part in the expedition.

Major Aaron Burr, an aide-de-camp on the staff of General Washington, a short time afterward laid before the General a well-conceived plan for capturing the fortifications on Staten Island, and thus seizing the place and holding it to the advantage of the American army. Major Burr, who was thoroughly familiar with the Island, offered to lead the expedition; but on account of his age, (being then not more than twenty-one years old), he at once became the subject of jealousy of older officers of higher rank, and Washington, after hesitating for some time, refused to grant the request of his ambitious aide. Major Burr's plans, however, were placed in other hands; but were never carried into successful effect.

The British learned of Major Burr's plans, and extra precautions were taken at all points where the Americans would be likely to make a landing. General Knyphausen, the Hessian commander, frequently sent out expeditions into New Jersey, where the most horrid atrocities were committed. These were usually not sent forth on their

errands of robbery and murder unless they were known to be much superior in number to the Continentals, who were likely to meet and oppose them, or had some other important advantage.

These predatory excursions, however, were not confined to the British. The Americans, on their part, sadly annoyed their enemies by striking at them whenever the opportunity offered. The first of these hostile demonstrations on the part of the Americans, occurred in October, 1776. General Hugh Mercer, who was in command of the American forces in that part of New Jersey contiguous to Staten Island, attempted to carry out a part of the plan of Major Burr.

Crossing to Staten Island with part of the troops posted at Perth Amboy, on the night of October 15th, he advanced to within a few miles of Richmond, at which point he had been informed three companies—one of British regulars, one of Hessians and another of Skinner's loyalists—were stationed.² Colonel Griffin was detached with Colonel Patterson's battalion and Major Clarke, at the head of some riflemen, to fall in upon the east end of Richmond village, while the remainder of the troops enclosed it on the other quarters.

Both divisions reached Richmond by break of day; but the enemy had learned of their approach through tory spies, and were prepared to flee, exchanging only a few shots with Colonel Griffin's detachment. Two of the enemy were mortally wounded, and seventeen taken prisoners, two of the Americans being killed. Colonel Griffin received a wound in the foot from a musket ball, and Lieutenant-Colonel Smith was slightly wounded in the arm.

The Americans, feeling secure in their victory, halted for a time just east of the village; but were surprised by a volley of musketry from the vicinity of St. Andrew's Church. Major Clark, with his riflemen, made a dash in that direction, and were met in front of the church by a detachment of Skinner's men. They fired a second volley and retreated into the church, which was occupied at the time as a British hospital. Major Clark at first refused to follow up the pursuit and fire upon the building; but when one of his men was shot down at his side by a musket pointed from a window, he instantly determined to retaliate.

The whole American force at that time assembled near St. Andrew's church, and Colonel Griffin, being in command, demanded the surrender of the troops huddled inside. This they refused to obey and again fired upon the Americans. Colonel Griffin ordered his troops to surround the building and to storm it. In a few moments

² There are two theories relative to the route taken by General Mercer's troops. One is that, after landing on the Island opposite Amboy, they followed the shore road to Old Blazing Star, (Rossville), where the skirmish ensued; then, taking a southeasterly course, came out on the Old Post, or Amboy road at a point east of Huguenot, and followed the

Amboy road east. Another theory is that the troops landed at Billopp's ferry (which is quite unlikely, because of the close proximity to the British redoubt), and followed the Amboy road as far as it was necessary to reach Richmond; and that the skirmish ensued in the vicinity of Giffords.

every pane of glass in the building was pierced by bullets. Not knowing that the church had been converted into an hospital, the Americans, to save ammunition, began throwing rocks into the windows, when suddenly a soldier came out of the door and said all would surrender, and pleading that they would not injure the sick inmates of the building.

Colonel Griffin, with several officers and men, entered the church, and ordered all but the sick to march out, which order they obeyed. He allowed the surgeon to return to his post. Then forming the prisoners in line, the Americans proceeded to return to Old Blazing Star landing, where boats were in waiting for them. They had gone but a short distance, when British re-inforcements reached the village and started in hot pursuit.

Fortunately for the Americans they had secured good headway, and were permitted to place themselves in ambush. Near the site of the old Bedell homestead at Fresh Kill, (Green Ridge), was a dense thicket, so large that the entire Continental force, when divided into three detachments, ready for attack, was safely concealed. The British were permitted to pass the first and second detachments; but just as they were approaching the hiding place of the third, it came out suddenly and sent a volley of musket balls into the ranks of their pursuers. This was followed by a second volley from the other detachments in the rear. The British outnumbering the Continentals, three to one, soon recovered from the shock and drove their foes at the point of the bayonet for some distance. In the skirmish several were wounded, and three British officers, including the colonel in command, were killed. The wounded were carried into the old Bedell homestead, where they were cared for as circumstances would best permit.³

In the retreat from Fresh Kill the British made three or four attacks upon the fleeing Continentals, and succeeded in re-capturing the prisoners and property which had been secured from St. Andrew's church. This consisted of about twenty-five men, forty-five muskets and other implements of war, and one standard of the British Light Horse. Boats were in waiting just below Old Blazing Star, and it was with great difficulty that the Americans crossed the kills, and not, however, without having several killed and wounded and a number taken prisoners.

Later in the month, (October, 1776), the British fleet was anchored partly at the "Watering place," (Tompkinsville), and partly in Prince's Bay, (near Segun's Point), from the latter of which troops were frequently disembarked to the Jersey shore and up the Raritan.

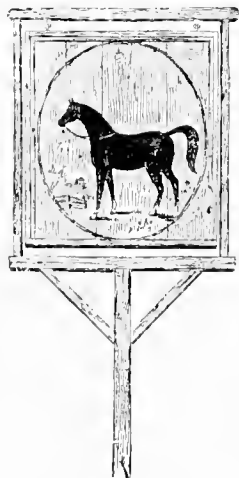
3 Marshland (Green Ridge) was an important military post during the whole of the occupancy of Staten Island by the British, and a redoubt was located near the Old House by the Mill, similar to the one still standing on the hill back of Richmond. The commandant,

together with his fellow officers, occupied the old Bedell homestead. They permitted the family to remain "at home" and care for their special wants! That was a very convenient custom which the British adopted throughout the war.

to make predatory excursions. Bergen had already been abandoned by the Americans "as a place too much exposed and of too little importance to continue to occupy in the face of the possibilities of the British falling upon the stores of hay and provision that had been gathered there."

A few weeks later, a considerable force, under Cornwallis, left Staten Island and proceeded to New Brunswick, professedly to protect the magazine there; but probably to provoke an engagement with Washington. The latter, however, refused to be drawn into an engagement to which he feared his forces were unequal; but spread his armies over the Jerseys, taking positions at Newark, Elizabeth and Woodbridge, thus commanding the coast opposite to Staten Island. In these towns he established his army during the remainder of the winter. His troops became very alert in the meantime, and any attempt to dislodge them would have been attended with great hazard and loss. An English authority relates the position from their standpoint as follows:

"Of all the great conquests which his Majesty's troops had made in the Jerseys, Brunswick and Amboy were the only two places of any note which they retained after the action at Princetown; and however brilliant their success in the beginning of the campaign, they reaped little advantage from them when the winter advanced, and the contiguity of so vigilant an enemy forced them to perform the severest duty."⁴



ORIGINAL SIGN OF THE
BLACK HORSE.

General Mercer planned a second invasion of Staten Island, in the latter part of October, purposing to cross the Sound from the mouth of Thompson's Creek, a little below Elizabeth Town Point, to the New Blazing Star, [Linoleumville]. Major Knowlton was to head the Continental troops. The first division marched to the creek by nine o'clock in the evening. The Pennsylvania troops, attached to the Flying Camp, were to follow; in all about thirteen hundred men. But the Pennsylvanians had marched that day from New

Brunswick, and were completely exhausted on their arrival. A tremendous thunder storm also came on, making it impracticable to

4 Last Wednesday noon a soldier belonging to one of the regiments on Staten Island, being in liquor, and having wandered from his companions, got upon the meadows near Elizabeth Town Point, which being observed by Colonel Smith, who had the command that day at the Point, he sent over a party of men who took him prisoner.

Yesterday nine of our Riflemen crossed the river [sound] in order to harass some Regulars who were throwing up a kind of breastwork on a bridge for their enemies, who kept firing

on our men for some time, without doing any execution, till one of the brave fellows went within a few yards of the enemy, and desired them to surrender. At that instant he received a ball through his head, which killed him on the spot. The Colonel sent over a flag of truce [to Holland's Hook] to the commanding officer on the Island, desiring leave to bring off his man, which the officer very politely agreed to, and let him take the man, rifle and his accoutrements.—*American Archives, 17th Series.*

cross the Sound, and the expedition was reluctantly abandoned. About this time Governor Tryon wrote from Staten Island to Lord Germain:

“The whole armament destined for this part of America, except the last division of the Hessians, being now assembled here, I expect, by the courage and strength of this noble Army, tyranny will be crushed and legal government restored. Yesterday evening S^r Peter Parker brought into the Hook a Fleet of Twenty-five Sail from the Southward.” (N. Y. Col. Doc.)

During the latter part of autumn and the winter General Howe, with the approval and assistance of his brother, Lord Howe, was employed in forming several provincial corps from the Americans, British and Irish “who had separated from their countrymen of their own choice, or had been obliged to leave their homes because of the tory sentiments they expressed.” These new levies strengthened the British army by several thousand men. A comparatively large number of Staten Islanders were among them. They were placed on the same footing, as to pay, subsistence and clothing, as the regular troops. As a further encouragement to the privates and non-commissioned officers, they were at the end of the war to receive certain proportions of land, according to the rank which they might then hold. These provincials were placed under command of Governor Tryon, who had been appointed a major-general, and part of them were stationed on Staten Island.

A detachment of British troops, under Major Gordon, in February, 1777, marched from Richmond to Cole’s ferry [in the Narrows] where they embarked for Sandy Hook, where it was learned a considerable body of American troops were stationed. After being detained on board by bad weather and violent winds for three days, they, numbering about two hundred, effected a landing on the beach about two miles below the American posts, which they surprised before daylight in the morning. The Americans were driven from the Neversink hills, sustaining a loss of several killed and seventy-four taken prisoners.

On the 27th of February, Major Tympany crossed from Staten Island to Elizabethtown with about sixty men on a foraging expedition. He came into collision with a body of Americans, two or three of whom he killed; he then returned to the Island, bringing with him four or five prisoners and ten head of cattle.

Early in March a detachment of American troops came down the Jersey shore and fired on some boats that were taking in forage at New Blazing Star, on the Island. Major Tympany thereupon crossed the Kills with about forty men and pursued the Americans about three miles, on his return bringing back ten head of cattle and thirty sheep.

In the early part of June, 1777, Howe and a large portion of his

army were crossing New Jersey. The objective point was Philadelphia. During the early part of the preceding winter the army had reached Trenton; but at the time when it seemed as though nothing lay in the way of their marching to Philadelphia and gaining an easy victory, a sudden and unaccountable apathy seemed to seize the British commander, and he rested until the army of Washington was in a better position to resist his own progress. By this time Howe's army had returned to Perth Amboy, and the project of reaching Philadelphia by land seemed to be abandoned. Another attempt, however, was made to draw Washington away from his fortifications, so that the British army could surround him.

Having retreated slowly across the State, while General Greene was harrassing his rear, he prepared to cross from Perth Amboy to Staten Island, having determined to reach Philadelphia by water. Throwing a pontoon-bridge, which had been constructed for crossing the Delaware, across to Staten Island, he sent the heavy baggage and all the incumbrances of his army over to the Island under the escort of some troops, while preparations were making for the passage of the rest of the army. Intelligence of this was received by Washington, who supposed that the British army was retreating in earnest, under a misapprehension of the strength of his own army. He accordingly descended from the hilly country where he was entrenched, and moved forward as though pursuing a flying enemy.

General Howe, evidently thinking he had gained his point, determined to force his way between Washington and the mountains, and compel him to a general action on his own terms, or cut off some of his troops if he should retreat. He accordingly returned to Perth Amboy, and on the 26th of June put his army in motion, advancing towards the pursuing forces of Washington. The forces came into collision and the British pursued as far as Westfield [N. J.]; but finding, as a British chronicler states, "that the caution and prudence of General Washington had rendered his scheme abortive," General Howe returned with his army to Perth Amboy on the second day after the expedition against Washington, and on the 29th passed again over to Staten Island. In the meantime Washington wrote to Congress from the camp at Middlebrook, June 28th, as follows:

"SIR:—On Thursday morning General Howe advanced with his whole army in several columns from Amboy, as far as Westfield. We are certainly informed, that the troops sent to Staten Island returned the preceding evening, and it is said with an augmentation of marines; so that carrying them there was a feint, to deceive us."⁵

5 The campaign of General Howe in New Jersey and its results, were summed up by a writer of the time as follows: "Since our last we have certain intelligence, that soon after the skirmish with Lord Stirling's division, as mentioned in our last, the enemy fled off from Westfield to Amboy, and from thence to Staten

Island, and left us in entire possession of New Jersey, in a small part of which they had been pent'd up for six months, unable to do any great matters, except stealing a few cattle, and making Whigs of the wavering and diffident."—*American Archives*.

General Howe, having determined to approach Philadelphia by water, began early in July, 1777, the embarkation of his army from Staten Island. On the 5th he began placing on board of transports such corps as he wished to take with him, amounting to thirty-six battalions of British and Hessians, including the light infantry and grenadiers, the Queen's Rangers, considerable artillery, and a regiment of light dragons. The troops that remained in the vicinity of New York were placed under command of General Clinton, while under him General Knyphausen had command of Staten Island, with headquarters in the old Rose and Crown farm-house at New Dorp. Though preparations began thus early, it was not until the 23d of the month that the fleet, consisting of two hundred and sixty-seven sail, passed outside of Sandy Hook.⁶ About three thousand troops were left on the Island. The principal part of this number were two regiments of Hessians, some British and provincial troops.

A detachment of Americans, under Major Irving, crossed the Kills early in August, landing at Decker's ferry, and directed their course for Richmond. Near the village they were met by a detachment of British regulars who, after a slight resistance retreated and took refuge in St. Andrew's church. A second time the Americans riddled the windows of the old edifice with bullets, and a second time they were driven away. The Americans retreated down the Fresh Kill road, the British failing to overtake them until they reached the ravine known as La Forge's Corner. The Americans concealed themselves in a cornfield and attacked the British from ambush. At the first volley the British commander was killed. They had considerable difficulty in crossing the Kills, being fired upon. A number were killed and wounded. The prisoners they had taken at Richmond were driven into a barnyard and allowed to remain there.

Lieutenant-Colonel Dongan and Major Drummond, of the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, with about sixty men, made a raid into New Jersey, on the 19th of the same month. They marched about twenty-seven miles into the interior, on the way capturing fourteen prisoners, about seventy cattle and horses, and twenty stand

⁶ At this time there seems to have been a desire on the part of the British to starve out the "rebels," or at least to weaken and perplex them by preventing their obtaining any supplies from New York either directly or through Staten Island. To carry this out all commerce between here and the Jerseys was prohibited. It was difficult, however, to enforce such prohibition. On the 17th of July, Sir William Howe issued a proclamation relating to the cargoes of vessels arriving at the port of New York. He appointed Andrew Elliot, Esq., superintendent of all imports and exports passing between New York and Long Island and Staten Island, and in order that the inhabitants of the latter Island might be furnished with necessary supplies, and at the

same time to prevent supplies being conveyed to the "rebels" through these channels, he ordered that no craft of any kind should carry from the city to either of these islands, without special permit from the superintendent's office, any larger quantities of rum, spirits, sugar, or molasses than one barrel of each, or of salt exceeding four bushels. No quantity of any other kind of merchandise larger than might be considered sufficient for the use of one family should be taken at one time. The penalty for the violation of the restrictions of this proclamation was forfeiture of the vessel, large or small, and the goods found on board, and imprisonment of the master in charge. Similar proclamations were subsequently issued.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

of arms, besides destroying a quantity of powder, shot, salt and rum. The transporting of prisoners and stock across the sound at Amboy was covered by a guard on the Jersey side.

On the 22d of August, 1777, occurred one of the most important engagements of the war on Staten Island. General Sullivan, of the American forces, being then stationed at Hanover, N. J., about twenty miles from Elizabeth, determined to make reprisals for the predatory raids that the British troops on Staten Island had been making into New Jersey. He was informed that the British forces were distributed on the Island about as follows: Major Van Buskirk,⁷ with the Fourth Battalion, Skinner's Brigade, with two hundred and fifty, at Decker's ferry, (Port Richmond); Lieutenant-Colonel Barton,⁸ with the Fifth Battalion of the same Brigade, numbering about two hundred and fifty, near the New Blazing Star ferry, (Linoleumville); Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Vaughan Dongan, with the



LORD CORNWALLIS.

Third Battalion of the same brigade, on the Morning Star road, in Northfield, and Lieutenant-Colonel Allen, of the Sixth Battalion, near the Amboy road, with about one hundred men each, and two regiments of British regulars, two of Anspachers and one of Waldeckers were encamped by the fortifications near the "Watering Place," (Tompkinsville), their numbers being unknown.

The experience of General Sullivan taught him that any movement of the troops by daylight, in the country near the shore, would certainly be reported by Tories in time to allow the enemy an opportunity to prepare for defense. To avoid this a long march by night was the only resource. Accordingly the troops at Hanover were put in motion at about three o'clock in the afternoon of the 21st. These were selected from the brigades of Generals Smallwood and DeBorre, and numbered about one thousand men, who were supposed to be most ably prepared to endure a long march. The body reached Elizabethtown at about ten o'clock in the evening.

In order to make a simultaneous attack on two different points

⁷ Abraham Van Buskirk entered the service November 16th, 1776, with the rank of major, and in 1778, he was commissioned a Lieutenant-colonel of the Fourth Battalion [Skinner's Brigade]. In 1782 and in 1783 he was in command of the Third Battalion. He distinguished himself, with his battalion, at the attack on Fort Griswold, in the harbor of New London, Connecticut, and in the massacre which followed, and is spoken of in report by Arnold with applause for his great services. He did not remain in the United States after the war; but removed immediately to Shel-

burne, Nova Scotia, and became mayor of the city.—*General Wm. S. Stegler's History of Skinner's Brigade.*

⁸ Joseph Barton appears on the rolls of 1778 as in command as Lieutenant-colonel of the Fifth Battalion, [Skinner's Brigade], and, in the following year, of the First Battalion. He was captured by the patriots under Generals Stirling and Sullivan, on Staten Island, August 22d, 1777. He left the service in 1781. Very little is known of his personal history.—*General Wm. S. Stegler's History of Skinner's Brigade.*

on the Island, the forces were divided. Colonel Ogden, with his own and Colonel Dayton's regiment, (both of the New Jersey line), joined by one hundred militia under Colonel Frelinghuysen, marched from Elizabethtown in the evening to a point opposite the entrance to the Fresh Kill, where they were conveyed by boats across the sound and up the creek, their object being to attack Lawrence's battalion in the rear. The remainder of the troops crossed from Elizabethtown point, approaching the Island in the vicinity of Palmer's Run, on the North shore. General Smallwood's brigade was to attack Van Buskirk's battalion, and General De Borre's brigade was to attack Barton's, each leaving one regiment on the road, (Richmond terrace), to cover their rear, and to pick up such as might escape Colonel Ogden or the attacking parties. Colonel Ogden was ordered to move forward, should he complete the reduction of Lawrence's battalion, and attack Dongan and Allen; otherwise to hold his ground till General Sullivan came up from the north side to join him. Some difficulty was experienced on the water, on account of a scarcity of boats; but the whole force was safely landed on the Island before daylight, without being discovered by the British.

Ogden attacked Lawrence about daybreak, and after an engagement of two or three minutes succeeded in routing him, taking the colonel himself and about eighty non-commissioned officers and privates prisoners. He next attacked Dongan, on the Morning Star road, (about midway between the shore and Graniteville). The troops came together in a hand-to-hand contest, and while Colonel Dongan was encouraging his men he received a bullet in his body, which incapacitated him from further service. He died in a hospital on the following day. Major Drummond assumed command, and his troops were driven back to a point near Giffords, where they were joined by Lieutenant-Colonel Allen. Another spirited fight ensued; the whole were finally driven back to the neighborhood of Prince's Bay, where they sought refuge in the intrenchments. Colonel Ogden then fell back toward Old Blazing Star and waited for General Sullivan. In the meantime the alarm had reached General John Campbell, the British commander at Fort Hill, (above St. George), and he at once marched with the Fifty-second British Regulars and Third battalion of Waldeckers toward Richmond, under the supposition that that point would be approached by the invaders.

Very soon after the attack made by Colonel Ogden, General Sullivan moved with De Borre's brigade to attack Colonel Barton's battalion that lay at the New Blazing Star. He found the latter ready to receive him; but upon the main body moving up to charge, they broke ranks and fled. Sullivan had stationed Colonel Price off to the right to prevent the escape of the enemy; but many of them seized the boats that lay at the ferry and crossed to the Jersey shore,

while others being acquainted with the intricacies of the woods, were able to evade their pursuers. A considerable number of arms, blankets, hats, etc., was taken, and about forty privates, with Lieutenant-Colonel Barton himself, were made prisoners. A barn and about thirty-five tons of hay were burned. In the meantime, a detachment of Sullivan's troops, under command of Major Pearce, which landed too late to join the main body mistook their course and moved in an easterly direction. They found but a few men in the redoubt, (which stood on the site of the Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton), which they took prisoners, and proceeded in the direction of Kruzer's Cove, where they encountered a superior force of General Skinner's troops, the Kruzer, or Pelton, house being his headquarters. The Americans were obliged to make a hasty retreat, leaving at that place the prisoners they had taken.

General Smallwood, with his brigade, landed at Decker's ferry. Near the Dutch church he attacked Lieutenant-Colonel Van Buskirk's troops. General Smallwood's guide led him to the front of the battalion, instead of the rear. But there was nothing left to do but to advance, which the Americans did in solid column. Upon the first fire the British broke and fled to the redoubts along the North and East shores, where they were rallied by General Skinner, and there they pursued the retiring Americans with the other regiments under General Campbell. Smallwood's brigade captured Barton's stand of colors, destroyed his tents and a quantity of stores. Smallwood's men also destroyed several vessels belonging to the British, which lay in the Kills, near the entrance to Palmer's Run.

The forces of General Sullivan and Smallwood now effected a junction, and moved in the direction of Richmond to join the detachment under Colonel Ogden. Before reaching the village they branched off to the right and marched to Old Blazing Star where they found that Ogden, after waiting till longer delay seemed unnecessarily hazardous, had sent his troops across the river. General Sullivan had sent a messenger to bring the boats from Elizabethtown point down the Kills to help transfer his men across; but the messenger was detained on the way, and the boats failed to come.

In this emergency General Sullivan began at once to transport his men by means of three boats which Ogden had used; but before this could be accomplished the accumulated forces of Campbell, Skinner, Allen and Drummond were closing in upon him, and cutting off his chances of escape. "The rear was now covered by about eighty of Smallwood's Marylanders, commanded by Majors Stewart and Tillard, who ably maintained the honorable reputation of that brigade by their unflinching tenacity against overpowering odds."

The bravery of this little party was highly commended by General Sullivan and others at the time. "By their determination the enemy was held back until all the troops except this company were safely

conveyed across the river. So hotly did they contest the approach of the enemy that the latter were several times driven back with great confusion. They were, however, forced to retire and take new positions near the water, until they stood within twenty rods of the shore."

The British at last brought up several pieces of artillery, which, with "grape and canister," so commanded the water that the boatmen refused to face the fire and move after the rear guard. Seeing this, and their ammunition also giving out, this little band of heroes at last surrendered, though several of them escaped, seven of them swimming across the channel, and others, perhaps, being drowned in the attempt. About forty of them were taken prisoners."

In a letter to Congress General Sullivan urged an investigation into his conduct relating to this affair, in order to clear himself of some charges which he regarded as unjust, giving a summary of it in the following language:

"In this expedition we landed on an island possessed by the enemy; put to rout six regiments; killed, wounded and made prisoners at least four or five hundred of the enemy; vanquished every party that collected against us; destroyed there great quantities of stores; took one vessel, and destroyed six; took a considerable number of arms, blankets, many cattle, horses, etc.; marched victorious through the island, and in the whole course of the day, lost not more than one hundred and fifty men, most of which were lost by the imprudence of themselves, and officers. Some few, indeed, were lost by cross-accidents, which no human foresight could have prevented."

The British on Staten Island rested less easily after this memorable day. They were far more watchful, and were constantly suspicious of another attack. Rivington's *Gazette*, of October 25th, contained the following paragraph bearing upon the subject:

"By a Gentleman who has lately escaped from confinement in New Jersey, we have been favoured with the following particulars: * * * It is imagined that another expedition is determined upon against Staten-Island under the command of Mr. Philemon Dickenson, who has assembled near 400 men about Elizabeth Town; boats and scows are also prepared, with a floating raft, to cross Bridge creek, and thereby secure a retreat to the point. Gen. Sullivan was, on his late unsuccessful attempt on this island, highly reprehended for not using this expedient, and, as he has been again blamed for his conduct at Brandywine, in Pennsylvania, he some time ago resigned his commission in disgust, and withdrew himself from the rebel army."

9 Various estimates were given as to the losses in this day's engagement on Staten Island. The total loss to the British was one hundred and thirty privates and eleven officers taken prisoners, and probably twenty-five to one hundred killed and wounded; while that of the Americans, was ten killed, fifteen

wounded, and one hundred and twenty-seven privates and nine officers taken prisoners. Besides this the British lost arms, baggage, and a number of cattle carried away and stores and vessels destroyed, while the Americans lost a few whale boats, which Campbell's command succeeded in capturing.—*American Archives*.

CHAPTER XXV.

HOSTILITIES ON STATEN ISLAND.—CONCLUDED.



URING the month of November, 1777, a number of raids were made by the American troops stationed at Elizabethtown. On the night of Tuesday, the 18th, just before the rising of the moon, a detachment crossed over on the meadows, west of Holland's Hook, where they concealed themselves until they could have the advantage of the moonlight, when they surprised the British pickets near the redoubts, and then engaged in a brisk skirmish, but were defeated and compelled to retreat back to Elizabethtown.

On the following day the Holland's Hook redoubts were attacked



OLD BEDELL HOMESTEAD, GREEN RIDGE; ERECTED ABOUT 1670.

again, but without success. Early on Thursday, the 20th, the New Jersey brigade, under command of General Philemon Dickenson, landed on the Island in the vicinity of St. George, and advanced upon the encampments of General Campbell, whose headquarters were on Fort Hill. Immediately after opening fire upon the British,

General Dickenson discovered re-inforcements and several ships of war approaching the Island. Knowing that he would be overpowered by numbers, he gave orders to retire from the scene, and with the loss of a few men whom the British captured, the Americans made good their escape to the Jersey shore. Several other raids were made without material success to the Americans.

General Clinton issued a remarkable proclamation, on December 20th, 1777, regulating the prices of farm products, as follows:¹

"WHEREAS, it is consonant not only to the common principles of humanity, but to the wisdom and policy of all well regulated states, in certain exigencies to guard against the extortion of individuals, who raise the necessaries of life, without which other parts of the community cannot subsist; and whereas the farmers of Long Island and Staten Island are possessed of great quantities of Wheat, Rye, and Indian Corn, for sale, beyond what they want for their own consumption, and it is highly unreasonable that those who may stand in need of those articles, should be left at the mercy of the farmer, and whereas it is equally just and reasonable that every encouragement should be given to the industry of the husbandman; * * * and whereas the present rates at which Wheat, Flour, Rye-meal, and Indian Meal are sold, do vastly exceed in proportion the advanced price of those articles which the farmer stands in need of purchasing, * * * do hereby order and direct that the prices to be hereafter demanded for the said articles shall not exceed the following rates:

"A Bushel of Wheat Weighing Fifty Eight Pounds, *Twelve Shillings*, with an Allowance, or deduction in proportion for a greater or lesser weight.

"A Bushel of Rye, or Indian Corn, *Seven Shillings*.

"Merchantable Wheat Flour, *Thirty-five Shillings* per Cwt.

"Rye Flour, *Twenty Shillings* per Cwt.

"Indian Meal, *Seventeen Shillings* per Cwt."

There was a further stipulation in the proclamation that the farmers of these two Islands should at once make returns to the commanding officers of militia in their respective localities, showing the quantity of each kind of grain they had, and what quantity they would need for the use of their families during the year. He also ordered the farmers to thresh one-third of their grain at once; another third by the third of February, and the remaining third by the first

¹ Some difficulty seems at this time to have been experienced in enforcing the restrictions against the exportation of salt from New York to Staten Island, by which channel that article of necessity was smuggled into New Jersey. By a proclamation on the 15th of November, Clinton directed that the inhabitants of Staten Island should be allowed to carry salt for their family use, not exceeding three bushels for a family, on obtaining a certificate from a justice of the peace, attesting that they were proper

persons to be trusted with it. This regulation soon fell into abuse, and on the 18th it was amended by a further proclamation that all persons from the Island applying for a permit to carry salt thither must have a certificate from either General Campbell or General Skinner, and authority was given to anyone who should intercept any person carrying salt without the requisite permit, to seize and appropriate the salt to his own use and purposes.—*Preston's History of Richmond County*.

of the following May. A refusal to comply with any of the requirements set forth in the proclamation should be punishable by confiscation of the entire crop of grain belonging to such offender, and imprisonment of his person.

The prisoners taken in the raid of General Dickenson, in the preceding November, were still in the possession of the Americans at the commencement of the year 1778, and some had been summarily dealt with. In consequence the following correspondence passed between General Robertson, the commanding officer at New York, and Governor Livingston, of New Jersey:

“ New York, January 4, 1778.

“ Sir:—I am interrupted in my daily attempts to soften the calamities of prisoners, and reconcile their care with our security, by a general cry of resentment, arising from an information—

“ That officers in the King’s service taken on the 27th of November, and Mr. John Brown, a deputy-commissary, are to be tried in Jersey for high treason; and that Mr. Hiff and another prisoner have been hanged.

“ Though I am neither authorized to threaten or to sooth, my wish to prevent an increase of horrors, will justify my using the liberty of an old acquaintance, to desire your interposition to put an end to, or prevent measures which, if pursued on one side would tend to prevent every act of humanity on the other, and render every person who exercises this to the King’s enemies, odious to his friends.

“ I need not point out to you all the cruel consequences of such a procedure. I am hopeful you’ll prevent them, and excuse this trouble from, Sir,

“ Your most obedient and humble servant,

“JAMES ROBERTSON.

“ N. B. At the moment that the cry of murder reached my ears, I was signing orders, that Fell’s request to have the liberty of the city, and Colonel Reynold to be set free on his parole, should be complied with. I have not recalled the order, because tho’ the evidence be strong, I can’t believe it possible, a measure so cruel and impolitic, could be adopted where you bear sway.

“ To William Livingston, Esq., &c., &c.”

Immediately upon the receipt of this letter Governor Livingston replied as follows:

“ January 7, 1778.

“ Sir:—Having received a letter under your signature, dated the 4th instant, which I have some reason to think you intended for me, I sit down to answer your inquiries concerning certain officers in the service of your King, taken on Staten Island, and one Browne who calls himself a deputy commissary; and also respecting one Hiff and another prisoner, (I suppose you must mean John Magee, he having shared the fate you mention), who have been hanged.

" Buskirk, Earl and Hammel, who are, I presume, the officers intended, with the said Browne, were sent to me by General Dickenson as prisoners taken on Staten Island. Finding them all to be subjects of this state, and to have committed treason against it, the Council of Safety committed them to Trenton goal. At the same time I acquainted General Washington, that if he chose to treat the three first who were British officers, as prisoners of war, I doubted not the Council of Safety would be satisfied. General Washington has since informed me that he intends to consider them as such; and they are therefore at his service, whenever the Commissary of Prisoners shall direct concerning them. Browne, I am told, committed several robberies in this state before he took sanctuary on Staten Island, and I should scarcely imagine that he has expiated the guilt of his former crimes by committing the greater one of joining the enemies of his country. However, if General Washington chooses to consider him also a prisoner of war, I shall not interfere in the matter.

" Iliff was executed after a trial by jury for enlisting our subjects, himself being one, as recruits in the British army, and he was apprehended on his way with them to Staten Island. Had he never been subject to this state, he would have forfeited his life as a spy. Magee was one of his company, and had also procured our subjects to enlist in the service of the enemy.

" If these transactions, Sir, should induce you to countenance greater severities toward our people, whom the fortune of war has thrown into your power, than they have already suffered, you will pardon me for thinking that you go farther out of your way to find palliatives for inhumanity, than necessity seems to require; and if this be the cry of murder to which you allude as having reached your ears, I sincerely pity your ears for being so frequently assaulted with the cries of murder much more audible, because less distant, I mean the cries of your prisoners who are constantly perishing in the goals of New York (the coolest and most deliberate kind of murder) from the rigorous manner of their treatment.

" I am with due respect,

" Your most humble servant,

" WILLIAM LIVINGSTON.

" James Robertson, Esq., &c., &c.

" P. S. You have distinguished me by a title which I have neither authority nor ambition to assume. I know of no man, Sir, who *bears sway* in this State. It is our peculiar felicity, and our superiority over the tyrannical system we have discarded, that we are not swayed by men. In New Jersey, Sir, the laws alone *bear sway*."

A great deal of smuggling was carried on during the winter of 1777-8, which taxed the genius of General Clinton to the utmost to prevent. He appointed Alexander Gardiner wharf officer of Staten Island, and required all vessels carrying goods to the Island to land them at

Cole's ferry and nowhere else, "and there all cargoes should be inspected by the said officer, who would allow goods to be taken thence to their places of destination on the Island." This officer was also authorized "to seize and confiscate all goods not corresponding to the superintendent's permit accompanying them, and also to seize and confiscate any vessel found employed in such illicit traffic."

Early in the morning of June 10th, 1778, three boats were loaded with men at Elizabethtown, and proceeded down the Sound to the mouth of the Fresh Kill, and landing between the Blazing Star and Barut Island, in the mouth of the Kill, they surprised the pickets; but being unable to drive them back they retired and waited on the Jersey Shore until near daybreak, when they returned with reinforcements and made another effort to land in the same place, under cover of their

batteries. They met with such vigorous resistance from Skinner's Brigade, which was guarding that point, that they were obliged to abandon the undertaking.



LORD STIRLING.

The British on the Island were thoroughly alarmed in the meantime, and a section of the Royal artillery, which had been posted at one of the redoubts between Ryers' and Cole's ferries, was brought to the scene of action, throwing solid shot from two six-pounders, and the infantry that could be spared from various other posts also received orders for a forced march. The Americans retired in time to prevent a serious conflict.

There was very little transpiring on the Island during the summer of 1778. "The operations between hostile forces were mainly confined to the petty depredations, smuggling and raiding of foraging parties on a small scale, which were of too frequent and continual occurrence to be worthy of special remark." On September 10th the Commissary of Forage required the farmers to thresh out their grain at once, "as the Straw is wanted for use of his Majesty's troops," for which they were to be paid legal rates on delivery at the magazine at Cole's ferry.

On September 30th, in the evening, an expedition having been fitted out with troops, it "embarked from Staten Island, set sail for Little Egg Harbor, off which point it arrived on the 5th of October, having been delayed by adverse winds."

The "hard winter" of 1779-80 caused proclamations to be issued, fixing the prices of various common necessities as follows: "Walnut cordwood, or any other kind of wood, four pounds per cord; upland hay, eight shillings per cwt.; salt hay, four shillings per cwt.; straw, three shillings per cwt.; Indian corn, ten shillings per bushel; oats, seven shillings per bushel."

The proclamation was issued in November, and it was well that the Commander thus made early preparation for the needs of his army. He required all persons who had obtained permission to cut wood "off certain lands on Long Island and Staten Island immediately to bring what wood they have cut to this market," and required all owners of woodlands on those Islands to cut and cart their wood to the most contiguous landings in such proportion "as will fully answer the intent and meaning of this proclamation, and prevent the disagreeable necessity of granting permission for their wood to be cut by others." At a later period in the winter, General James Robertson, then acting Governor of the province of New York, issued a proclamation forbidding the cutting of wood on the estates of persons "supposed to be in rebellion."

Another important attempt was made to invade the Island during the winter.² General Stirling was dispatched with a body of the troops to attack the outposts of the enemy on Staten Island. They proceeded in sleighs, and crossed the Kills on the ice to a point about where the long dock at Ehu Park is located, and proceeded in an easterly direction along the shore. General Stirling's troops numbered about two thousand and five hundred men. When the old Mill road, (Columbia street, West New Brighton), was reached, the force was divided, one division, under General Stirling, continuing along the shore, and the other, under General Dickenson, going out Mill road as far as Dongan's mill.

The night of the 14th, on which the Americans made this long passage from camp to the designed scene of action, was a starry night, bright and clear; but so intensely cold that about one-third of the men were more or less injured by the frost. The plan was to surprise General Skinner's Brigade; but it was soon discovered that their designs had been anticipated by the enemy, information having reached them through tory friends. General Stirling continued eastward along the shore to a point near the Cove, at West New Brighton, General Skinner's headquarters, where the British troops were centralized and prepared for action.³ On discovering the odds he would have to en-

2 This is remembered as the hard winter of 1779-80. The American forces were quartered in New Jersey for the winter, but poorly clothed, provisioned, and armed. General Washington, in his quarters at Morristown, planned this expedition, and left its direction to General Stirling. From their peculiar exposure and sufferings at the moment, the commander-in-chief, perhaps, suggested this attack, to divert the minds of his discontented men from their numerous and fearful forebodings. The American army was then encamped on the hills back of Morristown, the encampment extending several miles into the country. Their canvas tents afforded but a miserable security from the rain, sleet, and snow. On the 3d of January came one of the most tremendous snow storms ever remembered. Some

of their sheltering hovels and tents were blown down and torn to pieces, and the soldiers became like sheep under the snow, which fell to a depth of from four to six feet. So obstructed were the roads as to prevent the usual receipt of supplies, and for ten days each man had but two pounds of meat, and some even were entirely destitute. — *American Archives*.

3 There is a popular tradition to the effect that Lord Stirling, the American commander of this expedition, had a personal encounter with General Skinner on this occasion, and that he shot General Skinner in front of the Kreuzer House, (now known as the Pelton House, still standing); and that General Skinner was carried into the house and soon expired. There is no truth whatever in the

counter General Stirling deemed it unadvisable to make an assault.

The Americans spent the day of the 15th of January, (1780), and the following night on the Island, "in snow waist-deep, protecting themselves as well as they could from the inclement weather by making huge fires of the cordwood which they found piled up where they halted." During the day the British sent a boat to New York, which returned at evening with reinforcements. General Stirling withdrew his troops to Elizabethtown on the morning of the 16th. His official report concludes with the following statement:

"The retreat was effected in good order, and with very little loss. A party of the enemy's horse charged our rear guard under Major Edwards, but was immediately repulsed. The Major had three men killed. Some few of the men were frost-bitten, and though we took all the pains in our power to have all those unable to march transported in sleighs, yet I imagine a very few have been left behind.

"Immediately after crossing, a party was detached under Lieutenant Colonel Willett, to Decker's house, [Port Richmond]. The corps there had been alarmed and barely made its escape. The house as a garrison place and 8 or 9 small vessels were burned. A considerable quantity of blankets and other stores were found.

"While the troops were upon the Island, a number of persons from this side [Elizabethtown] took advantage of the occasion to pass upon the Island, and plunder the people there in the most shameful and merciless manner. Many of them were stopped on their return, and their booty taken from them. In addition to which, I have sent an order for publication, requiring those who had eluded the search to restore the articles in their possession, and exhorting the good people at large, to assist in detecting them. All the soldiery on recrossing the ice were searched, and the little plunder they had taken from them, and their names noted, that they might be brought to punishment. The articles recovered are, and will be deposited with the Rev'd Mr. Caldwell, who is exerting himself in the affair, to be returned to the owners. I am happy to inform your Excellency, that a very inconsiderable part indeed, of the troops, dishonored themselves, by participating in these enormities."

Much additional light is thrown upon the expedition by the following extract from a letter written by an officer on board the British brig "Hawk," anchored off Staten Island at the time:

"On the 15th inst, at Day break, the Alarm was given, that the Rebels were on Staten Island, an Express was sent on board from Gen. Sterling to prepare for Action; we immediately got a Spring on our Cable and cleared Ship, the Rebels appeared on the Hill over the Ferry, and brought a Field Piece to bear upon us, which we perceiv-

ment. In B that has been written about General Skinner there is nothing to prove that he was ever wounded. An official record says:

He continued through life on the half pay

list of the British government as a general officer, and he died at Bristol, (England), March 15th, 1799."

ing, fired our bow Gun twice at them, the second shot roused them from a Meal they were making of broiled Beef Stakes; their Fire from the Field Piece was well directed, but the Shot fell short of us some Yards. A large Party of Rebels came down to burn the Houses and Forage, we fired on them, shot one Man's Arm off; he bled to death and now lays in the snow; our Firing made them retreat as fast as possible up the Hill to the main Body (which by the Information of two Prisoners and a Deserter that we had on board, consisted of 4,000 Foot, 200 Horse, 6 Brass Field Pieces 6 Pounders and a Number of Artillery Men) Gen. Skinner sent a Letter on board, thanking us for the Service we did. 'Tis certain that the 'Hawk' prevented the Forage, the Tavern, and all the Houses in that Neighborhood from being burnt. A Number of Men, Women and Children came on board for Refuge with their Goods and Effects."

General Knyphausen, the Hessian commander on Staten Island, resolved early in June, 1780, to make an incursion into New Jersey, the village of Springfield being the first to which his efforts were directed. The 6th of June—"the very day, when, as afterwards appeared, a vast body of rioters were, and during the next day continued to be, pillaging and burning the metropolis of the Empire, and were masters of London." Of the inception of the invasion, Governor Robertson reports to Lord Germain as follows:

"On the 6th of June we sail'd with as many troops as could safely be spared from the defence of this Province—6,000—to Staten Island; from thence we landed our advance guard the same night at Elizabeth Town, where they waited the landing of a second embarkation by the return of the boats—these Bodys moved on, with orders to try to surprise Maxwell's Brigade of Jersey Troops, stationed near to the road we marched by, to endeavor to get possession of the strong post at Short Hills, to await there the arrival of the third embarkation of the army—from whence if our intelligence should show circumstances favorable, it was intended to march directly with the whole against Washington, who had been sending his stores against Morristown, but was still enumbered there with a great many."

The Coldstream Guards, under the command of General Edward Mathew, sailing down the bay, disembarked at Staten Island, where they were joined by other troops, regulars and provincials. Here they were formed into three divisions; the first under command of Brigadier-General Sterling; the second, under Brigadier-General Mathew; the third, comprising the Coldstream Guards, and others, under Major-General Tryon—the whole, under the general command of Major-General Knyphausen. As soon as they formed, they marched to the Holland's Hook landing, opposite Elizabethtown Point, arriving in the night, and unobserved. The first division crossed the water in flat-boats, and landed on the meadows, near the Point, where they halted until, in like manner, the second and third, with the light ar-

tillery, had crossed, the day before. Early on Wednesday morning the whole force were in motion. Sterling, being the youngest general, led the advance.

In the meantime, word was brought to Colonel Dayton, of the Jersey Brigade, that the British were at the Point. Having reconnoitred the position, he stationed a guard of twelve men at the eastern terminus of Water street, [now Elizabeth avenue], where the two roads leading to the Old and New Points diverge, with orders to arrest the advance of the foe as long as practicable, and then retire. Colonel Dayton hastened back to the town, and mustered his troops as quickly as possible, to be ready for the emergency, and fall back, if outnumbered.

As the enemy marched forward, at the break of day, General Sterling at the head of his division, the guards, at the forks of the road, allowed them to approach within musket shot, when they fired, and fled the town. One of the balls unhorsed Sterling, and fractured his thigh. The whole column was thus brought to a halt, until the wounded general could be cared for. General Knyphausen now placed himself at the head of the division, and just as the sun was rising upon the earth, the squadron in advance entered the town, passing up Water street, and so on into Broad. DeHart's "History of Elizabeth Town" says of this event:

"An eye-witness of the passage of the troops through the village, describes it as one of the most beautiful sights he ever beheld. In the van marched a squadron of dragoons, of Simcoe's regiment, known as the 'Queen's Rangers,' with drawn swords and glittering helms, mounted on very large and beautiful horses—then followed the infantry, composed of Hessians and English troops—the whole body amounting to nearly six thousand men, and every man, horseman and foot, clad in new uniforms, complete in panoply, and gorgeous with burnished brass and polished steel."



JAMES FENIMORE COOPER.

As soon as it was known that the foe had landed, word was sent to Prospect Hill, in the rear of Springfield, when the 18 pounder signal gun, and the tar-barrel on the signal pole, were fired, and the whole country on both sides of the mountains was roused. Instantly the drums in the camp at Morristown beat to arms, and Washington and his troops marched with all speed to the post of danger. The militia, in every direction, seized their firelocks, swords, or whatever weapon was at hand, hastened to their respective meeting places, and were soon proceeding by companies to the field of action.

The fighting on this occasion took place mostly on the rising

ground back of the village of Connecticut Farms, and on the east side of the Rahway river. "In the hope of preserving [the village] the Farms," says "Marshall's Life of Washington," "Colonel Dayton, who at that time commanded the militia, determined not to halt in the settlement, but to take post at a narrow pass on the road leading to Springfield." Both parties, therefore, passed through the village without damaging the dwelling houses. Many, if not the most, of these houses were, at noon and in the afternoon, "filled with their wounded."

In the course of the afternoon, the British commander "learned from prisoners and deserters, that Washington had got time to occupy with all his force the strong post of Short Hills." This information at once put an end to all thoughts of advance. A retrograde movement was, at the close of the day, determined upon, to be executed, however, only after nightfall. As soon as it was determined to advance no further, the soldiers commenced the work of plundering, which was most effectually prosecuted, Governor Robertson himself sharing in the plunder.

The village consisted of a house of worship, belonging to the Presbyterian Church, (a frame building), and eight or ten dwelling houses, besides stores, shops and outhouses. The buildings were first given up to pillage—thoroughly ransacked, and everything portable carried off. They were then fired and burnt down. The church edifice shared the same fate.

The parsonage was on the main street. The last pastor of the church, Rev. Benjamin Hait, had died a year or so before. The Rev. Mr. Caldwell, of Elizabethtown, by the advice of friends, had, shortly after Mr. Hait's decease, rented the vacant parsonage, and occupied it with his family. Mr. Caldwell had vainly endeavored, when the alarm was given in the morning, to induce his wife to seek, with him and the elder children, a place of greater security. She concluded to trust Providence and remain at home, "under the persuasion that her presence might serve to protect " the house " from pillage, and that her person could not possibly be endangered."

Thatcher, the historian, who was with Washington, on this occasion, says, in his *Military Journal*, that, "on the arrival of the royal troops Mrs. Caldwell entertained the officers with refreshments, and after they had retired she and a young woman, having Mrs. Caldwell's infant child in her arms, seated themselves on the bed." The *New Jersey Journal* gives another account:

"Mrs. Caldwell retired into a back room which was so situated that she was entirely secured against transient shot from either party, should they dispute the ground near the house, which happened not to be the case. The babe was in the arms of the housekeeper; the other child the mother held by the hand, all sitting upon the side of the bed, when one of the barbarians advancing round the house, took

the advantage of a small space, through which the room was accessible, and fired two balls into that amiable lady, so well directed that they ended her life in a moment."

Conflicting statements, also, are made as to the disposal of the corpse. Thatcher says, that "a British officer soon after came, and throwing his cloak over the corpse, carried it into the next house. A correspondent of the *New Jersey Gazette*, under date of June 13th, says, "I saw her corpse, and was informed by the neighbors, it was with infinite pains they obtained leave to bring her body from the house before they set fire to it."

Barber's "New Jersey Historical Collections" says, "The house to which the body was conveyed * * was a small building on the opposite side of the street, one of the only two dwelling houses in the village that escaped the flames. There Mr. Caldwell found it the next morning, and thence, the same day, it was, with appropriate ceremonies, carried to the grave. Three months after he published a most affecting appeal on the subject, that made a deep impression on the public mind."

The expedition proved a miserable failure. "The great array of disciplined troops, horse and foot, and flying artillery," says "Hattfield's History of Elizabeth," "so confident, in the morning, of reaching the American camp at Morris Town, and breaking up the rebellion, were held at bay by a few hastily-gathered militia, driven back, and, after the inglorious destruction by fire of the little hamlet of Connecticut Farms, compelled, the same night, in the midst of drenching rain, and through mud and marsh, to retreat to the point of departure. Writing of the event, Lieutenant Mathew, of the Coldstream Guards, said:

"About ten o'clock the whole army got in motion and moved off. It was so exceedingly dark, and there was such strict silence observed, that one regiment could not perceive the adjoining regiment going off. * * It was the darkest night I can remember in my life, with the most heavy rain, thunder and lightning known in this country for many years. * * It rained, I think, harder than I ever knew, and thundered and lightened so severely as to frighten the horses, and once or twice the whole army halted, being deprived of sight for a time. General Knyphausen's horse started so as to throw the General.

"We continued our march until we reached the bank of the creek [Sound] which we had crossed in the morning. Nothing more awful than this retreat can be imagined. The rain, with the terrible thunder and lightning, the darkness of the night, the house at Connecticut Farms, which we had set fire to, in a blaze, the dead bodies which the light of the fire or the lightning showed you now and then on the road, and the dread of the enemy, completed the scene of horror. * * We

halted at the side of the creek, and took up our ground and the whole army encamped.”⁵

The following letter, written by General Washington, was sent to Captain Judah Alden, commanding officer at Dobb's Ferry, is of particular interest at this time:

HEADQUARTERS, 23d Novem., 1780.

“ Sir:—I impart to you in confidence that I intend to execute an enterprise against Staten Island to-morrow night, for which reason I am desirous of cutting off all intercourse with the enemy on the east side of the river. You will therefore to-morrow at retreat beating set a guard upon any boats which may be at the flat or neck, and not suffer any to go out on any pretence whatever, until next morning. Toward evening you will send a small party down to the Closter landing, and if they find any boats there you will give orders to have them scuttled in such a manner that they can not be immediately used, but to prevent any possibility of it the party may remain there until toward daylight—but are not to make any fires or discover themselves—and then return to your post. I depend upon the punctual observation of this order, and that you will keep this motive a secret. Acknowledge the rec^t of this, that I may be sure you have got it.

“ I am, Sir, Yr. Most obt. Servt.,

“ GEO. WASHINGTON.”

Captain Adam Hyler, who is mentioned in another chapter, made many predatory raids on Staten Island, Long Island and in New Jersey. He resided in New Brunswick, New Jersey, and was an active patriot. His expeditions against the enemy were chiefly conducted by water, and in small boats. In January, 1782, a detachment of infantry from Staten Island, went up the Raritan to New Brunswick, and before daylight succeeded in capturing all his boats. In less than a month thereafter Hyler launched a large new boat built for thirty oars. The following items, taken from *Rivington's Gazette*, of July 15th, 1782, is another instance of the enterprise of this man:

“ Last Tuesday night Mr. Hyler took two fishing boats near the Narrows, and ransomed them for \$100 each. One of them has been twice captured.”

The same day, “ a little before sunset, Mr. Hyler, with three large 24-oared boats, made an attack on the galley stationed at Prince's Bay, south side of Staten Island. There being little or no wind, he came up with a good deal of resolution, but Capt. Cashman gave him an 18-pounder, which went through the stern of one of the boats, and

⁵ The event, viewed from a military standpoint, was of but little significance; yet, it is safe to assume, it had an important political effect upon the two countries at war. General Clinton was greatly disappointed, and did not hesitate to make the fact known to General Knyphausen, who, it is said, felt the humiliation so keenly that he actually wrote his resignation.

He never fully regained his popularity among the troops, and those who knew him best have said that the scenes which filled his first day in the little hamlet of Connecticut Farms followed and haunted him to the very hour in which his eyes closed in their sleep of death.—*Staten Island Magazine*.

obliged Hyler to put ashore on the Island, where, after a smart combat, he was obliged to leave one of his boats and make the best of his way home with the other two.

"John Althouse, with 12 men, was on board a guard-boat at anchor in Prince's Bay, when two whale boats were descried under South Amboy shore. It was calm. The cable was sprung and a 24-pounder brought to bear, which sent a shot through Hyler's boat. The crew were taken in the other boat, (Dickey's), and all made off for New Brunswick with Gen. Jacob S. Jackson, whom they had captured in South Bay, and kept prisoner till he was ransomed."⁶

The war was now drawing to a close, first because of the repeated failure of the British arms, and, second, because of its unpopularity in England. Affairs on Staten Island remained about the same, however, to the end. Sir Guy Carleton had relieved General Clinton as the Commander-in-chief of the British forces in America, and we find in the *New York Morning Post* the following orders issued by his command:

"Adjutant-General's Office, New York, 7th June, 1783.

"All persons who have returned their names to the Adjutant-General for Passages from this Place, agreeable to this Notice in the Public Papers, are desired to apply to the Gentleman appointed by his Excellency the Commander-in-chief, to examine the several claims, who will attend for that purpose at the City Hall, from eleven o'clock, until Two every Day, Sundays excepted.

"(Signed)

OL. DE LANCEY, Adj. Gen."

"Headquarters, New York, June 16, 1783.

"*Orders.*—The proprietors of home lands lately evacuated, will apply to Lieutenant-General Campbell for possession of land, on Long Island; to Brigadier-General Birch, for those on New York Island; and to Brigadier-General Bruce for those on Staten Island. These general officers will be pleased to cause all such estates to be immediately delivered up to the Proprietors or to their attorneys, unless where there may be sufficient reasons for retaining them some time longer, which reasons they will report to the Commander-in-chief. In like manner all estates which shall hereafter be evacuated, are to be surrendered up to the Proprietors.

"(Signed)

OL. DE LANCEY, Adt. Genl."

"Headquarters, New York, Sept. 4, 1783.

"The officers Commanding Regiments which are embarked, will take care that no officer under their command is permitted to fail, who has not satisfied his creditors.

"(Signed),

OL. DE LANCEY, Adt. Genl."

6 The mantle of Captain Hyler appears to have fallen on other shoulders after his death. The *New Jersey Gazette*, of November 13th, 1782, says: "The brave Captain Storer, commissioned as a private boat-of-war, under the States, and who promises fair to be the genuine successor of the late valiant Capt. Hyler,

has given a recent instance of his valor and conduct in capturing one of the enemy's vessels, and in cutting out a vessel lying under the flag-staff and within pistol shot of the battery of fourteen guns, at the watering place, Staten Island."

“ By their Excellencies Sir Guy Carleton, K. B., General and Commander-in-chief of all his Majesty's forces within the Colonies, lying on the North Atlantic Ocean from Nova Scotia to West Florida inclusive, &c., &c., &c.;

“ And Robert Digby, Esq., Rear Admiral of the Red and Commander-in-chief of all his Majesty's Ships and vessels in North America, &c., &c., &c.:

“ A *Proclamation*. — Having received information that an outrage has been committed upon an American vessel in the harbour of this city, by seizing and destroying her colors, in a riotous and disorderly manner, which behaviour is not only a breach of the peace of the city, but has a mischievous tendency to prolong animosities, which it is the design of the Provisional Articles to assuage and extinguish:

“ This is therefore to warn all persons whatever, from offering any insult to the colors of any foreign nation within this harbour, under penalty of being severely punished.

“ And as the persons concerned in this outrage have not yet been discovered, the officers of the Police, and of His Majesty's Navy and Army, are hereby strictly charged to cause all persons who have been guilty of this offense to be apprehended, that they may be brought to trial, and upon conviction, be punished with the severity due the offense.

“ Given under our Hands and Seals, at the City of New York, the 27th day of October, 1783.

“ GUY CARLETON,

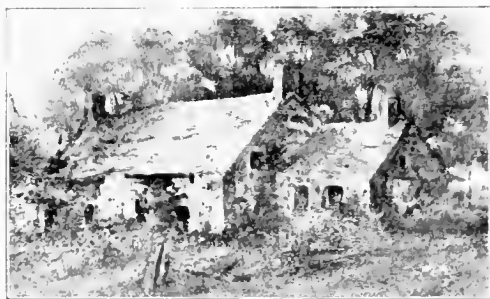
“ By command of their Excellencies,

“ R. DIGBY.

“ FREDK. MACKENZIE,

“ THOS. M. PALMER.”

On the 25th day of November, 1783, the British finally evacuated New York and Staten Island, thus ending eight years of the most cruel warfare known to the world at that time. Not more than a thousand troops were left on Staten Island at the closing scene. These embarked at the landing in the Narrows, and rejoined the army as it passed down from the city. The scene of the departure of the King's army is said to have been most impressive. “ Several days before the 25th,” says an eye witness, “ had been occupied in conveying the troops, cannon, tents, etc., from the land to the vessels, both in New York and on Staten Island. When all was ready they passed through the Narrows silently; not a sound was heard save the rattling of the cordage.” The same witness continues:



OLD LATOURETTE HOMESTEAD, AT RICHMOND, FOR A TIME LIEUT.-COL. SIMCOE'S HEADQUARTERS.

“ We stood on the heights at the Narrows, and looked down upon the decks of their ships as they passed. We were very boisterous in our demonstrations of joy; we shouted, we clapped our hands, we waved our hats, we sprang into the air, and some few, who had brought muskets with them, fired a *feu-de joie*. A few others, in the exuberance of their gladness, indulged in gestures, which, though very expressive, were neither polite nor judicious. The British could not look upon the scene without making some demonstration of resentment. A large seventy-four, as she was passing, fired a shot which struck the bank a few feet beneath the spot upon which we were standing. If we had had a cannon, we would have returned it; but as we had none, we ran away as fast as we could. A few rods from us stood another group, composed of men and women, who gazed silently, and some tearfully, upon the passing ships, for some of the females had lovers, and some husbands on board of them, who were leaving them behind, never, probably, to see them again. It was long after dark when the last ship passed through the Narrows.”

CHAPTER XXVI.

SIMCOE AND THE "QUEEN'S RANGERS."



It is certain that no organization in the British army, during the Revolution, became more familiarly known in this section of the country than the "Queen's Rangers," which were commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John Graves Simcoe, who may consistently be called "the Mosby of the Revolution," so strongly did those men resemble each other in their service in the field.

Colonel Simcoe was a son of Captain John Simcoe, of the English navy, who served with distinction in the expedition against Quebec, in Canada, in 1759, and in which he lost his life, at the age of forty-five years. He was a native of Northamptonshire, England.

Colonel Simcoe was a mere child at the time of his father's death, and he was liberally educated by his mother. At the age of nineteen he obtained an ensign's commission in the 35th regiment of the British line. He did not embark with his regiment, but landed at Boston on the day of the battle of Bunker Hill. He served for a time as adjutant, but soon purchased a captain's commission in the 40th regiment, which he commanded at the battle of Brandywine, where he was wounded, on the 11th of September, 1777. On the 15th of October following Captain Simcoe was promoted to Major of the Queen's Rangers.



LIEUT.-COLONEL JOHN GRAVES
SIMCOE, OF THE "QUEEN'S
RANGERS."

The Queen's Rangers were originally raised in Connecticut and the vicinity of New York, by Colonel Rogers, and their duties were principally those of scouts or light cavalry. They were all Americans, and called in those days, "Loyalists." When Major Simcoe joined the regiment it had by hardships and neglect been reduced in numbers; many gentlemen of the Southern colonies, who had joined Lord Dunmore, were appointed to supersede those who were not considered competent for the commissions they had hitherto borne. To these were added some volunteers from the army, the whole consisting of young men, anxious to enter the British service.

The Queen's Rangers consisted of two companies of dragoons, one

of Highlanders, a company of Yagers, two troops of cavalry, one company of artillery, and five companies of light infantry, a large part of one company being native Staten Islanders. Colonel Rogers, the first commandant, was succeeded by Colonel French, he by Colonel Mawhood, he by Major Weys, he by Major Weymess, and he by Lieut. Colonel Simcoe.

The following served as officers in this regiment during its exploits on Staten Island and vicinity:¹

Lieutenant-Colonel—John Graves Simcoe.

Majors—Armstrong, Grymes, Ross, Waymess, Weys.

Captains—Aulthouse, Agnew, Beckwith, Blucke, Bronson, Cooke, Diemer, Ewald, Hanson, Hutchinson, Kerr, McCrea, McGill, James, McKay, Moneriette, McRae, Murray, Sandford, Saunders, Shank, Shaw, Smyth, Stevenson, Thomas, Whitlock, Wickham and Wreden.

Lieutenants—Allen, Dunlop, Fitzpatrick, Holland, Lawler, McNab, McLeod, Murray, Rynd, Spencer and Wilson.

Surgeons—Kellock and McCauley.

Adjutant—Ormond.

Quartermaster—McGill.

Chaplain—Agnew.

Ensign—Proctor.

Sergeants—Adams, McDonald, McLaughlin, McPherson, Ritchie and Wright.

Corporals—Burt and Franks.

Cornets—Jones, Merrett, Ficker and Wolsey.

Trumpeters—Barney and French.

Immediately after Colonel Simcoe took command of this regiment, he issued the following advertisement in *Rivington's Royal Gazette*, of New York City:

ALL ASPIRING HEROES

have now an opportunity of distinguishing themselves by joining

THE QUEEN'S RANGERS HUIZZARS,

commanded by

Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe.

Any spirited young man will receive every encouragement, be immediately mounted on an elegant horse, and furnished with clothing, accoutrements, etc., to the amount of Forty Guineas, by applying to Cornet Spencer, at his quarters, No. 1033 Water street, or his rendezvous, Hewitt's Tavern, near the Coffee House, and the depot at Brandywine, on Golden Hill.

Whoever brings a Recruit shall instantly receive Two Guineas.

Vivant rex et regina.

We have compiled from the works of Colonel Simcoe his own accounts of his service on Staten Island, keeping strictly to his own language, believing that, as an historical record, it would be unjust to the original writer as well as the reader of to-day to cause a change in either form or phrase. We quote from *Simcoe's Military Journal*:

"On the 9th of October, 1778, [the Queen's Rangers being at Oyster

¹ These names were gleaned from "Simcoe's Military Journal," "Rivington's Gazette," Bolton's "History of Westchester County," and other works bearing on the subject.

Bay, Long Island], it was hinted to Lieut. Col. Simcoe to hold his corps in readiness for embarkation. On the 19th it marched for that purpose; the cavalry to Jericho, where they were to remain under the command of Lieut.-Col. Fulton, and the infantry to Jamaica, which proceeded to Yellow-hook, and embarked on the 24th. Earl Cornwallis commanded this expedition, consisting of the 7th, 23d, 22d, 33d, 57th regiments, Rangers, and Volunteers of Ireland, commanded by Lord Rawdon; it was supposed to be intended for Jamaica, at that time presumed to be threatened with an invasion from M. D'Estaing. On intelligence being received that his designs were pointed elsewhere, the troops were re-landed, and were ordered to continue in readiness to embark at the shortest notice. The Queen's Rangers marched to Richmond, on Staten Island. They relieved a regiment which had been very sickly while there. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe immediately ordered their huts to be destroyed, and encamped his corps. Signals, in case of alarm, were established on the Island by General Patterson, who commanded there.

"There was a general rumor of an intended attack on New York. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe had information that fifty flatboats, upon carriages, capable of holding seventy men each, were on the road from the Delaware to Washington's army, and that they had been assembled to Van Vacter's bridge, upon the Raritan. He proposed to the Commander-in-chief to burn them. Sir Henry Clinton approved of his plan, as did Earl Cornwallis, and directed it to be put into execution. Colonel Lee, with his cavalry, had been at Monmouth. Sir Henry Clinton, upon Lieut.-Col. Simcoe's application to him for intelligence of this corps, told him that by the best information he had, Lee was gone from that part of the country. There were no other troops in the vicinity; the Jersey militia only, and those, tumultuously assembled at the moment of the execution of the enterprise, could possibly impede it. The coast of Jersey had been the common receptacle of the disaffected from Staten, Long and York Islands, on the British troops taking possession of them. Of course they were the most virulent in their principles, and, by the custom they had of attacking, from their coverts, the British foraging parties, in 1776, and insulting their very outposts, they had acquired a great degree of self-confidence and activity. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe's plan was to burn the boats with as much expedition as possible; to return with silence to the heights beyond the town of Brunswick before day; there to show himself, to entice all who might follow him into an ambuscade, and if he found that his remaining in the Jerseys could affect any valuable purpose, the Commander-in-Chief proposed to reinforce him. To execute this purpose, he was to draw his cavalry from Jericho, Long Island, by easy marches to Staten Island. Stuart, an active and gallant man, a native of New Jersey, commanded some cavalry on that [Staten] Island. These were to be added to him; and

he requested ten guides. Three hundred infantry of the Queen's Rangers, with their artillery, were also to accompany him.

"Two days were lost by a misunderstanding of the General's order, the Hussars of the Queen's Rangers only being sent to Jericho, without Captain Sanford's troop, which was not merely necessary in regard to numbers, but particularly wished for, as it was known that Captain Sanford, when quartermaster of the guards, had frequently been on foraging parties in the country he was to pass through. On the 25th of October, by eight o'clock at night, the detachment, which had been detailed, marched to Billopp's Point, where they were to embark. That the enterprise might be effectually concealed, Lieut.-Col. Simeoe discribed a man, as a rebel spy, to be on the Island, and endeavoring to escape to New Jersey. A great reward was offered for taking him, and the militia of the Island were watching all the places where it was possible for any man to go from, in order to apprehend him. The batteaux and boats, which were appointed to be at Billopp's Point, so as to pass the whole over by twelve o'clock at night, did not arrive until three o'clock in the morning. No time was lost; the infantry of the Queen's Rangers landed; they ambuscaded every avenue of the town [Perth Amboy]; the cavalry followed as soon as possible. As soon as it was formed, Lieut.-Col. Simeoe called together the officers; he told them of his plan, "that he meant to burn the boats at Van Vacter's bridge, and crossing the Raritan, at Hillsborough, to return by the road to Brunswick and making a circuit to avoid that place as soon as he came near it, to discover himself when beyond it, on the heights where the General Redoubts stood while the British troops were cantoned there, and where the Queen's Rangers afterwards had been encamped; and to entice the militia, if possible, to follow him into an ambuscade in which the infantry would lay for them at South River bridge.

"Major Armstrong was instructed to re-embark, as soon as the cavalry marched, and to land on the opposite side of the Raritan, at South Amboy; he was then, with the utmost despatch and silence, to proceed to South River bridge, six miles from South Amboy, where he was to ambuscade himself, without passing the bridge or taking it up. A smaller creek falls into this river on South Amboy side. Into the peninsula formed by these streams Lieut.-Col. Simeoe hoped to allure some Jersey militia."

Here follows a detailed account of the raid into New Jersey, in the vicinity of Morristown, then the headquarters of the Continental army. Lieutenant-Colonel Simeoe was badly wounded and captured. He was taken to the military prison at Burlington, N. J., where he was afterward joined by Colonel Christopher Billopp, the commander of the Staten Island militia. Major Armstrong assumed command of the Queen's Rangers. The account continues:

"At South River the cavalry joined Major Armstrong; he had per-

fectly succeeded in arriving at his post undiscovered, and, ambuscading himself, had taken several prisoners. He marched back to South Amboy, and re-embarked without opposition, exchanging some of the bad horses of the corps for better ones, which he had taken with the prisoners. The alarm through the country was general. Wayne was detached from Washington's camp in the highlands, with the light troops, and marched fourteen miles that night and thirty the next day. Colonel Lee was in Monmouth County, as it was said, fell back toward the Delaware. The Queen's Rangers returned to Richmond that evening; the cavalry had marched upwards of eighty miles, without halting or refreshment, and the infantry thirty.

"In the distribution of quarters for the remaining winter, Richmond was allotted to the Queen's Rangers. The post was in the centre of Staten Island, and consisted of three bad redoubts, so constructed, at various times and in such a manner as to be of little mutual assistance. The spaces between these redoubts had been occupied by the huts of the troops, wretchedly made of mud. These Lieut.-Colonel Simeoe had thrown down, and his purpose was to build ranges of log houses, which might join the redoubts, and being loop-holed, might become a very defensible curtain. Major Armstrong followed the plan, and set the regiment about its execution, in parties adapted to the different purposes of felling the timber, sawing it, and making shingles for the roofings. In the beginning of December the regiment was ordered to embark; which order was, soon after, countermanded.



MAJOR ANDRÉ.

"On the last day of December Lieut.-Colonel Simeoe returned to Staten Island from his imprisonment. He was mortified to find the expedition, under the Commander-in-Chief, had failed; especially, as, upon his landing at the Island, he received a letter from Major André, Adjutant-General, saying, 'If this meets you a free man, prepare your regiment for embarkation, and hasten to New York yourself.'

"He joined the corps at Richmond. Major Armstrong had been indefatigable in getting the regiment huddled in a manner which rendered their post comfortable and defensible, and they soon found the advantage of their very extraordinary labor. The day which Lieut.-Col. Simeoe passed the Sound was the last on which it became navigable for a considerable time, the frost setting in with most unusual inclemency, and, by the 10th of January, the communication with New York was totally shut up by floating ice; and General Sterling was reduced to the necessity of restraining the troops to half allowance of provisions, but with every precaution to impress the

inhabitants and soldiers with the belief that this restriction was precautionary against the possibility of the communication being closed for several weeks; and care was taken to investigate what resources of fresh provisions might be obtained from the Island.

"The Sound, which divided Staten Island from the Jerseys, being totally frozen over and capable of bearing cannon, information was received that several of the rebel Generals had been openly measuring the thickness of the ice, and it was universally rumored that an attack was soon to take place upon Staten Island. General Sterling² commanded there, and he was with the main body at the watering place, the heights of which [Pavilion Hill] were occupied by several redoubts. Colonel Lord Rawdon, with the Volunteers of Ireland, was quartered near a redoubt at the foot of the Narrows; and Lieut.-Col. Simcoe, with the Queen's Rangers, at Richmond—the whole force on the Island being one thousand eight hundred effective men.

"On the 15th of January, early in the morning, the rebel detachment of near three thousand men, under the command of the person styled Lord Stirling, crossed the ice and entered Staten Island. Lord Stirling marched immediately towards the landing place, and by his position cut off General Sterling's communication with the Volunteers of Ireland and the Queen's Rangers. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe occupied the high grounds near Richmond with small parties of cavalry, and the infantry were sedulously employed in what might strengthen that post. There were three pieces of cannon (a nine and two six-pounders), mounted on platforms, without embrasures, in the redoubts. These were pointed at the eminences, where it was expected the enemy would first appear, and where the stones were collected in heaps, so that a round shot, if it struck among them, might have the effect of grape. If batteries, or any cannon, should be opened against Richmond, it was obvious these guns must be dismantled; they were, therefore, not intended to be exposed to such accidents; but the redoubt on the right [now a burying ground on a hill] was meant, on the first appearance of assault, to be abandoned, and its area filled with abatis which were provided, and its gate left open and exposed to the fire of the cannon of the other redoubts placed at their respective gates, of the two regimental field pieces, and of the musketry from the doors, windows and loop-holes of the barracks. The officers' barracks, which were within the triangular area formed by those of the soldiers and the redoubts, were intended to be taken down, and the logs of which they were composed were to be heaped within a hut, and to form a traverse on a part exposed to the enemy. The rear of the works were secured by their position on the edge of the

² In order to prevent a misunderstanding, the reader will notice that General (or Lord) Stirling, of the American army, spelled his

name with an "i," while the General of the same name in the British army spelled his "Sterling."

hill from any possibility of attack, and some of the huts, which ran below the surface of it, were in perfect safety from any shot whatsoever, and nearly so from shells, against the splinters of which their logs were very respectable traverses.

" There was a gun boat, which was frozen up in the creek, at the foot of Richmond Hill. This gun was elevated so as to fire a single round of grape shot; some swivels also were brought into the redoubts. Spike nails, of which there were a quantity for the barrack purposes, were driven through boards, ready to be concealed under the snow in places which were most accessible; all the cattle in the neighborhood were brought in the precincts of the garrison, as were the sledges, harness and horses, and the most cheerful and determined appearance of resolution ran through the whole corps. About midday many deserters came in from the rebel army; by them a perfect knowledge of the enemy's force was gained, and one of them affirmed that he overheard some of their principal officers say, ' That it was not worth while to attack Richmond where they were sure of obstinate resistance, and which must fall of itself whenever the main body was taken.'

" Lieut. Col. Simcoe was anxious to communicate with Lord Rawdon, and to obtain any intelligence or orders his lordship might have for him. He sent his adjutant, Lieut. Ormond, with directions to get some of the militia to convey a letter for that purpose by the sea shore [South Beach]. Some scattering parties of the enemy had been that way, on which account Lieut. Ormond could get no one to venture; he therefore went himself, and putting on colored clothes that he might not be distinguished, in case of any small parties lying in ambuscade, he got safely to the flag staff, [now Fort Wadsworth] and returned without discovery. The rebels making no attempt in the daytime upon the redoubts, where General Sterling was, led Lieut.-Col. Simcoe to conclude that they waited for cannon or more forces, and meant to storm them at night or the next morning; for, though no person could hold more cheaply than he thought himself authorized to do, those men on whom the enemy had conferred the office and title of Generals, it appeared totally unreasonable that having so well chosen the moment of invading the Island, they had no determined point to carry, or had neglected the proper means to ensure its success. On these ideas, he desired Colonel Billopp, (who commanded the militia of Staten Island), to get them to assemble to garrison Richmond; but neither entreaties, the full explanation of the advantage such a conduct would be of, nor the personal example of Col. Billopp, had any effect; not a man could be prevailed upon to enter the garrison. They assembled to drink at various public houses, and to hear the news, or were busy in providing for the temporary security of their cattle and effects; and these were not disaffected persons, but men who were obnoxious to the rebel governors, many of them

refugees from the Jersies, some who had every reason to expect death, if the enemy succeeded, and all the total destruction of their property.

" Lieut.-Col. Simcoe was therefore obliged to lay aside his intentions, which were to march with his cavalry, carrying muskets, with as many infantry as he could justify the taking from Richmond, with his field pieces in sledges, together with the swivels fixed upon blocks, and to get near the enemy undiscovered, and to make as great an alarm and as much impression as possible upon their rear, whensoever they attempted to storm the British redoubts. All the roads between Richmond and the headquarters, [New Dorp], led through narrow passes and below the chain of hills; these, where they had been beaten only, were passable, the ground being covered with several feet of snow, so that no patrols were made during the night, which would have been useless and dangerous; and the cavalry were assembled within the redoubts; the night was remarkably cold. A person from the Jersies brought the report of the country, that Washington was expected the next day at Elizabethtown, and that straw, &c., was sent to Staten Island. He went back again, commissioned by Lieut. Col. Simcoe, to observe what stores were in Elizabethtown, and particularly to remark what air-holes were in the ice on the Sound between the mouth of Richmond Creek and Elizabethtown, as it was intended, if nothing material intervened before the next night, to send Captain Stevenson with a detachment to burn Elizabethtown, and to give an alarm in the Jersies.

" The intelligence which this zealous and trustworthy loyalist brought was very probable. The making a winter campaign in America had always appeared to Lieut. Col. Simcoe a matter of great facility, and by frequently ruminating upon it, he was alive to the advantages which would attend Mr. Washington in its prosecution. He would without hesitation have abandoned the post at Richmond, and joined Lord Rawdon, or General Sterling, taking on himself all consequences, had it not appeared to him that the possession of Richmond would insure to Mr. Washington a safe retreat, even should the ice become impassable, and would probably inculcate on him the propriety of his seriously attempting to keep Staten Island at this very critical period, when the Commander-in-Chief was absent with the greatest part of the army, and the troops in New York, under General Knyphausen, were probably not in a capacity to quit it and take the field; particularly as in that case the nominal militia, whose members were so well displayed, as sufficient to garrison it, must for the greater part have melted away in their attendance on the army, to whose various departments they in general belonged.

" Mr. Washington might without difficulty have assembled from the smaller creeks, and even from the Delaware and Hudson's river, a multitude of boats, which, while the snow was upon the ground,

might be conveyed overland to the Staten Island Sound; and with these, added to those which attended the army, he might transport his troops or form bridges, securing all approaches to them from the water by batteries constructed on the Jersey shore, while by other attacks and preparations he certainly could have thrown great difficulties in the way of General Knyphausen and the British army in the three Islands.

“Lieut.-Col. Simcoe, reasoning on the possibility of these events, waited to be guided by circumstances. If General Sterling could hold

out, and was neither overwhelmed by number, or reduced by famine, which was most to be dreaded, it was obvious Richmond would be safe. If matters happened otherwise, he was perfectly certain, from Lord Rawdon's character, that he should receive some directions from him, who would never remain in an untenable pose, with the certainty of being made prisoner; and at all events Lieut.-Col. Simcoe determined, in case General Sterling should be defeated, and that he should receive no orders, he would attempt to escape; for since the rebels had shown a total defect in every private and



BENEDICT ARNOLD.

public principle of honor, when they violated the convention with General Burgoyne's army, he and the officers of the Queen's Rangers had determined in no situation to surrender, where by escaping, if it should be but a mile into the country, the corps could disband itself individually, and separately attempt to rejoin the British armies; proper inducements being held out to the soldiers, and great aid being reasonably to be expected from the loyal inhabitants, scattered throughout every colony, and in very great numbers.

“This, which had been his common conversation and steady resolution, in case of any fortunate events, was now determined on by Lieut.-Col. Simcoe; his ideas were to forerun all intelligence and to attempt to surprise Col. Lee, at Burlington, and then to escape to the back countries. For this purpose he had sledges which could carry a hundred men, and he had no doubt of soon increasing them in the Jerseys to a number sufficient to convey the whole corps. The attempt was less dangerous in itself and less injurious, if it failed, to the community than the certainty of being destroyed by heavy artillery, of ultimately surrendering, of mouldering in prison, and becoming lost to all future service to their king and country.

“There was no corps between General Washington's army and that of Lincoln's hastening into Charlestown but Lee's. When once in possession of his horses there was but little doubt in the minds of

Lieut.-Col. Simcoe and the officers to whom he communicated his ideas, but that he should effect his retreat into the back parts of Pennsylvania, join his friends there, probably release the Convention army, and not impossibly join the Commander-in-Chief in Carolina. Full of these ideas, it was with great surprise and pleasure that Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe understood the enemy were retreating from the Island. He immediately pursued them with the flank companies of the Hussars, and was overtaken by an order from General Sterling to effect the same purpose; but the enemy had passed to the Jersey shore before he could come up with them. While the troops in the enemy's front, on their arrival at the heights opposite to the British redoubts, halted for the rear to close up, they were permitted to make fires, which increased the power of the frost, and rendered them totally unable to proceed, and the severity of the night affecting the whole of them, many lost their limbs and several their lives. There were vast mounds of snow drifted before the redoubts, which Lord Stirling gave as his reason for not attempting them; and General Knyphausen, on the first signal of Staten Island being attacked, embarked troops to support it. The enemy in the dark of the evening saw these vessels, (which, whether the passage could be effected or not, were wisely directed to be kept plying off and on); but they did not wait to see if they could reach the Island, which in fact the drifting ice prevented, but immediately determining to retreat, they effected it the next morning, losing many men by desertion, and many British soldiers, who had enlisted with them to free themselves from imprisonment, embraced the opportunity of being in a country they were acquainted with to return to their old companions."

CHAPTER XXVII.

SIMCOE AND THE QUEEN'S RANGERS—CONCLUDED.



HE Queen's Rangers." Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe goes on to state, in his "Military Journal," "obtained a great many recruits, and it is very remarkable that neither that corps nor the Volunteers of Ireland had a single man who deserted from them, while there were such opportunities and apparent reasons to do it. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe, on his return from Elizabethtown Point, where the enemy passed, had information that a party of plunderers had crossed from the Jerseys to the other end of the Island. He detached the Hussars in pursuit of them, but they fled, on the Staten Island militia collecting together. The frost still continuing there were many reports and a general expectation that the enemy would again adventure upon the Island, with superior force, with sufficient provisions to attempt some greater purpose, and patrols were constantly made on all the roads by which they could possibly approach, by order of General Sterling.

"The Queen's Rangers had formerly experienced how ready General Sterling was to represent their services, and they now in common with the other troops, had a further proof of his good inclinations, it being inserted in general orders of the 21st of January, 'Brigadier Gen. Sterling is happy to inform the troops on this Island of his Excellency Gen. Knyphausen's fullest approbation of their behavior, and the good countenance they showed when the rebels were upon this Island, which the brigadier had reported to the Commander-in-chief; and his Excellency desires his thanks may be given to them.'

"On the 25th, Lieut.-Col. Simcoe gave out the following order: 'That he expects the order relative to officers and soldiers sleeping in their clothes be strictly complied with, such recruits excepted whom the officers commanding companies may judge as yet unequal to the duties of the regiment; if any half-bred soldier disobeys this order, the first officer or non-commissioned who meets with him, will deliver him to the officer on guard to be put on some internal duty. The Lieut.-Col. has particular satisfaction in seeing the General's approbation of that good countenance which enabled him, on the late inroad of the enemy, to rest perfectly at ease without augmenting the duty of the regiment. He knows its universal spirit, and certain from the fidelity of those on guard, that the garrison cannot

be snatched away by surprise, is confident that Richmond redoubts will be too dear for the whole rebel army to purchase.'

Colonel Simcoe formulated a plan to capture "Mr. Washington," as he called him, by making a secret march from Staten Island to Morristown. While waiting for Sir Henry Clinton's conclusions, the Hussars were ordered to march to New York, with a convoy, over the ice. Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe goes on to say:

"It would seem that the same negligence in Gen. Washington's quartering in front of his army had attracted the notice of Captain Beckwith, Gen. Knyphausen's aide-de-camp, and he had formed a plan to carry off that General, for which purpose cavalry were collected at New York, and among others Captain Beckwith obtained the Hussars of the Queen's Rangers, of whom he had a good opinion. Brig.-Gen. Sterling communicated to Lieut.-Col. Simcoe the purpose for which the cavalry was withdrawn, as it was intended that a general movement from Staten Island should favor the enterprise.

"Since it did not take place on so large a scale as was at first designed, Lieut.-Col. Simcoe received orders 'to send a party to surprise the enemy's post at Woodbridge or Rahway, and to give a general alarm'; this party was to cross the ice at one o'clock in the morning, and not to return until nine or ten. Accordingly Lieut.-Col. Simcoe passed the ice with two hundred infantry at one o'clock; Major Armstrong with some infantry, the cavalry and cannon occupying the heights, at the Old Blazing Star [Rossville], to cover their return. The snow prevented all possibility of marching but in the beaten road; there were no posts in Woodbridge."

Colonel Simcoe then gives a detailed account of his adventures in New Jersey, where they had a warm engagement with the Continental militia. After that he continues:

"The party returned to Richmond without further molestation. The Queen's Rangers lost only one man, already mentioned; a few were wounded, but they bore no proportion to the number whose cloths were struck by the enemy's bullets, fired at a distance, through intervening thickets, or more probably by those who had not recollection enough to ram down their charges. The enemy's loss was supposed to be more considerable, as many of them were seen to fall and the whole of the affair being between single men, the Rangers were infinitely better marksmen than the Jersey militia. Captain Beckwith had found it impracticable to carry his attempt into execution, from an uncommon fall of rain which, encrusting the top of the snow, cut the fetlocks of his horses and rendered it absolutely impossible for him to succeed. The Hussars soon afterward returned to Staten Island. The ice floating on the 22d of February, the Sound became impassable. The soldiers were permitted to undress themselves at night, and in case of alarm they were directed to accoutre in their shirts, and to form at their posts.

" Lieut.-Col. Simcoe, on his arrival at Staten Island from imprisonment, had applied to the Commander-in-chief to request that he might join the army to the southward. He had also written in the strongest terms to Earl Cornwallis, soliciting his lordship to support his application. In case his wishes should not take place, he was anxious to be of what service he thought the present situation of the Queen's Rangers would admit; for this purpose he made application through the proper channel to General Knyphausen for discretionary permission to beat up the enemy's forts in the Jerseys, and to have boats sufficient to transport three hundred infantry and sixty cavalry, to be manned by the Rangers, and to be left totally to his own disposal.

He proposed by this means to countenance desertion, then so prevalent in Washington's army, and to keep the whole coast in continued alarm. He had the most minute maps of the country and the best guides, and the Loyalists, without doubt, would have universally joined him. The first enterprise he meant to attempt was to surprise Col. Lee at Burlington. * * * Lee's corps were excellently mounted and disciplined; he himself was



OLD "CUCKLESTOWNE INN," AT RICHMOND, IN WHICH MAJOR ANDRÉ WROTE HIS WILL.

active and enterprising, and had that weight in the Jerseys which capacity and power, with a very free use of it, could give to the possessor. The importance it would have been of to the intended system of operations to have seized upon Col. Lee and demolished his corps is best illustrated by remarking that, although Burlington is nearly seventy miles from Staten Island, he was understood to have his pickets eight or ten miles in his front for his security.

" Lieut.-Col. Simcoe's proposals were approved of by Generals Knyphausen, Sterling and Tryon. Some of their boats were sent to him, and the remainder were in forwardness when, on the 23d of March, 1780, the infantry of the corps received orders to embark for Charlestown, which it did on the 4th of April. Captain Wickham was left with the Hussars in the town of Richmond, and the duty of the redoubts was taken by a party of two subaltern officers and sixty rank and file, from the 82d regiment, under his directions; this detachment was in a few days relieved by the 22d regiment. The Hessian regiment of Ditforth, Queen's Rangers, Volunteers of Ireland, and Prince of Wales Volunteers, under command of Col. Westervagen, sailed on the 7th. The Queen's Rangers anchored in Stono inlet on the 18th, and camped before Charlestown, (S. C.) on the 21st.

* * * Captain Wickham, of the Hussars, had by no means been idle while at Richmond. The post was such as might have been a temptation to an enterprising enemy; but General Knyphausen, by frequent and well-concerted expeditions, had kept the rebels fully employed in their own cantonments, the Jerseys. On one of these

attempts, the Hussars of the Rangers were eminently distinguished, as was detailed to Lieut.-Col. Simcoe by Captain Wickham, and by him read to the Commander-in-chief, who was highly satisfied with it. The report mentions, 'that on the 15th of April, the cavalry on Staten Island, consisting of Cornet Tucker and twenty of the 17th regiment, light dragoons, Capt. Wickham with a troop of forty-five men and Capt. Diemar with his Hussars, forty men, crossed Cole's ferry, and marched to English neighborhood, where they joined Major DuBuy, with three hundred of the regiment DuBose, and fifty of Colonel Robinson's corps. At New Bridge Sergeant McLaughlin, with six of the Rangers in advance, fell in with and either killed or took the whole of a small rebel outpost. * * *'

"On the 21st of June the regiment landed at Staten Island, and marched to Richmond redoubts. At midnight Lieut.-Col. Simcoe received orders to proceed instantly to the Jerseys, where General Knyphausen, having thrown a bridge of boats over the Sound, near Elizabethtown Point, was encamped. The Hussars of the regiment here joined the corps."

Then followed an event that formed one of the very blackest pages in English military history—the battle of Springville, N. J., the burning of the village, and the wanton murder of the wife of Pastor Caldwell. The "Queen's Rangers" took part in it, of course. They returned to Staten Island in the night. On the 19th of July, (1780), Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe joined his regiment and immediately left Staten Island, going over to Long Island. He received this message from Major André, then serving as Adjutant-General of the army on Staten Island: "The General assures you that the Rangers shall be pitted against a French regiment the first time he can procure a meeting." We further quote from *Simcoe's Military Journal*:

"The Queen's Rangers crossed from Long to Staten Island and marched to Richmond redoubts on the 8th of October. * * * The Commander-in-Chief, thinking it proper, in the General orders, to publish the high idea which he entertained of Major André, both as a gentleman and an officer, and the sense he entertained of the loss his King and country had met with in his death, Lieut.-Colonel Simcoe, who had considered his execution as a barbarous and ungenerous act of power in the American General, and who had certain and satisfactory intelligence that the French party in general, and M. Fayette in particular, who sat upon his trial, urged Mr. Washington to the unnecessary deed, took the opportunity in his orders to the Queen's Rangers, the officers and soldiers of which personally knew and esteemed Major André, to inform them that, 'he had given directions that the regiment should immediately be provided with black and white feathers as mourning, for the late Major André, an officer whose superior integrity and uncommon ability did honor to his country and to human

nature. The Queen's Rangers will never sully their glory in the field of any undue severity; they will, as they have ever done, consider those to be under their protection who shall be in their power, and will strike with reluctance at their unhappy fellow subjects who, by a system of the barest artifices, have been seduced from their allegiance, and disciplined to revolt. But it is the Lieut.-Col.'s most ardent hope that on the close of some decisive victory, it will be the regiment's fortune to secure the murderers of Major André, for the vengeance due to an injured nation and an insulted army.'

* * * * *

"It was generally supposed about the latter end of October that the enemy meditated some attempt on Staten Island. M. de Fayette was in the neighborhood of Elizabethtown, in force and with boats on travelling carriages. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe by public conversation, the means of spies, and by marching to Billopp's Point in the dusk of the evening, so as to be discovered from the opposite shore, and then returning by ways which the enemy could not see, had endeavored to attract their notice and possess them with a belief that an inroad into the Jerseys was in contemplation. As M. Fayette arrived in the vicinity the very day subsequent to this feint, it was reasonable to believe that his march was in consequence, and that the boats with him were destined to facilitate his passage across the small creeks with which the Jerseys are intersected, in case of the British troops making any incursions into that country. Every proper precaution was taken by the troops in Richmond to prevent a surprise. On the 12th of November official information was sent by the Adjutant General to Lieut.-Col. Simcoe that his post was the object of Fayette's design, and that it probably would be attacked on that or the ensuing night. He immediately declared in orders: 'The Lieut.-Colonel has received information that M. Fayette, a Frenchman, at the head of some of his majesty's deluded subjects, has threatened to plant French colors on Richmond redoubts. The Lieut.-Colonel believes this report to be a gasconade; but as the evident ruin of the enemy's affairs may prompt them to some desperate attempt the Queen's Rangers will lay in their clothes this night, and have their bayonets in perfect good order.'

"The Highlanders immediately assembled and marched to the redoubt, which, in the distribution of posts, was allotted to them to defend, and displaying their national banner, with which they used to commemorate their saint's day, fixed it on the ramparts, saying, 'No Frenchman or rebel should ever pull that down.' The Rangers were prepared if an attack should be made on the Watering Place, which appeared to be most probable, to march out and attack any division which might be placed, as had been in Lord Sterling's attempt, to mass the troops in Richmond. Two field pieces, six pounders, and Captain Aulthause's company of riflemen had reinforced them.

“ Lieut.-Col. Simcoe made himself acquainted with the landing places and the intervening grounds, in the minutest particular, and he had the Commander-in-Chief’s directions to abandon his post, ‘ If the enemy should land in such force as to make, in his opinion, the remaining there attended with risk.’ The defects of Richmond were not sufficiently obvious for such inexperienced men as the rebel generals to seize upon and profit by at once. How far they might attract the instantaneous notice of the scientific French officers, supposed to be acting with them, it was not easy to foresee. Had the enemy been in a situation to have attacked the place by regular approaches, Lieut.-Col. Simcoe would have done his best endeavors to have maintained it; but had any General, at the head of a very superior force on the moment of his appearance, placed twenty or thirty field pieces on two separate eminences which enfiladed the redoubts, and formed a column to penetrate under cover of the cross fire, he had resolved to abandon what he considered in case of such a disposition to be untenable.

“ A false alarm, which was give by an armed vessel stationed in Newark Bay, occasioned a considerable movement in the army, and troops from New York embarked to reinforce Staten Island; the post at Richmond was supposed to be the object of an attack. On the first gun being fired, patrols had been made on all sides by the cavalry, and the infantry slept undisturbed. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe apprehending the alarm to be false. The Rangers were very alert on guard, and proud of their regimental character of not giving false alarms, or being surprised; and the sentinel, as Lieut.-Col. Simcoe remarked in orders upon the only omission which ever came under his cognizance, ‘ felt a manly pleasure in reflecting that the lives and honor of the regiment were entrusted to his care, and that under his protection his comrades slept in security.’

On the 11th of December, 1780, the Queen’s Rangers embarked on an expedition to Virginia, under the command of General [Benedict] Arnold. They were very active in all the movements of the British army and formed a part of the troops commanded by Earl Cornwallis at Yorktown. When it was certain that the entire force under that distinguished general must surrender, Colonel Simcoe, according to his own writing, “ sent Lieut. Spencer to his Lordship to request that as his corps consisted of Loyalists, the object of the enemy’s civil persecution, and deserters, if the treaty was not finally concluded, that he would permit him to endeavor to escape with them in some of those boats which General Arnold had built; and that his intention was to cross the Chesapeake and land in Maryland, where, from his knowledge of the inhabitants of the country and other favorable circumstances, he made no doubt of being able to save the greatest part of the corps and carry them into New York. His Lordship was pleased to express himself favorably in regard to the

scheme; but said he could not permit it to be undertaken, for that the whole of the army must share one fate. The capitulation was signed on the 19th of October. Earl Cornwallis, on account of Lieut.-Col. Simcoe's dangerous state of health, permitted him to sail for New York on the "Bonetta," which by an article in the capitulation, was to be left at his disposal, a sea voyage being the only chance, in the opinion of the physicians, by which he could save his life. On board of this vessel sailed as many of the Rangers, and of other corps, deserters from the enemy, as she could possibly hold. They were to be exchanged as prisoners of war, and the remainder of Earl Cornwallis' army were marched prisoners into the country. Lieut.-Col. Simcoe, on his arrival at New York, was permitted by Sir Henry Clinton to return to England.

"Many of the soldiers, who were prisoners in the country, 'were



BRITISH REDOUBT (FORT RICHMOND) AT RICHMOND, STILL STANDING.

seized,' says Col. Simcoe, 'as deserters from Mr. Washington's army. Several enlisted in it to facilitate their escape, and being caught in the attempt, were executed. A greater number got safe to New York, and, had the war continued, there was little doubt but the corps would have been re-assembled in detail. The Rangers were so daring and active in their attempt to escape that, latterly, they were confined in a 'goal.' Captain Whitlock, who commanded them while prisoners in the country, was one of the captains who drew lots with Captain Asgil to suffer for Huddy's death.'

"Captain Saunders was the last commandant of the Queen's Rangers in this country. They were, afterwards, both cavalry and infantry enrolled in the British army; but the corps was disbanded at the ensuing of peace, and many of the officers, and most of the soldiers, settled on the lands to which they had a claim in Nova Scotia.

“The following is an extract from ‘the general return of officers and privates surrendered prisoners of war, the 19th of October, 1781, to the allied army under command of General Washington, taken from the original muster rolls’:

“‘Queen’s Rangers—1 Lieut.-Colonel, 1 Major, 10 Captains, 15 Lieutenants, 11 cornets, 3 quartermasters, 2 surgeons, 24 sergeants, 5 trumpeters, 248 rank and file—total, 320.’”

It may be useless now to further recall the character and acts of Colonel Simcoe while serving his king on Staten Island. Let the century that has intervened soften our feelings toward a vanquished foe. When the war ended he was a prisoner and went directly to England where he became a member of Parliament, while holding a commission as Lieutenant-Colonel in the regular army. When Canada was divided into two provinces, Simcoe was appointed Governor of Upper Canada. His headquarters were at York, now called Toronto. It seems that then his chief ambition was to increase the prejudice of the Canadians and Indians against the people of the United States, and the unpleasant, and frequently bitter, feeling existing in that province toward our people to-day, can be traced to the bigotry and vindictiveness of John Graves Simcoe. In 1796 he was appointed Governor of Saint Domingo, and in 1798 he was commissioned a Lieutenant General in the British army. He was sent to join Lord St. Vincent in the expedition to Portugal, and died a few moments after he landed.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

SKINNER'S BRIGADE OF AMERICAN LOYALISTS.



AS soon as General William Howe arrived at Staten Island, the first week in July, 1776, so pleased was he with his reception in the harbor of New York, that he wrote these words to the British government:

"I have great reason to expect an enormous body of the inhabitants to join the army from the provinces of York, the Jerseys and Connecticut, who, in this time of universal oppression, only wait for opportunities to give proofs of their loyalty and zeal for government. Sixty men came over two days ago with a few arms from the neighborhood of Shrewsbury, in Jersey, who were desirous to serve, and I understand there are five hundred more in that quarter ready to follow their example."

General Howe soon after this began to appoint recruiting officers in different parts of New Jersey, and to organize detachments of Provincials as fast as they presented themselves for service in the army. Mr. Cortlandt Skinner, whose devotion to the interests of the British King before the war had made him a prominent man in New Jersey, was selected as the proper officer to organize and to command the men who were anxious to enroll themselves under the standard of Great Britain.



BRIGADIER-GEN. CORTLANDT SKINNER,
Commander of "Skinner's Brigade."

He was commissioned at first a colonel, and afterwards a brigadier-general, with authority to raise five battalions to consist of two thousand and five hundred soldiers, "under command of gentlemen of the country nominated by himself."

General Skinner established his headquarters, while on Staten Island, in the old Kruzer house, now familiarly known as the Pelton house, at West New Brighton, and occupied by Mrs. General Dufié. The two families had long been on intimate terms, and the Kruzers were in consequence subjected to no hardships. Staten Island at once became the refuge for all tories of New York and New Jersey, as well as for deserters from the Continental army.

General Skinner himself seems to have been stationed on Staten Island and in New York City during most of the war, and it is very seldom that we meet him even with his soldiers in any other part of the contiguous country. We learn from General Howe's Narrative that at the beginning of the campaign of 1777 General Skinner had been able to recruit but five hundred and seventeen men of his complement; but in November, 1777, he had eight hundred and fifty-nine men on his brigade rolls, and in May, 1778, "after several months of active exertions," he had enlisted one thousand one hundred and one men.

But at that time the nucleus for six battalions had been made and the officers commissioned. During that year five hundred and fifty additional volunteers, mostly from New Jersey, and a few native Staten Islanders, were enrolled for service, and afterward sent to Charleston, South Carolina. It is then apparent that General Skinner recruited about two-thirds of the quota first assigned to him. All of these soldiers immediately on enlistment were placed in active service, and they began to distinguish themselves at an early day in their great zeal to annoy, intimidate and injure their former patriot friends and neighbors.

In a letter written by General Howe to Lord George Germain, dated New York, December 20th, 1776, this remark is made: "I cannot close this letter without making mention of the good service rendered in the course of the campaign by Courtlandt Skinner, Esq., Attorney-General in the Jerseys, who has been indefatigable and of infinite service since the army entered those provinces. I therefore humbly recommend him as a gentleman meriting royal favour." Thus early was General Skinner showing his devotion to the King. This was just after Washington's retreat through New Jersey, and General Skinner was urging his own friends to take protection from the British.

In Brasher's Journal, February, 1777, appears the following new catechism:

"Q. Who is the most ungrateful man in the world?

"A. Governor Skinner.

"Q. Why do you call him Governor?

"A. Because when Lord and General Howe thought that they had conquered the Jerseys they appointed him Lieutenant Governor of that State. Skinner assumed that title over one-tenth part of said State and continued his usurpation for six weeks, five days, thirty-six minutes, ten seconds and thirty-one hundredth parts of a second and was then deposed.

"Q. Why is he called ungrateful?

"A. Because he had joined the enemies of his country and enlisted men to fight against his neighbors, his friends and his kinsfolk; because he had endeavored to transfer the soil that gave him bread from the rightful possessors to a foreign hand; and because, to gain

present ease and transitory honours, he would fasten the chains of slavery on three millions of people and their offspring forever."

The answers to these questions clearly show the opinion which patriotic people held of General Skinner and of the efforts which he had already made to restore them to their allegiance to England.

In Rivington's Army List of 1778, we find the first complete roster of the officers of the six battalions of Skinner's Brigade. This probably shows the state of the organization in the early part of the summer of that year. The compilation has been carefully made, the spelling of the names corrected, and it is now set forth in proper official style:

Brigadier-General, Cortlandt Skinner; Chaplain, Edward Winslow.

FIRST BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Elisha Lawrence; Major, Thomas Leonard; Adjutant, Patrick Henry; Quartermaster, James Nelson; Surgeon, William Peterson; Captains, John Barbarie, John Longstreet, Garret Keating and Richard Cayford; Captain-Lieutenant, James Nelson; Lieutenants, John Taylor, Thomas Oakason, Samuel Leonard, John Throckmorton, John Monro, Patrick Henry and Robert Peterson; Ensigns, John Robbins, John Thompson, Richard Lippincott, William Lawrence and Hector McLean.

SECOND BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, John Morris; First Major, John Antill; Second Major, John Colden; Adjutant, Thomas T. Pritchard; Quartermaster, Thomas Morrison; Surgeon, Charles Earle; Surgeon's mate, James Boggs; Chaplain, John Rowland; Captains, Donald Campbell, George Stanforth, Waldron Bleau, Norman McLeod, Cornelius McLeod and Uriah McLeod; Lieutenants, John De Monzes, Thomas T. Pritchard, William Van Dumont, Josiah Parker and William Stevenson; Ensigns, William K. Hurlet and Thomas Morrison.

THIRD BATTALION.¹—First Major, Robert Drummond; Second Major, Philip Van Cortlandt; Adjutant, John Jenkins; Quartermaster, John Falker; Surgeon, Henry Dongan; Captains, John Hatfield, Samuel Hudnut and David Alston; Captain-Lieutenant, John Alston; Lieutenants, Anthony Hollinshead, John Jenkins, John Troup, William Chew, and Francis Frazer; Ensigns, James Brasier Le Grange, John Camp, John Willis and Jonathan Alston.

FOURTH BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Abraham Van Buskirk; First Major, Daniel Isaac Browne; Second Major, Robert Timpany; Adjutant, Arthur Maddox; Quartermaster, William Sorrell; Surgeon, John Hammell; Captains, William Van Allen, Samuel Heyden, Peter Ruttan, Patrick Campbell, Daniel Bessonet, Samuel Ryerson and Arthur Maddox; Lieutenants, Edward Earle, Martin Ryerson, John Van Buskirk, Michael Smith, James Servanier, Donald McPherson

¹ The Third Battalion had no lieutenant-colonel at first, when it was commanded by Major Drummond. Shortly afterward, however, Edward Vaughan Dongan, formerly of

Staten Island, was appointed lieutenant-colonel to command it, and he continued to serve as such until his death in 1778.

and John Hyslop; Ensigns, John Simonson, James Cole, Justus Earle, John Van Norden, Colin McVane and George Ryerson.

FIFTH BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Joseph Barton; Major, Thomas Millidge; Adjutant, Isaac Hedden; Quartermaster, Fleming Colgan; Surgeon, Uzal Johnson; Surgeon's mate, Stephen Millidge; Captains, Joseph Crowell, James Shaw, Benjamin Barton and John Williams; Lieutenants, John Congle, Isaac Hedden, Joseph Waller, William Hutchinson, Christopher Insley, Daniel Shannon and John Reid; Ensigns, Patrick Haggerty, Ezekiel Dennis, Peter Anderson and Joseph Bean.

SIXTH BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Isaac Allen; Major, Richard V. Stockton; Captains, Joseph Lee, Peter Campbell and Charles Harrison; Lieutenants, John Vought, John Hatton and Edward Steele; Ensigns, Daniel Grandin, Cornelius Thompson and James Service.

Some mention must be made of the skirmishes of detachments of the New Jersey Militia and of the Continental Line with "Skinner's Greens," as they were called, whenever those loyalists left Staten Island for a tour of plunder on the rich fields of New Jersey, and note must also be made of direct attacks on the tory forces on Staten Island, as well as a brief statement of the conduct of those loyal battalions in their campaign in the South.

On the morning of February 18th, 1777, Colonel John Neilson, of the Second Regiment, Middlesex county, New Jersey Militia, with a small detachment of his command, captured Major Richard V. Stockton, of the Sixth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, with fifty-nine enlisted men, on Lawrence Island. Four men were killed in the skirmish, and their arms and camp equipage taken.

During the Spring and Summer of 1777, Skinner's Brigade made various excursions into New Jersey for forage for the British army. This became so annoying that Colonel Matthias Ogden, of the First Battalion, New Jersey Continental Line, then commanding the post at Elizabeth Town, with Colonel Elias Dayton, of the Third Battalion, who was stationed at Newark, and a party of one hundred militia from Essex County, determined to inflict some severe punishment on Skinner's tories. On the 22d of August they were re-inforced by a thousand men of the brigade of Brigadier-General William Smallwood, of Maryland, and of Brigadier-General Chevalier Prondhomme De Borro, and just before midnight they crossed from Halstead's Point, near the mouth of Morse's creek, to Staten Island. Skinner's Brigade was then stationed from Decker's Ferry [Port Richmond] to Billopp's, now Ward's Point.

The attack by the New Jersey Continentals, before daylight the next morning, resulted in capturing Lieutenant-Colonel Elisha Lawrence, of the First Battalion, and Lieutenant-Colonel Joseph Barton, of the Fifth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, with one hundred and

thirty enlisted men of their commands, and in severely wounding Major John Barnes, of the First Battalion, and Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Vaughan Dongan, of the Third Battalion, from which wounds they both died. General Sullivan, however, with the other body of Continentals, endeavored at the same time to surprise Skinner's Brigade; but was deceived by a tory guide, and having come upon the loyal troops awaiting him, was quite severely punished by them. Indeed General Skinner claimed the affair, notwithstanding his loss, as a great victory.

On the 27th of November, 1777, General Philemon Dickenson, commanding the New Jersey Militia, suddenly embarked before daylight from Halstead's Point to Staten Island, with a party of about fourteen hundred militia. He ad-



OLD KRUZER HOMESTEAD, (NOW KNOWN AS THE PELTON HOUSE), WEST NEW BRIGHTON; AT ONE TIME THE HEAD-QUARTERS OF GENERAL SKINNER.

vanced his men in three different detachments by different roads, to rendezvous at a central point a few miles distant, undoubtedly Richmond. Unfortunately it was soon found that General Skinner had been informed of the intended attack, and before three o'clock he had drawn his troops off the Island. General Dickenson, however, made a few little attacks on some straggling parties of the tories and on the detachment of British troops under Major-General John Campbell, and he killed some five or six men and took twenty-four prisoners. He lost three men of his command captured, and two wounded. The main object designed by this affair was not accomplished; but General Washington was pleased with the disposal made of the forces by General Dickenson and the manner in which they had been handled.

A considerable body of Skinner's Brigade spent the winter of 1777-'78 in the gay life which the British soldiery enjoyed during that season in Philadelphia. The rest of the force remained on Staten Island. From Howe's Narrative we find that during their occupancy of Philadelphia the British held out special inducements for men to enlist in the loyal corps; but they were obliged to report that they obtained but "three troops of light dragoons, consisting of one hundred and thirty-two troopers and one hundred and seventy-four real volunteers, from Jersey, under Colonel Van Dyke." The service of this officer, whether he was a Jerseyman or a resident of Pennsylvania, has not been ascertained, nor can it be said what became of the "real volunteers" and what military duty they performed.

On April 2d, 1778, a detachment of Skinner's Brigade left Philadelphia for the purpose of garrisoning the fort at Billingsport, New Jersey. A small attack was made by the militia of New Jersey from Elizabeth Town Port at one o'clock on the morning of June 9th, and they effected a landing on Staten Island and fired upon the Provincial troops that were still stationed here. Again, just before daylight, they attempted to land in ten boats, said to contain one hundred men; but they were greeted with a quick discharge of firearms, and were driven back. It is thus seen that the Tories were not left entirely undisturbed while in possession of Staten Island.

On the evening of June 12th, 1778, Captain Cornelius Hatfield, Jr., of Skinner's Brigade, crossed over the sound and plundered the residence of Lieutenant John Haviland, of the First Regiment of Essex County, New Jersey Militia, and carried him off a prisoner.

Some portion of Skinner's Brigade crossed New Jersey from Cooper's Point to Sandy Hook, with General Sir Henry Clinton, in his memorable march through that State, in June, 1778. After the battle of Monmouth, June 28th, General Washington posted at Elizabeth Town the Brigade of Jersey Continentals under General William Maxwell, to guard and keep in check the armed Tories of Staten Island.

On the 15th day of October, Captain Patrick Ferguson, of the Seventieth Regiment, British Foot, with a detachment of the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, made a descent on Little Neck, New Jersey, on Egg Harbor Inlet, surprised a detachment of Count Pulaski's troops and killed about fifty of his men. On the 27th day of November, an expedition with two thousand troops sailed from Sandy Hook for Savannah, Georgia, and six days after landing at Tybee Island off the harbor of that city, they took part in the fight, December 29th, on Brewton Hill. A detachment of Skinner's Brigade, Lieutenant-Colonel Allen commanding, went out with his party and suffered considerably in the battle just mentioned. Captain Peter Campbell, one of the most gallant officers of the detachment, was killed.

In the year 1779, Skinner's Brigade was so far consolidated as to reduce the organization to four battalions. During the year General Skinner offered a reward of two thousand guineas for the capture of Governor Livingston, of New Jersey, dead or alive. This excited the cupidity and the reckless zeal of many of the Jersey loyalists. A very spicy correspondence ensued in March and April between the Governor and Sir Henry Clinton in reference to this attempted exploit. In May, 1780, we find Ensign James Moody, of the First Battalion, whose very name was a terror to patriots in New Jersey, leading an expedition for the seizure of the Governor.

On the 10th of May, 1779, about one hundred men of the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, crossing from New York City by way of New Dock, attacked their old Bergen County neighbors at Closter. They killed Cornelius Demarest and wounded three other farmers and

burned the dwelling houses and barns of seven of the inhabitants of the village. The militia in that part of the county in the companies of Captains Abraham J. Blauvelt, Cornelius Haring and John Huyler immediately gathered and pursued the tory bands. The Loyalists succeeded, however, in carrying off four of the patriots; but obtained no cattle, forage, or plunder of any kind.

During the summer of 1779, a considerable detachment of Skinner's Brigade was sent to reinforce the British army in South Carolina, and took part in the assault on Savannah, October 9th. A battalion under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Isaac Allen formed a part of the garrison of one of the large redoubts on the south side of the city, near the river. Captain Daniel Cozens, of the Third Battalion, lost his life in this engagement.

On the 9th of January, 1780, Brigadier-General William Irvine received orders from General Washington to ascertain the situation and strength of General Skinner's Brigade on Staten Island. The night of the 14th of January was selected for the enterprise, and Major-General Lord Stirling was detailed to command the forces, which moved in three distinct detachments. The party started on the morning of the 15th, crossed the ice on sleds from De Hart's Point to Staten Island, and one detachment marched towards Dongan's Mills, another toward what is now Tompkinsville, and the third toward Decker's Ferry (Port Richmond). The tories, again apprised of their coming, were found strongly guarded in their works, and it was with some difficulty and address that Lord Stirling was able to withdraw his command in safety, not even daring to attack them in their intrenchments. He had learned that a channel had been opened in the ice from New York, and that large reinforcements were on their way from that city.

One hundred and thirty-one men, selected from the First and Third Battalions of Skinner's Brigade, under command of Lieutenant Van Buskirk, with twelve British dragoons under command of Lieutenant Stewart, made a raid on Elizabeth Town on the evening of January 25th, 1780, and carried off five officers and forty-seven soldiers. They also burned the Presbyterian Church, the Court House and the School House. Captain Cornelius Hatfield, Jr., was the guide of the tory troops on this occasion, and the incendiarism was ascribed to the discredit of this malicious man, whose father was, at that very time, an elder in the church destroyed by his wanton conduct.

On the evening of February 10th, the British and tory troops on Staten Island made another raid on Elizabeth Town, plundering the residences of many prominent citizens and made active search for Judge Elisha Bondinot and the Honorable William Peartree Smith, both noted patriots. On March 24th, they repeated the experiment, and this time took Major Matthias Halsted a prisoner.

Two battalions of Skinner's Brigade having been assigned to the

division commanded by the Hessian General Knyphausen, on June 7th crossed over to Elizabeth Town, marched as far as Connecticut Farms, and thence to Springfield, New Jersey. In the battle of Springfield, which was fought on June 23d, (1780), these two battalions marched on either flank of the division of Major-General Matthews, and on the march and during the fight exchanged many shots with the patriot troops.

In the forces commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Patrick Ferguson, and generally spoken of as British regulars, a considerable number of picked men from Skinner's Brigade had been assigned for special service. Captain Patrick Campbell, of the Second Battalion, commanded the detachment of light infantry which belonged to the command of Colonel Alexander Innes. This corps took an active part in the fight at King's Mountain, South Carolina, on October 7th. Captains Patrick Campbell and Samuel Ryerson were wounded, and Ensign Richard McGinnis was killed in this fight.

On the evening of November 4th, a detachment from Skinner's Brigade went over from Staten Island to Elizabeth Town, and on this occasion captured Colonel Matthias Ogden, of the First Regiment, Jersey Continental Line, and Captain Jonathan Dayton, of the Third Regiment. Enterprises of this kind were frequent during the winter of 1780-'81.

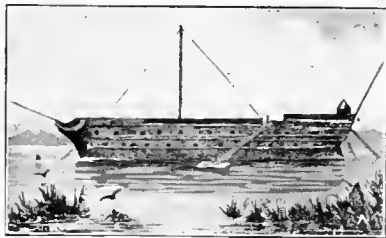
In the siege of Fort Ninety-six, in South Carolina, May 22d, 1781, the garrison consisted partly of men of the Second Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. Captain Patrick Campbell commanded a party of thirty men, who, at one stage of the siege, made a sally from the rear of the battery and fell on the flank of the American troops and a desperate contest ensued. Captain John Barbarie and Lieutenant John Hatton were badly wounded. Skinner's Brigade took part also in the fight at Guilford, at Cowpens, at Eutaw Springs, and at the siege of Charleston. At the battle of Eutaw Springs, Captain James Shaw, of the First Battalion, was mortally wounded and died soon afterward and Captain John Barbarie, of the same organization, and Captain John Van Buskirk and Lieutenant John Troup, of the Third Battalion, received serious wounds.

On September 4th, 1781, the Fourth Battalion left New York with Arnold's expedition for an attack on New London, Connecticut. They landed near the village on September 6th, meditating plunder, not battle. The battalion took part in the closing scene of the desperate defence of Fort Griswold; and the murder of Lieutenant-Colonel William Ledyard, after he had given up his sword, is often in history given to the discredit of Lieutenant-Colonel Van Buskirk. This certainly, however, is an error. General Arnold detached the Fourth Battalion under command of Lieutenant Colonel Joshua Upham, of Massachusetts, to take a hill which commanded the village. This was very quickly done, and General Arnold followed the force to the hill,

which had been taken. During this fight they were compelled to storm Groton Fort, and they massacred the garrison and burned the village of New London.

Among the "prisoners taken in the garrisons of York and Gloucester, October 19th, 1781," we find that there was a captain, a lieutenant and two enlisted men of the Third battalion of Skinner's Brigade. This little party evidently failed to escape on the transport vessels to New York, on which Lord Cornwallis had placed all the Loyalists who had taken part in the siege of Yorktown.

A roster of officers of Skinner's Brigade, in 1783, the close of the war, is given in Rivington's Army List, in the collections of the New York Historical Society. The record was made about the time the Loyalists had abandoned all hope of sustaining the British power



THE OLD JERSEY PRISON-SHIP.

in the new Republic, and were beginning to think where they should flee to escape the hatred of their former friends and neighbors. The list is here given:

Brigadier-General, Cortlandt Skinner.

FIRST BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel, Stephen DeLancey; Major, Thomas Millidge; Adjutant, John Atkinson; Surgeon, Charles Earle; Chaplain, Charles Inglis; Captains, Joseph Crowell, John Cogle, John Taylor, Sammel Leonard, Alexander McDonald, Patrick Haggerty and William Hutchinson; Captain-Lieutenant, Joseph Cunliff; Lieutenants, Isaac Hedden, John Thompson, John Lawrence, William Van Dumont, James Moody, John Reid, Andrew Stockton, James Brittain and Henry Barton; Ensigns, Zenophon Jewett, Ozias Insley, Phineas Millidge, John Woodward, James Barton, Renben Hankinson, Philip Skinner, John Alkinson and Joseph Brittain.

SECOND BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel Isaac Allen; Major, Robert Drummond; Adjutant, Cornelius Thompson (resigned); Adjutant, George Cypher; Quartermaster, William Falker (resigned); Quartermaster, Daniel Jones; Surgeon, Daniel Bancroft; Chaplain, Charles Morgan (removed); Chaplain, James Sayre; Captains, Joseph Lee, Patrick Campbell, Charles Harrison, Bartholomew Thatcher, Daniel Cozens, Thomas Hunlock and John Barbarie; Captain-Lieutenant, Edward Steele; Lieutenants, John Jenkins, William Turner, John Hatton, James Harrison, John Coombs, Enoch Lyon, John Willis and Cornelius Thompson; Ensigns, Nathaniel Coombs, John Shannon, William Banks, John Leonard, Lewis Thompson, George Lee, Ruloff Ruloffs and Stephen Millidge.

THIRD BATTALION.—Lieutenant-Colonel Abraham Van Buskirk; Major Philip Van Cortlandt; Adjutant, John Hyslop; Quartermaster, William Sorrell; Surgeon, John Hammell; Chaplain, Daniel Batwell;

Captains, William Van Allen, Samuel Ryerson, Jacob Van Buskirk, Edward Earle, Waldron Bleau, Norman McLeod and Donald Campbell; Lieutenants, John Van Buskirk, James Servanier, John Hyslop, John Simonson, William Stevenson, Josiah Parker, George Lambert, Justus Earle and Richard Cooper; Ensigns, Philip Van Cortlandt, Jr., William Sorrell, John Jewett, Uriah Bleau, Henry Van Allen, Robert Woodward, Stephen Ryder, — Hendorff and Malcom Wilmott.

Shortly after the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, Skinner's Brigade was disbanded, and many of those who served in its ranks took up lands in Nova Scotia and other parts of the British domain. Some, however, remained at home, and in later years others returned to their former homes. The parts they had taken in the great conflict rendered them obnoxious to their former friends and neighbors, and the effects were keenly felt for succeeding generations. On Staten Island there are families residing to-day whose ancestors served throughout the war in Skinner's Brigade; but the distance of time and the force of circumstances have obliterated the motives and acts which, in those stormy days of war, divided their ancestors and made them enemies.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE JERSEY PRISON SHIP.



AMONG the varied events of the Revolution, there were few circumstances which left a deeper impression on the public mind, than those connected with the cruel and vindictive treatment which was experienced by those of our unfortunate countrymen, whom the fortunes of war had placed on board the prison-ships of the enemy. Still, among the vague and indistinct narratives which have been made, (although in almost every instance falling short of the dreadful realities), but few statements have been given to the world in an authentic form, which might be relied upon to go down in history, and perpetuate the story. "After generations," says Thomas Dring, one of the survivors of the Jersey Prison Ship, writing of his experiences in 1827, "used to doubt whether the tales of the Prison Ships have not been exaggerated beyond the reality. Certain it is they have not been exaggerated. Much of the truth has not been told; but not one-half the detail of its horrors has ever been portrayed."

The Jersey Prison Ship was originally a British ship of the line. She was rated and registered as a sixty-four gun ship; but had usually mounted seventy-four guns. At the commencement of the Revolution, being an old vessel, and proving to be much decayed, she was entirely dismantled, and soon after was fitted up for the holding of prisoners of war, especially seamen in the Continental service. This change was made by order of Lord Howe, soon after his arrival in the harbor of New York.

Staten Island, being the headquarters of the British army and navy in America, from the first days of July, 1776, was naturally the centre of operations from that date to the close of the war. Consequently, thousands of prisoners, captured in various parts of the country, were brought here and detained until other arrangements could be made for their keeping. An old-fashioned prison-pen, capable of containing probably ten thousand men, was established between New Dorp and Richmond, and Continental soldiers and seamen were at frequent intervals coming and going. They were kept there only until other arrangements could be made.

After the battle of Long Island, (which was planned in the old Rose and Crown farm house at New Dorp), and the fall of New York, sheltered prisons were established in that city. The sugar houses and

other large buildings were utilized for that purpose, and, as soon as they were in readiness, hundreds of prisoners who had huddled together on the ground, without roof or bed, in the Staten Island prison-pen were transferred. The Jersey Prison Ship was not in readiness until 1780, and was first moored a short distance off the foot of New Dorp lane, and at once began to fill up with her victims. Information reached Sir Henry Clinton that the Americans were about to attempt the capture of the prison ship, and he ordered that she be removed at once to a safer place. Consequently, she anchored near the site of the Robyn's Reef. A few months later she was removed to a location known as the Wallabout, at present occupied by the Brooklyn Navy Yard.

Fears then naturally arising that the destructive contagion, by which so many of her unfortunate inmates had been swept away, might spread to the shore, she was, in consequence, removed again and moored, with chain cables, out into the river. Besides being entirely dismantled, her port-holes had all been closed and strongly fastened, and two tiers of small holes cut through her sides. These holes were about ten feet apart, each being twenty inches square, and guarded by two strong bars of iron, crossing at right angles, thus leaving four contracted spaces which admitted light of day and served as breathing holes at night.

The number of those who perished on board the prison ships at the Wallabout, has never been and never can be known. It has been ascertained, however, with as much precision as the nature of the case will admit, that more than ten thousand died on board the Jersey, and the hospital ships Scorpion, Strombolo and Hunter. Thousands suffered and died whose names have never been known by their countrymen. They died where no eye could admire their fortitude and no tongue could praise their devotion to their country's cause.

For years, the very name of "the old Jersey" seemed to strike terror to the hearts of those whose necessities required them to venture upon the ocean. The mortality which prevailed on board her was well known throughout the country; and, to be confined within her dungeons, was considered equal to a sentence of death, from which but little hope of escape was entertained. David Sproat, the Commissary of Prisoners, under whose personal supervision the prison-ships were maintained, was an American Refugee, who was "detested for the cruelty of his conduct and the insolence of his manners."

Thomas Dring, master's mate of the privateer *The Chance*, who was captured in May, 1782, spoke of his life on board the Jersey Prison Ship as follows:

"We had now reached the accommodation ladder which led to the gangway on the larboard side of the Jersey; and my station in the boat as she hauled alongside, was exactly opposite to one of the air-ports in the side of the ship. From this aperture, proceeded a strong

current of foul vapor, of a kind to which I had been before accustomed, while confined on board the *Good Hope*, the peculiarly disgusting smell of which, I then recollected, after a lapse of three years. This was, however, far more foul and loathsome than anything which I had ever met with on board that ship, and produced a sensation of nausea far beyond any power of description.

“Here, while waiting for orders to ascend on board, we were addressed by some of the prisoners, from the air-ports. We could not, however, discern their features, as it had now become so dark that we could not distinctly see any object in the interior of the ship. After some questions, whence we came, and respecting the manner of our capture, one of the prisoners said to me that it was ‘a lamentable thing to see so many young men in full strength, with flush of health upon their countenances, about to enter that infernal abode.’ He then added, in a tone and manner but little fitted to afford us much consolation: ‘Death has no relish for such skeleton carcases as we are; but he will now have a feast upon you fresh comers, RHINELANDER SUGAR-HOUSE.’



“After each man had given his name, and the capacity in which he had served on board the vessel in which he was captured, and the same had been duly registered, we were directed to pass through the other barricado door, on the starboard side, down the ladder leading to the main hatchway. I was detained for a short time with the examination, and was permitted to take my bag of clothes with me below; and passing down the hatchway, which was still open, through a guard of soldiers, I found myself among the wretched and disgusting multitude, a prisoner on board the *Jersey*.

“The gratings were soon after placed over the hatchways, and fastened down for the night; and I seated myself on the deck, holding my bag with a firm grip, fearful of losing it among the crowd. I had now ample time to reflect on the horrors of the scene, and to consider the prospect before me. It was impossible to find one of my former ship-mates in the darkness, and I had, of course, no one with whom to speak during the long hours of that dreadful night. Surrounded by I knew not whom, except that they were beings as wretched as myself, with dismal sounds meeting my ears from every direction, a nauseous and putrid atmosphere filling my lungs, at every breath, and a stifling and suffocating heat, which almost deprived me of sense, and even of life. * * *

“The thought of sleep did not enter my mind; and at length, discovering a glimmering of light through the iron gratings of one of the air-ports, I felt that it would indeed be a luxury if I could but obtain a situation near that place, in order to gain one breath of the exterior air. Clutching my hand firmly around my bag of clothes, which I

dared not leave, I began to advance toward the side of the ship; but was soon greeted with the curses and imprecations of those who were lying on the deck, and whom I had disturbed in attempting to pass over them. I, however, persevered, and at length arrived near the desired spot; but found it already occupied, and no persuasion could induce a single individual to relinquish his place for a moment.

“Thus I passed the first dreadful night, waiting with sorrowful forebodings for the coming day. The dawn at length appeared; but came only to present new scenes of wretchedness, disease and woe. I found myself surrounded by a crowd of strange and unknown forms, with the lines of death and famine upon their faces. My former ship-mates were all lost and mingled among the multitude, and it was not until we were permitted to ascend the deck at eight o’clock, that I could discern a single individual whom I had ever seen before. Pale and meagre, the throng came upon deck, to view, in a few moments, the morning sun; and then to descend again, to pass another day of misery and wretchedness.”

On the day of a prisoner’s arrival, it was impossible for him to procure any food; and even on the second day he could not procure any, in time to have it cooked. No matter how long he had fasted, nor how acute his sufferings from hunger and privation, his petty tyrants would on no occasion deviate from their rule of delivering the prisoner’s morsel at a particular hour. And so, the poor, half-famished wretch must absolutely wait until the coming day, before his pittance of food could be boiled with that of his fellow captives.

The cruel tyrants, to whose petty sway the prisoners were subjected on board this hulk, knew no distinction among their prisoners. Whether taken on the land or on the ocean, in arms or from their own firesides, it was the same to them. No matter in what rank or capacity a prisoner might have been known before his capture, no distinction was here made. They were all Rebels!

The prisoners were divided into messes, and one from each collected the food. On this subject Mr. Dring said:

“Terrible, indeed, was the condition of most of my fellow captives. Memory still brings before me those emaciated beings, moving from the Galley, with their wretched pittance of meat; ambling to the spot where his mess were assembled, to divide it with a group of haggard and sickly creatures, their garments hanging in tatters around their meagre limbs, and the hue of death upon their careworn faces. By these it was consumed with their scanty remnants of bread, which was often mouldy and filled with worms. And even from this vile fare they would rise up, in torments from the cravings of unsatisfied hunger and thirst. No vegetables of any description were ever offered us by our inhuman keepers. Good heavens! what a luxury to us would then have been even a few potatoes—if but the very leavings of the swine of our country.”

The regular crew of the Jersey Prison Ship consisted of a captain, two mates, a steward, a cook, and about twelve sailors. The crew had no communication whatever with the prisoners. At times, in addition to the regular officers and seamen of the hulk, there was stationed on board about a dozen old, invalid marines; but the actual guard was composed of soldiers from different regiments quartered on Long and Staten Islands. They were English, Hessians and refugees; and, strange to say, the Hessians were the most merciful and the refugees the most cruel.

During the year 1782, the average number of prisoners on board the Jersey Prison Ship was about one thousand. They were composed principally of the crews of vessels of all nations with whom the English were then at war. By far the greater number, however, had been captured in American waters. The hospital ships, the *Scorpion*, *Strombolo* and *Hunter*, were used for the reception of the sick from the principal hulk. The Jersey at length became so crowded and the mortality on board her increased so rapidly, that sufficient room could not be found on board the hospital ships for their reception. Under these circumstances it was determined to prepare a part of the upper deck of the Jersey for the reception of the sick from between the decks. Bunks were thereupon erected to which the sick were carried on their first symptoms, and to escape being trampled upon on the dark decks below.

One of the duties of the working party, made up exclusively of prisoners, was, on each morning, to place the sick in the bunks, and if any of the prisoners had died during the night to carry the dead bodies to the upper deck and lay them upon the gratings. Any prisoner who could procure and chose to furnish a blanket, was allowed to sew it around the remains of his dead companion. A boat was signalled from the hospital ship, into which the working party with the dead prisoner were taken, and then put off for shore. The prisoners were always anxious to be engaged in the duty of interment. They were always accompanied by a guard of soldiers. On reaching shore a trench was dug in the sand bank, and the corpses were laid in it without ceremony, and the sand thrown over them.

At the expiration of the war, in 1783, the prisoners remaining on board the Jersey Prison Ship were liberated, and the hulk, being considered unfit for further use, was abandoned where she lay. The dread of contagion prevented any one from venturing on board, and even from approaching her polluted frame. But the agencies of destruction were at work; her planks were soon filled with worms, which, as if sent to remove this disgrace to the name of common humanity, ceased not from their labor until they had penetrated through the decaying bottom, through which the water rushed in, and she sank. With her went down the names of many thousands of our countrymen, with which her inner planks and sheathing were literally cov-

ered, for but few of her inmates had ever neglected to add their own names to the almost innumerable catalogue. Could these have been counted, some estimate might be made of the whole number who were there immured; but this record was long ago consigned to eternal oblivion. It is supposed that more men perished on the decks of the Jersey Prison Ship, than ever died in any place of confinement on the face of the earth, in the same number of years, up to that time.

In the year 1803, the bank of the Wallabout was secured for the purpose of building a navy yard, and a very great quantity of bones were collected. A memorial was presented to Congress by the Tammany Society, requesting an appropriation sufficient to defray the expenses necessary for the interment, and for the erection of a suitable monument upon the spot. The memorial, presented by the Hon. Samuel L. Mitchell, was as follows:

"Your memorialists, citizens of the United States, and inhabitants of the City of New York, beg leave to recall to the memory of your honorable body an event which you cannot but have noticed; an event famous in history; melancholy in its circumstances, and which, while it awakens the tear of sympathy and regret, seems also, in the opinion of your memorialists, to claim some attention from the political fathers of our country, the Supreme Legislature of the United States of America.

"The lapse of years is gradually drawing the veil of oblivion over the memories of those unfortunate men, our once esteemed fellow citizens, who, when our country struggled for her rights and liberties, gallantly faced the most powerful maritime nation of Europe on her own element, and were doomed, by the ill fortune of war, to languish out their lives in extreme misery and distress on board the prison ships of our enemies in the harbor of New York.

"It is, perhaps, necessary to remind your honorable body that thousands thus perished, who, animated by the divine spirit of liberty, suffered all the evils of imprisonment, exile and want, rather than join the standard of their country's enemies; and preferred death itself, with all its horrors, to the abandonment of her cause. We cannot refuse our admiration to patriotism so pure and exalted!

"Adjacent to the mooring places of those floating prisons where our brave seamen yielded up their lives to the merciless policy, or native barbarity of a foreign foe, is the site of the present navy yard. In leveling the ground for the improvement, the earthly remains of thousands of those gallant men have been, and still are, daily seen, scarce earthed in the falling banks, or exposed on the naked shores. These bones—these skeletons—these relics of departed man—the hand of individual humanity has carefully collected for a decent interment, as the last sad ceremony of regard and affection which can now be given to the memory of those whose constancy and patriotism had endeared them to their country. The liberality of Mr. John Jack-

son has induced the offer to appropriate an eligible piece of land as the place of this solemn depository.

"If the ancient Grecian Republics—if Athens, the noblest of them all, raised columns, temples and pyramids to commemorate those who fell on the fields of Marathon and Plataea in defence of their country; can America be backward, and yet just, in paying her tribute of respect to the memories of citizens, who, equally patriotic and meritorious, perished less splendidly, in the prisons of unheeded want and cruel pestilence?

"Without trespassing further on the time of your honorable house, we would briefly suggest that, after preparing a decent tomb, where the precious relics of those victims of the nation may rest undisturbed and sacred, until the Great Spirit has decreed resurrection of the dead, and the final consummation of all things; we would wish to see erected some monument that may endure the rage of Time; neither lofty nor sumptuous, nor magnificent, but which may, nevertheless, inform future ages that 'Here lie the remains of an immense multitude of men, who, preferring death to the sacrifice of their honor and the fidelity they owed to their country, perished in the prison ships at New York.'



FOUNTAIN HOMESTEAD, NEW DORP.
In which Margaret Moneriette stopped during the Revolution;
erected about 1668.

"If, in the estimation of your honorable body, this be an object worthy of your attention, we would solicit such an appropriation toward the prosecution of this design, as your wisdom may deem requisite and just.

"New York, July 31st, 1803.

"GEORGE J. WARNER,

"WILLIAM MOONEY,

"NATHAN SANDFORD,

WILLIAM BOYD,

JOHN JACKSON,

EDWARD ROBERTS,

"Committee of Tammany Society."

Hon. Samuel L. Mitchell replied that, "As to the ultimate success of your patriotic application, gentlemen, I dare not hold out any warm encouragement. For I think I discover a disposition among the majority of this House to let the bill and amendments remain where they are, and do nothing more about them. Some are of opinion that Congress ought not to appropriate public money for such purposes. Others think that the art of Printing has superseded the use and intention of monuments. Mention of your application will be recorded on the Journals of the House of Representatives, and be a lasting memorandum of your zeal and benevolence."

From Congress much was expected, as the subject was purely national, and one which deeply interested the public sensibility. No measures were taken, however, by that honorable body. In the winter of 1807, the subject was again brought forward by the Tammany Society, and a committee, (called the Wallabout Committee), appointed, to take measures in carrying the long-contemplated design of interment into effect.

The Committee on February 1st, 1808, presented a report which was adopted. It was to the effect "That the Tammany Society, or Columbian Order, from their national structure and organization, being entitled to originate measures on this subject, do immediately proceed to the adoption of a plan for the purpose of interring with suitable rites and ceremonies the bones of our countrymen who perished on board the Jersey Prison ship, now lying on the shores of the Wallabout."

A circular letter was then issued, containing a general invitation to everybody to forward information respecting the dead, either to Benjamin Roumaine, Grand Sachem, or John Jackson, chairman of the committee, and ordered printed in the newspapers of the United States. "And particularly that the Reverend the clergy, and all the public officers, military and civil, of the town of Brooklyn, the corporation of the city of New York, the different military corps, and all the officers of distinction that can conveniently be assembled, together with the citizens at large, be requested to unite on the occasion." Also, "that a monument of American materials and workmanship, be erected, with suitable inscriptions, emblematic in a degree and execution, and descriptive of the events we are about to commemorate." Jacob Vandervoort, John Jackson, Issachar Cozzens, Burdet Stryker, Robert Townsend, Jr., Benjamin Watson and Samuel Cowdry were the Wallabout Committee.

The committee having power to form a plan "for the interment of that portion of the remains of our countrymen lying on the shores of Long Island," procured from Mr. John Jackson, on whose farm they were deposited, "a deed for a piece of ground, conspicuously and advantageously situated, being near the head of the navy yard, and which will not be affected by any regulations that may hereafter take place. He has already planted some trees of an appropriate description on the spot, and given to the Society permission to inter the bones in such a manner and with such solemnities as they may think proper."

On Wednesday, April 13th, 1808, in pursuance of a resolution of the Tammany Society, the corner-stone was laid. A procession was formed at the Brooklyn ferry, Major Ayerigg acting as marshal of the day. In the line was a company of United States marines, under Lieutenant Johnson; a body of citizens; committees from different societies; the Grand Sachem of the Tammany Society, the Father of

the Council, and the orator of the day, Joseph D. Fay; the Wallabout Committee, headed by the corner-stone drawn on a carriage; a detachment of Artillery, under command of Lieutenant Townsend.

The inscription on the corner-stone was as follows: "In the name of the Spirits of the Departed Free—Sacred to the Memory of that portion of American Seamen, soldiers and citizens who perished on board the prison ships of the British at the Wallabout during the Revolution. This is the corner-stone of the vault erected by the Tammany Society, or Columbian Order, which contains their remains. The ground for which was bestowed by John Jackson—Nassau Island, season of blossoms. Year of the discovery, the 316th, of the institution the 19th, and of American Independence the 32d. April 6, 1808."

The Tomb of the Martyrs was completed, and the Tammany Society intended that the bones of the patriots should be consigned there on the 25th of May, 1808, but a heavy snow storm prevented. On Thursday, the 26th, it took place. "The first ray of twilight was announced by a morning gun from the Park—the Battery—Fort Columbus—the Flotilla—and the Wallabout. The thunder of cannon re-echoed from shore to shore and died away in murmurs along the waters of the East and Hudson Rivers. It was the dawn of a day glorious to America."

At ten o'clock, "under the command of General Morton and General Steddiford, all the military; and the citizen societies, under the direction of Garrett Sickles, Grand Marshal of the day, formed in procession on Broadway." The grandest procession ever witnessed in the metropolis in the old days was that which crossed over to Brooklyn on that day and surrounded the Tomb of the Martyrs. An eloquent address was delivered by Mr. Williston.

It is a sad reflection that, almost a century later, finds no monument over the Tomb of the Martyrs. Some years ago, the Society of Old Brooklynites presented a memorial to Congress; but to no effect. And now the Daughters of the American Revolution are laboring in the same patriotic cause, hopeful that some day they will succeed in placing over the hallowed spot a lasting tribute to the memory of those who suffered and died for the Republic.

CHAPTER XXX.

MARGARET MONCRIEFFE ON STATEN ISLAND.



HE breaking out of the Revolutionary war found a number of British officers domesticated among the colonists, and connected with them by marriage. In New York and the other garrisoned towns, officers of the army led society, as military men still do in every garrisoned town in the world. When hostilities began, and every man was ordered to his post, some of these officers left their families residing among the people; and it happened, in a few instances, that the events of war carried a father far away from his wife and children, never to rejoin them. The future Scott of America will know how to make all this very familiar to the American people by the romantic and pathetic fictions which it will suggest to him.

Margaret Moncrieffe, a girl of fourteen; but a woman in development, witty, vivacious, piquant and beautiful, who prior to the war had lived in New York city, and had become well known to the old-fashioned people of Staten Island, through her frequent visits here, had been left at Elizabethtown, New Jersey, by her father, Captain James Moncrieffe,¹ who afterward became a Lieutenant-Colonel of Engineers in the British army. They were related to Governor Livingston, of New Jersey, and during her sojourn in Elizabeth, she made her home in Liberty Hall, the noted home of the Livingstons.

Captain Moncrieffe was cut off from all communication with his daughter. Destitute of resources, and anxious to rejoin her father, she wrote to General Putnam for his advice and assistance. General Putnam received her letter in New York about the time that Major Aaron Burr joined him, and his reply was prepared for his signature by the hand of his new aide-de-camp. The good old general declared in this letter that he was her father's enemy, indeed, as an officer; but as a man, his friend, and ready to do any good office for him or his. He invited her to come and reside in his family, (his headquarters being in the old Washington Hotel, No. 1, Broadway), until arrangements could be made for sending her to Staten Island. She consented, an

¹ There was a Captain Moncrieffe in the Queen's Rangers, who has often been mentioned as the father of Margaret; but this is an error. This Captain Moncrieffe was still serving in that regiment at the close of the war with the same rank, while the other was promoted to Lieutenant-colonel of Engineers some

time before that, and served with General Percy. Judging from the fact that both, bearing the same name and rank, at the commencement of the war, and having resided in New York, we conclude that they were possibly relatives.

officer was sent to Elizabeth to conduct her to the city, and she was at once established in General Putnam's house. There she met and became intimate with Major Burr.

What followed from this intimacy has been stated variously by those who have written of it. The proper thing to do, all writers seemed to think, at a later period, was to strive to blacken the character of Aaron Burr; and so, Mr. Davis, Burr's supposed friend and biographer, played traitor to the memory of the man who had been true to him in sunshine and storm, when the grave had closed over his mortal remains and there was no opportunity of defence,—and he joined the popular clamor and attributed Margaret Moncrieffe's subsequent career of sorrow and shame to Aaron Burr.

In support of this accusation, Mr. Davis quotes from Margaret Moncrieffe's autobiography, published after she had been the mistress of half a dozen of the notables of London, certain passages which, taken by themselves, do certainly corroborate the charge. Great, indeed, was our astonishment on referring to the work itself (*Memoirs of Mrs. Coghlan, 1783*), to find that her narrative, read in connection, not only affords no support to Mr. Davis's insinuations, but explicitly, and twice, contradicts them. As a reply to Mr. Davis's garbled extracts, here follows the entire passage relating to her connection with the American army. It is known and conceded that the young officer whom she extols in such passionate language was Major Aaron Burr. Thus writes Mrs. Coghlan, *nee* Moncrieffe:



FERRINE HOMESTEAD, GARRETSONS, ERECTED ABOUT 1668.

“When I arrived in Broadway (a street so called), where General Putnam resided, I was received with great tenderness, both by Mrs. Putnam and her daughters, and on the following day I was introduced by them to General and Mrs. Washington, who likewise made it their study to show me every mark of regard; but I was seldom allowed to be alone, although some times, indeed, I found an opportunity to escape to the gallery on top of the house, where my chief delight was to view, with a telescope, our fleet and our army on Staten Island. My amusements were few; the good Mrs. Putnam employed me and her daughters constantly to spin flax for shirts for the American soldiers; indolence, in America, being totally discouraged; and I likewise worked for General Putnam, who, though not an accomplished *muscadin*, like our diletantes of St. James's-street, was certainly one of

the best characters in the world; his heart being composed of those noble materials which equally command respect and admiration.

"One day, after dinner, the *Congress* was the toast; General Washington viewed me very attentively, and sarcastically said, 'Miss Moncrieffe, you don't drink your wine.' Embarrassed by this reproof, I knew not how to act; at last, as if by a secret impulse, I addressed myself to the 'American Commander,' and taking the wine, I said, 'General Howe is the toast.' Vexed at my temerity, the whole company, especially General Washington, censured me; when my good friend, General Putnam, as usual, apologized, and assured them I did not mean to offend. 'Besides,' replied he, 'everything said or done by such a child ought rather to amuse than affront you.' General Washington, piqued at this observation, then said, 'Well, miss, I will overlook your indiscretion, on condition that you will drink my health, or General Putnam's, the first time you dine at Sir William Howe's table, on the other side of the water.'

"These words conveyed to me a flattering hope that I should once more see my father, and I promised General Washington to do anything which he desired, provided he would permit me to return to him.

"Not long after this circumstance, a flag of truce arrived from Staten Island, with letters from Major Moncrieffe, demanding me, for they now considered me as a prisoner. General Washington would not acquiesce in this demand, saying 'that I should remain a hostage for my father's good behavior.' I must here observe, that when General Washington refused to deliver me up, the noble-minded Putnam, as if it were by instinct, laid his hand upon his sword, and, with a violent oath, swore 'that my father's request *should* be granted.' The Commander-in-chief, whose influence governed the Congress, soon prevailed on them to consider me as a person whose situation required their strict attention; and, that I might not escape, they ordered me to Kingsbridge, where, in justice, I must say, that I was treated with the utmost tenderness. General Mifflin there commanded. His lady was a most accomplished, beautiful woman, a Quaker. And here my heart received its first impression—an impression that, amid the subsequent shocks which it has received, has never been effaced, and which rendered me very unfit to admit the embraces of an unfeeling, brutish husband.

"O, may these pages one day meet the eye of him who subdued my virgin heart, whom the immutable, unerring laws of nature had pointed out for my husband, but whose sacred decree the barbarous customs of society fatally violated. To him I plighted my virgin vow, and I shall never cease to lament that obedience to a father left it incomplete. When I reflect on my past sufferings, now that, alas! my present sorrows press heavily upon me, I cannot refrain from expatiating a little on the inevitable horrors which ever attend the frustration of

natural affections: I myself, who, unpitied by the world, have endured every calamity that human nature knows, am a melancholy example of this truth; for if I know my own heart, it is far better calculated for the purer joys of domestic life, than for the hurricane of extravagance and dissipation in which I have been wrecked.

“Why is the will of nature so often perverted? Why is social happiness for ever sacrificed at the altar of prejudice? Avarice has usurped the throne of reason, and the affections of the heart are not consulted. We cannot command our desires, and when the object of our being is unattained, misery must necessarily be our doom. Let this truth, therefore, be for ever remembered: when once an affection has rooted itself in a tender, constant heart, no time, no circumstance can eradicate it. Unfortunate, then, are they who are joined, if their hearts are not matched!

“With this conqueror of my soul, how happy should I now have been! What storms and tempests should I have avoided, (at least I am pleased to think so), if I had been allowed to follow the bent of my inclinations! and happier, O, ten thousand times happier should I have been with him in the wildest desert of our native country, the woods affording us our only shelter, and their fruits our only repast, than under the canopy of costly state, with all the refinements and embellishments of courts, with the royal warrior who would fain have proved himself the conqueror of France.

“My conqueror was engaged in another cause; he was ambitious to obtain other laurels: he fought to liberate, not to enslave nations. He was a colonel in the American army,² and high in the estimation of his country; his victories were never accompanied with one gloomy, relentless thought; they shone as bright as the cause which achieved them! I had communicated by letter to General Putnam the proposals of this gentleman, with my determination to accept them, and I was embarrassed by the answer which the general returned; he entreated me to remember that the person in question, from his political principles, was extremely obnoxious to my father, and concluded by observing, ‘that I surely must not unite with a man who would not hesitate to drench his sword in the blood of my nearest relation, should he be opposed to him in battle.’ Saying this, he lamented the necessity of giving advice contrary to his own sentiments, since in every other respect he considered the match as unexceptionable. Nevertheless, General Putnam, after this discovery, appeared, in all his visits to Kingsbridge, extremely reserved; nor did he ever cease to make me the object of his concern to Congress; and, after various applications, he succeeded in obtaining leave for my departure; when, in order that I should go to Staten Island with the respect due to

² This is a mistake, caused by the common habit, even at this day, of speaking of a lieutenant-colonel as colonel. Although Aaron Burr

acted as brigadier-general in the Continental army for some time, his highest actual rank was that of lieutenant-colonel.

my sex and family, the barge belonging to the Continental Congress was ordered, with twelve oars, and a general officer, together with his suite,³ was dispatched to see me safe across the bay of New York. The day was so very tempestuous, that I was half drowned with the waves dashing against me. When we came within hail of the *Eagle* man-of-war, which was Lord Howe's ship, a flag of truce was sent to meet us; the officer despatched on this occasion was Lieutenant Brown. General Knox told him that he had orders to see me safe at headquarters. Lieutenant Brown replied, 'It was impossible, as no person from the enemy could approach nearer the English fleet'; but added, 'that if I would place myself under his protection, he certainly would attend we thither.' I then entered the barge, and bidding an eternal farewell to my dear American friends, turned MY BACK ON LIBERTY.

"We first rowed alongside the *Eagle*, and Mr. Brown afterward conveyed me to headquarters. When my name was announced, the British commander-in-chief sent Colonel Sheriff (lately made a general, and who, during my father's life-time, was one of his most particular friends; although, alas! the endearing sentiment of friendship now seems extinct in his breast, as far as the unhappy daughter is concerned), with an invitation from Sir William Howe to dinner, which was necessarily accepted. When introduced, I cannot describe the emotion I felt; so sudden the transition in a few hours, that I was ready to sink into earth! Judge the distress of a girl not fourteen, obliged to encounter the curious, inquisitive eyes of at least forty or fifty people who were at dinner with the general. Fatigued with their fastidious compliments, I could only hear the buzz among them, saying, 'She is a sweet girl, she is divinely handsome'; although it was some relief to be placed at table next to the wife of Major Montresor, who had known me from my infancy. Owing to this circumstance, I recovered a degree of confidence; but being unfortunately asked, agreeable to military etiquette, for a toast, I gave, 'General Putnam.' Colonel Sheriff said, in a low voice, 'You must not give him here'; when Sir William complaisantly replied, 'O! by all means; if he be the lady's sweetheart, I can have no objection to drink his health.' This involved me in a new dilemma; I wished myself a thousand miles distant, and, to divert the attention of the company, I gave to the general a letter which I had been commissioned to deliver from General Putnam, of which the following is a copy (and here I consider myself bound to apologise for the bad spelling of my most excellent republican friend. The bad orthography was amply compensated by the magnanimity of the man who wrote it):

³ Major Aaron Burr was a member of General Knox's suite on this occasion, and represented General Putnam, who intended that his

aide should accompany the young lady to General Howe's headquarters at New Dorp.

“General Putnam’s compliments to Major Moneriette, has made him a present of a fine daughter, if he don’t lick her he must send her back again, and he will provide her with a good twig husband.”

“The substitution of *twig* for *whig* husband, served as a fund of entertainment to the whole company.”⁴

Miss Moneriette proceeds in her Memoirs to record the history of her marriage with Mr. Coghlan, who, she says, drove her into the arms of a paramour by the brutality of his conduct. She asserts that she had led a strictly virtuous life until, after being forced into a marriage with a man she loathed, she was subjected by him to harsh and cruel treatment. The statements of a woman in Margaret Moneriette’s position, in later years, may not be regarded as positive evidence; yet it seems just to the memory of Aaron Burr for the reader to be informed that the story of her ruination by him finds no corroboration in her own narrative. The man has enough to answer for without having the ruin of this girl of fourteen laid to his charge. Major Burr was, to a considerable extent, his general’s general; and if he had really loved Margaret Moneriette, and she him, and each had desired marriage, it seems reasonable that General Putnam could have been easily dissuaded from making any serious opposition to it.⁵



BULL'S HEAD TAVERN, HEADQUARTERS
OF THE TORIES DURING THE
REVOLUTION.

Drawn from description by the author.

Perhaps if Margaret Moneriette had known who it was that caused her removal from the city, she might not have been so easily captivated. According to a story told by the late Colonel W. L. Stone, (author of the *Life of Brant*), it was no other than Major Burr himself. Before her arrival at General Putnam’s, it appears that Burr, though he was delighted with her wit and vivacity, conceived the idea that she might be a British spy; and as he was looking over her shoulder one day, while she was painting a bouquet, the suspicion darted into his mind that she was using the “language of the flowers” for the purpose of conveying intelligence to the enemy. He communicated a suspicion to General Washington, who thought it only prudent to remove her a few miles further inland, to the quarters

⁴ This dinner was given in the “Rose and Crown” farmhouse, which stood on the side of the embankment at the head of New Dorp Cove. Margaret Moneriette made her home for some time after that in the old stone house, still standing, on the Richmond road, between the Black Horse Tavern and Egbertville. It is known as the “Fountain Homestead.” The house at the time was occupied by Major Montresor, (an aide-de-camp to Sir William Howe), and his family. There Margaret remained until she returned to the city, some time before the close of the war. She was on

board the flag-ship of the British fleet which sailed down the Narrows on the memorable Evacuation Day. She went directly to London with her husband.

⁵ Upon the written evidence, Burr, be his reputation for intrigue as it may, is to be acquitted of the ruin of Margaret Moneriette, since the only direct proof is from her own pen, and she, instead of accusing him as the author of her woes, looked back to her relations with him as the happiest memories of her life.—*Sabine’s American Loyalists*.

of General Mifflin; where, after the evacuation of the city, Major Burr met her again, and, as she says, won her virgin affections. Colonel Stone was very intimate with Major Burr in his latter years, and had long conversations with him about Revolutionary times. He may have derived this pretty tale from Major Burr himself.

The last official act of the Rev. Dr. Auchmuty, as rector of Trinity Church, in New York City, was to marry this unfortunate maiden to Captain John Coghlan, of the Eighty-ninth Regiment of Foot in the British army, who, she relates, "drove her into the arms of a paramour by the brutality of his conduct." Mrs. Coghlan separated from her husband and became the mistress of the Duke of York and other noblemen. For a period of fifteen years from 1780, "she made no inconsiderable noise in the fashionable circles of Great Britain and France." Alternately, she revelled in wealth and suffered in squalid poverty. Deserted at last, she died a heart-broken woman in London.

Captain Coghlan was the son of a London merchant of great wealth, and, in youth, his prospects were without a single cloud. He entered the Navy as a midshipman, and went "round the world" with the celebrated Cook. Disliking the sea, he turned his thoughts successively to the Bar and Church; but finally procured a commission in the army. He served several campaigns in America, and was frequently with his command on Staten Island, where he first met Margaret Moncrieffe in the old Fountain homestead at New Dorp; and, as we have stated, married her in New York. This connection, formed without caution, and against the inclinations of his bride, proved, as he averred, as miserable to himself as to her.

After the close of the Revolution, in 1783, he obtained the King's permission to serve in the Russian army; but his domestic disappointment preyed upon his mind, and he became dissipated. Returning to England, he entered "with avidity into every fashionable vice and folly of the day." His extravagance and relations with women gradually involved him in ruin. Finally, broken down, utterly wretched, and an outcast, he became an inmate of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, where he died, in 1807, in the fifty-fourth year of his age, and in the most abject and pitiable condition. His relatives, in both England and Wales, were very respectable, and his body was retained in the dead-house eight days, in the hope that some one of them would claim it, and give it decent burial. The charity of a stranger furnished a covering for his remains, and they were deposited in the burial-ground of the hospital. It is said that Captain Coghlan was one of the handsomest men of his time, that he was social and convivial, and in his charities, when in possession of money, liberal to a fault.

One cause of difference between Captain Coghlan and his wife was probably political, for Margaret, as is averred, sympathized with the Americans. She was a brilliant woman, possessed of fine literary ability, and had her life been guided by favorable circumstances, would have proved a blessing to the world.

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE NEW DORP DUELLING GROUND.



LMOST directly west of the old Black Horse Tavern, at New Dorp, stands a cluster of venerable trees, and on the south side of which is a graceful knoll, known as Camp Hill. Behind this hill—or, rather, to the west of it—is a hollow, which was, a century or more ago, surrounded by dense woods. Far more than a score of duels have been fought at this spot.

Camp Hill was so named by the British, during their encampment at New Dorp, and its delightful situation soon made it a resort for the officers of that army. Indeed it soon became a miniature “Monte Carlo,” and witnessed the ruin of many a promising member of the King’s army.

Gambling and duelling in those days were practised to such an extent as to threaten general demoralization to the royal troops. Sir William Howe repeatedly summoned his generals in council in the “Rose and Crown,” his headquarters, with a hope that means could be effected to break up these nefarious practices. Nearly fifty officers were court-martialed and dishonorably dismissed during the encampment of the British army at New Dorp, in consequence of gambling and duelling.

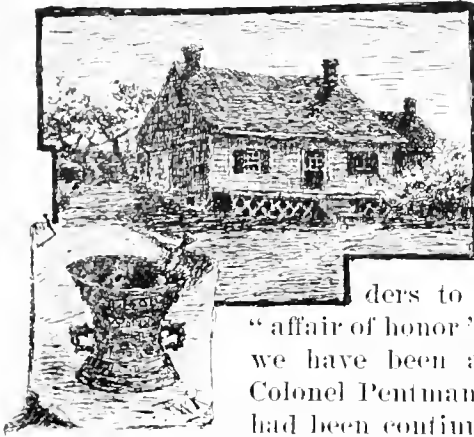
The fact became notorious at one time that even general officers so far lost their dignity and their regard for military discipline that they sat down to the gambling table with private soldiers, and even servants, so great was their greed for money; while, once beyond the shadow of Camp Hill, they would exact the severest discipline and all the bowing and saluting and mimicry that military etiquette demands.

The story has been told of a young Scotch officer who, after losing all his money on Camp Hill, requested a loan from his rival at the gambling table, in order that he might meet an obligation on the following day, and, on being refused, went alone to the secluded ravine beyond and gave up his life in disgrace.

In this ravine General Robertson, of the British army, settled an old account with a French naval officer, named Vollogne, who had resigned his commission and come to this country for that express purpose. It is said that General Robertson’s fellow officers attempted to arrange an amicable settlement, but without avail. The General escaped unharmed; but his adversary received a wound in his breast,

from the effects of which he died a few months afterward in Quebec.

Lieutenant-Colonel John Graves Simcoe was challenged and met his adversary here, in the person of Colonel Mawhood, who based his grievance upon the belief that Simcoe had exercised undue influence to succeed him as commandant of the Queen's Rangers. Colonel Simcoe was a fine swordsman, and being the challenged party, naturally had the choice of weapons. He selected "officers' swords" (presumably those carried by the officers of the Grenadiers), and he proved too skillful a manipulator of cold steel for his adversary, who gave up the contest with a broken arm.



QUARTERS AT WOODROW, DURING THE REVOLUTION; RECENTLY RECONSTRUCTED.

Colonel Illig, a dashing young officer on Sir William Howe's staff, who was afterward killed at Prince's Bay, while carrying orders to General Vaughan, here settled an "affair of honor" with Colonel Pentman. From what we have been able to learn from descendants of Colonel Pentman, there was an "old grudge," which had been continued from their school days at home; and this was the first time they had ever met with an opportunity to effect a settlement. Major André, then a captain in the Twenty-second Regiment of Foot, acted as second for Colonel Illig.

These officers fought with cavalry sabres, in the handling of which they were both said to have been experts. They were mounted on blooded horses, the protection and management of which called into requisition triple the amount of skill required for ordinary ground fencing. According to our informant, the combat continued steadily for more than one hour, and men and horses were almost exhausted from fatigue. The combatants were both badly cut, but not seriously, while their innocent beasts were lacerated so as to render them unfit for further military service. The "affair" was a drawn battle, as neither was able to continue. They were carried to their quarters—Colonel Illig to the Rose and Crown, and Colonel Pentman to his regiment, which was encamped near by. A second attempt was made to "settle the account"; but Sir William Howe prevented it by a personal appeal to the duellists, both of whom were his intimate friends. It is said to have been a great relief to Colonel Pentman's friends when Colonel Illig was "out of the way." Colonel Pentman, however, remained in the army until the close of the Revolution, and finally died from the effects of a wound received in a duel with an Austrian cavalry officer, with whom he was serving, near the close of the last century.

These officers fought with cavalry sabres, in the handling of which they were both said to have been experts. They were mounted on blooded horses, the protection and management of which called into requisition triple the amount of skill required for ordinary ground fencing. According to our informant, the combat continued steadily for more than one hour, and men and horses were almost exhausted from fatigue. The combatants were both badly cut, but not seriously, while their innocent beasts were lacerated so as to render them unfit for further military service. The "affair" was a drawn battle, as neither was able to continue. They were carried to their quarters—Colonel Illig to the Rose and Crown, and Colonel Pentman to his regiment, which was encamped near by. A second attempt was made to "settle the account"; but Sir William Howe prevented it by a personal appeal to the duellists, both of whom were his intimate friends. It is said to have been a great relief to Colonel Pentman's friends when Colonel Illig was "out of the way." Colonel Pentman, however, remained in the army until the close of the Revolution, and finally died from the effects of a wound received in a duel with an Austrian cavalry officer, with whom he was serving, near the close of the last century.

General Skinner was challenged to fight on this ground, by a Hessian nobleman named Von Locht, who had sought the position that was given to Skinner—that of commandant of the Native Loyalists, or “Skinner’s Greens,” as they were familiarly called. The Count believed that he would be able to remove General Skinner in this manner, and then not only have his rival out of the way, but prove his bravery and skill so forcibly to the commander-in-chief, that he would be immediately appointed. Sir William, however, informed General Skinner that he was determined to break up duelling among the officers of his army, then so popular, and if he (Skinner) went on with his determination to meet the Count, he would certainly be court-martialed and disgraced. General Skinner presented his resignation, but Sir William would not accept it. Count Von Locht was requested to leave the country, lest he should get into serious difficulty with the military authorities, and so he drifted off to Nova Scotia, and finally back to his native land.

Colonel Christopher Billopp is said to have had an “honorable encounter” with General Erskine on this ground, neither of whom were injured. Afterward they became the warmest of friends.

The only duel known to have been fought by “plain citizens,” on the New Dorp ground, was “between young Hamilton and Lathrop.” It is presumed that this was the son of Alexander Hamilton, who finally died in a duel at Weehawken, on the identical spot, but prior to, where his father was shot in 1804. Lathrop was an English lawyer, who had come to this country in the interest of Tory claimants.

The romance of this dark spot is told of two line officers belonging to a Highland regiment, encamped at New Dorp. They had learned to love a fair Staten Island girl, who had become a belle among the officers at the post, as her father was a volunteer aide-de-camp on the staff of Sir William Howe. They had learned to hate each other with the same intensity that they loved the girl. Friends interceded, after it was learned that a challenge had been given; but neither would give way. They met, with so much anger in their hearts, that they could not be persuaded to clasp each other’s hand before the fatal moment to fire arrived. Their seconds, two fellow officers, paced off the ground and then placed a heavy duelling pistol in the hand of each. When all was in readiness each second stood in front of his principal and pleaded for a reconciliation. “We are determined to fight!” was the only response. Then the seconds stepped aside and the fatal word was given. Both fell, mortally wounded; both died in the course of a few days and their remains were laid away in the old Dutch cemetery at Richmond. Their graves, which were side by side, were never marked; but they were long kept green by the same hand the two nameless duellists had died to gain. An aged Staten Islander, who knew this lady well when she had grown

very old, and was childish and feeble, said that he had repeatedly heard her tell the story of the lovers of her youth, and that she firmly believed that some day one or the other would come back and claim her for his bride.

At the commencement of the present century, when what is now Twenty-first street, in New York City, was far out in the country, and was known by no other name than "Love lane," reaching from shore to shore, and lined on either side by great elm trees, it was the scene of many a wicked duel. One of these, however, was planned to take place at New Dorp, but a severe storm prevented it at the time designated. When the parties had got together again they were disappointed in the arrival of the barge which was to bring them down the bay to Staten Island, and so the seconds selected "Love lane."

The principals in this duel were William Coleman, a lawyer and editor of the *Evening Post*, and Captain Thompson, Harbor Master of New York. A bitter newspaper war was in progress between Coleman, of the *Post*, and Cheetham, of the *American Citizen*. Those editors, as many another had done before, as well as since that memorable period, were simply fighting the battles of their political friends, while down in their own hearts there may not have been the slightest personal enmity, until their own private honor was attacked. Captain Thompson, who was a personal friend to Cheetham, insinuated that "Coleman had shown the white feather," and the result was a challenge. William Cullen Bryant, in his "Reminiscences of the *Evening Post*," tells this story of this event:

* * * * The twilight of a winter's evening found the parties arrayed against each other in lonely 'Love lane.' It was cold, there was snow on the ground, and it was nearly dark. A shot or two was exchanged without effect, and then the principals were placed nearer together, that they might see each other better. At length Thompson was heard to cry, 'I've got it!' and fell headlong on the snow. Coleman and his second hurried away, while the surgeon viewed the bleeding man, examined his wound and said that it was mortal. On learning his fate, Thompson, at the surgeon's suggestion, promised never to divulge the names of the parties, and with a heroism worthy of a holier cause, he kept his word. He was brought, mortally wounded, to his sister's house in town. He was laid at the door, the bell was rung, the family came out, and found him bleeding near his death. He refused to name his antagonist, or to give any account of the affair, declaring that everything which had been done was honorably done, and desired that no attempt should be made to seek out or molest his adversary."

Aaron Burr and Alexander Hamilton are known to have visited New Dorp and to have stopped at the Rose and Crown, on more than one occasion, between the close of the Revolution and the end of the century. They were both firm believers in the very popular

idea of that day, that "a duel was an affair of honor," and that it was the proper means by which gentlemen should settle their personal difficulties, instead of going into court and being subjected to the "law's delay." They certainly knew all about the duelling ground at the foot of Camp Hill, and it seems reasonable to assume that they, too, have visited the spot and beheld the peaceful scene, which had been desecrated by those whose sad errors were committed long ere their own should shock the world.

Who knows but that the distance over the restless waters of the bay, on that memorable July morning, in 1804, is alone responsible for preventing the occurrence at New Dorp of those scenes which must forever darken the name of Weehawken Heights, and fill with regret and sorrow and pity the heart of every American citizen which appreciates the noble qualities which Burr and Hamilton both possessed? Unlike any other duel ever fought in the land, both fell—one to his grave and the other in the estimation of his countrymen.

We have endeavored to learn the date of the last duel fought at New Dorp, and are convinced that it was the one in which "young Hamilton and Lathrop" participated, which was probably about 1790; and that it was the only one fought here after the departure of the British army from Staten Island. So it may be classed as almost exclusively a military duelling ground.

A short distance from Camp Hill is an old well and the brush-covered remnant of the foundation of a house. We have been informed by old citizens, who have been familiar with these surroundings for upward of seventy years, that the scene has witnessed no change within their recollection; and more than one has expressed the belief that those relics mark the site of one of the historic structures that stood there during the exciting days of the Revolution.

But Camp Hill and its duelling ground form a scene to-day, so peaceful and secluded, that no one would ever judge them of their black deeds. During the preparation of this article we have visited the place when the shadows of eve were lengthening, when the robin, the oriole, and the bobolink were calling and twittering among the leafy branches, when nature in all her matchless beauty had completed her springtime robe of hill and ravine, and when the hum of insect life and fragrance of blossom all combined to form a picture of "peace on earth, good will to man"; yet we did not feel that we stood on hallowed ground. Our mind wandered back through the dim vista of the past, and we recounted the stories of misguided ambition, of wasted heroism, and of the cruel wrongs to loved ones who lived to mourn over the folly of those who fell. But the holy hush of a century of peace, like a benediction from heaven, has rested over its surroundings, so often reddened by human blood; and the footstep of the rambler and the plowshare of the sturdy farmer have alone disturbed the verdure of its soil.

When the final story of the world's cruel wrongs is told—when foe shall meet foe in the presence of the Eternal, to render up an account of the parts they have taken in the struggles on this historic field—may God, in His infinite wisdom, forgive those who mistook wrong for right, and in the heat of passion sinned against every principle that goes to form divine and human law.

CHAPTER XXXII.

INCIDENTS OF THE REVOLUTION.



DURING the Revolution there stood a small Holland cottage, built of stone and with long, sloping roof, on or near the spot where the County Alms House is now located. The story is handed down to us that it was occupied by a sturdy patriot whose open hatred for royalty and whose unfriendliness to the British soldiers gave considerable annoyance to General Howe, who directed that a guard be placed upon the premises until some breach should be committed sufficient to warrant his arrest.

The mounted patrol of the Island was under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, of the "Queen's Rangers," and it is said that that officer frequently visited the old cottage, not so much to test the loyalty or watch the movements of its owner, as to enjoy the companionship of his beautiful daughter.

During the exciting period following the earnest appeal of Colonel Aaron Burr to General Washington, to besiege the fortifications on Staten Island, especially at "Richmond town," a detail of Simcoe's mounted men was made daily. Skirmishes frequently occurred near the old cottage, between American troops from New Jersey and the "Rangers" and their native Tory friends.

It was near the close of the war that the severest, and from what we now know, the last skirmish occurred in that vicinity. During a severe storm, and under the cover of intense darkness, a detachment of Americans crossed the Kills, and losing their way, wandered about for some time until attracted by a light in the window of the old cottage. Simcoe's men were lurking about the premises at the time, and listened to the directions given by its occupant concerning the whereabouts of the British soldiery.

As soon as the Americans had departed Simcoe's subordinate entered the cottage and informed the unfortunate man what he had seen and heard, at the same time stating that he had authority to execute him without trial or delay. The man appealed for mercy until he could acquaint General Howe (who was renowned for his kind-



OLD BARTON HOMESTEAD, AT NEW DORP.

Built by a Huguenot about 1670.

heartedness), of the facts, and the daughter prayed for an interview with Colonel Simcoe, who she believed would save her father's life. But justice and mercy were unknown among the "Queen's Rangers," from the Lieutenant-Colonel down to the humblest private; yet they well suspected the influence that the girl might exercise under the existing circumstances. As "murder" and "plunder" were ever the watch-words of that organization, there seemed to be no time to lose. The guard drew near, with the exception of the pickets, and with the assistance of every young Tory all the occupants of the cottage were pinioned to their chairs. The husband and father was taken out to a tree, a rope quickly placed around his neck, and in a few seconds he was suspended from a limb. The tree on which this execution took place stood in front of the old "farmer's house" on the county farm, and we once conversed with an old Staten Islander who remembered it well. Decayed and worm eaten it could no longer bear its own weight, and it fell to the ground in a wind storm that swept over the Island about 1827.

* * * * *

About fifty years ago one of the oldest houses on the Island—a long stone structure—stood near the site of the present residence of Captain Richard Christopher, at West New Brighton. Its last owner and occupant was Nathaniel Britton, Jr. Its owner during the Revolution was a prominent Tory, who had a daughter of great personal attractions. Prior to the war the girl was affianced to a young man named Mersereau, who resided in the vicinity of Holland's Hook.

A young lieutenant attached to the British army admired her very much, and subsequent events proved that he had marked her for his victim. He acquired her acquaintance, greatly to the gratification of her father, and became very assiduous in his attentions. The girl, however, repulsed his advances. After several months' efforts, finding he had utterly failed in impressing her with the honor of his alliance, he resolved to possess himself of her person at all hazards.

A notorious young tory was taken into the confidence of the officer, and they concocted a plot to get possession of the girl. Near Garrettsons, on the Richmond road, is a deep ravine, penetrating some distance into Todt Hill. At the farthest extremity of which there is a spring of water; near this, before the war, a hermit had built his hut. When hostilities began he disappeared, but the hut remained. The approach to it was by a foot-path through the dense forest which lined the hills on either side of the ravine.

One evening, according to "Clute's Annals," the young tory called at the home of the girl, and informed her that he had been sent to convey her to the residence of her aunt, near Richmond, who had been taken suddenly ill, and had requested her attendance. Suspecting no evil, and being much attached to her relative, she was soon ready to accompany him. Springing into the wagon which he had

brought, she was rapidly driven away. When they reached the entrance to the ravine, two men rushed out of the bushes, seized the horse by the bridle, and ordered the occupants of the wagon to alight. One of them pretended to take possession of the driver, while the other led the girl up the foot-path into the ravine, cautioning her that her safety depended upon her silence.

So far the plot had been carried out successfully; but there was an avenger nearer than they suspected. They had taken but a few steps in the direction of the hut, when several men rushed out of the bushes, and seized the officer, for it was he who had possession of the girl. One of them took her hand, assuring her that they were her protectors, and that she need be under no apprehensions. Though they were all disguised, she at once recognized Mersereau by his voice.

Those who had possession of the officer proceeded to tie his hands, informing him that they intended to do him no further harm than the infliction of a severe flogging, and if he attempted to cry out they would gag him. A bundle of supple rods was at hand, and two of the men, one after another, inflicted the chastisement which they had promised. Having punished him to their heart's content, they released him, with the warning that if, after the expiration of a week, he was found upon the Island, they would capture him and cut off his ears.

The girl was safely returned to her home by the same conveyance; but not the same driver, for he had, by some means, disappeared. The officer also saved his ears by his absence before the week expired. How the villainous plot was discovered was never positively known; but it was suspected that the young tory had played into the hands of both parties.

* * * * *



SIR GUY CARLETON.

We frequently hear the question raised as to whether or not General Washington was ever on Staten Island. To this question the late Judge Clute, in his "Annals of Staten Island," has suggested the following considerations:

"The only evidence of the fact which is attainable at this day, is contained in the extract from his carefully kept accounts with the Government of the United States, which we here present:

" '1776.

" ' Ap^l 25th, To the Exps of myself and party rec^d the sev^l

landing places on Staten Island.....£16 10 0."

"It may be said that the reconnoitering which is almost unintelligibly abbreviated in the original account, might have been done on

the water, and quite as efficiently as on the land. The following objections, however, exist to this view of the subject:

"First.—The object of Washington was to erect fortifications and other defences on the most eligible sites, as the British did when they took possession on the following July; and some parts of the shores—perhaps the most important—could not be examined with such an object in view, from any position attainable on the water.

"Second.—The Commander-in-Chief expresses himself in the above extract, in terms similar to those used in other parts of his accounts for similar services in places not accessible by water, and

"Third.—There were two or three British vessels of war lying near the Island, on one of which Governor Tryon had taken up his quarters, and from which he kept up an intercourse with royalists on the Island, and a reconnoitering of the shores by water would not have been permitted, to say nothing of the danger of capture."

It is conceded that, whether General Washington came here and traveled over the land himself or not, certain it is that he had his attention drawn to the place, and regarded Staten Island with more than ordinary concern. It is claimed by some writers that there were two points of importance which called for his attention—the sentiments of the people, and the peculiar geographical position of the Island. The action of Congress having somewhat modified the former, it was to the latter that he gave most of his care.¹

* * * * *

During the early part of the year 1776, the popular feeling in the Colonies had become so much aroused, that the officers of the British army were obliged in very many cases to use considerable caution in order to save their own persons from violence. William Tryon, the last of the royal governors, had indeed retired from the city of New York, and taken his position on board the ship "Halifax," during the previous autumn, and thence he wrote to Mayor Whitehead Hicks, of New York, October 19th, as follows:

"Sir:—Finding your letter of yesterday insufficient for the security I requested from the Corporation and Citizens, and objectionable for the mode in which you obtained the sense of the inhabitants, my duty directed me for the present instant to remove on board this ship, where I shall be ready to do such business of the country, as the situation of the times will permit. The citizens, as well as the inhabitants of the province, may be assured of my inclination to embrace

¹ Washington was as prompt to perceive the natural advantages of Staten Island in a military point of view as were the British. Within a week after his personal visit to the city, he established a lookout at the Narrows, which, when the British made their appearance, sent a message by express that fifty of the enemy's vessels were in sight. This information was at once forwarded to the several

posts on the Hudson, with instructions to prepare to give them a warm reception if they should attempt to ascend the river. But the ships, upon their arrival, anchored off Staten Island, and landed their troops, and the hill sides were soon covered with their white tents.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

every means in my power to restore the peace, good order, and authority of government.

"I am, sir,

"Your most obedient servant,

"WILLIAM TRYON."

* * * * *

Major Turner Straubenzie was the commander of the Second Battalion of Light Infantry of the British regulars. As a soldier he very much resembled Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe in his dealings with the Americans. While on Staten Island he employed a stout negro, who happened to fall into his hands, to carry a note to another officer. It seems that the negro, while on his way, decided to change his course, and, turning aside, escaped beyond the lines, and wandered off to the city, where he delivered the note to the Americans. It read as follows:

"Dear Stanton:—The bearer I have sent you, thinking him a strong, able fellow, and fit to cut throats; so if you approve him, keep him in your corps.

Yours, &c.,

"T. STRAUBENZIE."

* * * * *

In the summer of 1777, the British Commander-in-chief caused to be issued the following proclamation:

"Office of the Commissary General, New York, June 12th, 1777.

"WHEREAS his Excellency Sir WILLIAM HOWE, General and Commander-in-chief of His Majesty's Forces, hath thought fit to order and direct Magazines of Forage be established, for the better supplying of troops under his Excellency's command; Notice is hereby given to the several Land-holders, *Farmers* and others, upon York-Island, Long-Island and Staten-Island, who may be able to supply the said Magazines with Hay, Straw, Oats, and Indian Corn, that the following rates will be paid for the same, viz.:

"Good Fresh Hay, at the rate of Five Shillings per Hundred Weight.

"Straw, at Two Shillings per Hundred Weight.

"Oats and Indian Corn, according to its quality.

"And for the better encouragement of such persons to supply the said magazines, an allowance of One Shilling per Mile, for every Ten Hundred Weight, will be paid, over and above the price stipulated aforesaid for the carriage of the said Forage to the respective Magazines hereafter mentioned, viz.:

"YORK ISLAND.

"Kings-Bridge, Marston's Wharf, City of New York.

"LONG ISLAND.

"Brooklyn Ferry, Hempstead Harbor, Oyster Bay, Great-Neck.

"STATEN ISLAND.

"Cole's Ferry, Decker's Ferry.

"At which said several places proper persons will be appointed to receive the same, to ascertain the weight thereof, and to certify the delivery: and upon certificates, ascertaining such weight and delivery, being produced at this office, the said Forage will be paid for immediately.

"His Majesty's service requiring these Magazines to be established as soon as the season will permit, it is expected and required that all persons who raise forage, do furnish a certain quantity, proportionable to the produce of each person respectively.

"DANIEL WEIR,

"Commissary General."

* * * * *

The old "Cucklestowne Inn" stood for a century and a half in Richmond, on or a few feet to the north-west of the present residence of Mr. Willard Barton. Throughout the war it was occupied by British officers, among whom was Major John André, the spy, who afterward became the victim of General Benedict Arnold. It was in this old building that Major André, then a captain in the Twenty-sixth Regiment of Foot, wrote his will. Probably on account of the destruction of the Richmond Court House, the document was recorded and probated in New York. It reads as follows:

"*The following* is my last Will and Testament and I appoint as Executors thereto Mary Louisa André my Mother, David André my Uncle, Andrew Giradot my Uncle, John André my Uncle.

"To each of the above Executors I give Fifty Pounds.—I give to Mary Hannah André my Sister Seven Hundred Pounds.—I give to Ann Marguerite André my Sister Seven Hundred Pounds.—I give to Louisa Katharine André my Sister Seven Hundred Pounds.—I give to William Lewis André my Brother Seven Hundred Pounds.—But the condition on which I give the above mentioned Sums to my afore-said Sisters and Brothers are that each of them shall pay to Mary Louisa André my Mother the sum of Ten pounds yearly during her life.—I give to Walter Ewer Jun'r of Dyers Court Aldermanbury One Hundred Pounds.—I give to John Ewer Jun'r of Lincoln's Inn One Hundred Pounds.—I desire a Ring value Fifty Pounds be given to my Friend Peter Boissier of the Eleventh Dragoons.—I desire that Walter Ewer Jun'r of Dyers Court Aldermanbury have the Inspection of my papers, Letters, Manuscripts, I mean that he have the first Inspection of them with Liberty to destroy or detain whatever he thinks proper, and I desire my Watch be given to him. And I lastly give and bequeath my Brother John Lewis André the residue of all my Effects whatsoever.—Witness my Hand and Seal Staten Island in the province of N. York, N. America the 7th June 1777.

"JOHN ANDRÉ Cap't in the 26th Reg't of Foot [L.S.]

"N.B.—The Currency alluded to in this Will is Sterling Money of

Great Britain.—I desire nothing more than my wearing Apparel be sold by public Auction, J. A.

“City and Province }
of New York. } ss.

“*Be it* remembered that on the Ninth day of October in the Year of Our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Eighty personally came and appeared before me Cary Ludlow, Surrogate for the City and Province aforesaid, Henry White and William Seaton both of the City and Province aforesaid Esquires who being severally duly sworn did declare that they were well acquainted with the handwriting of John André formerly Captain in the twenty-sixth Regiment of Foot and since Adjutant General Deceased that they have frequently seen him write, And that they verily believe that the before written Instrument purporting to be the last Will and Testament of the said John André, bearing date the seventh Day of June One thousand seven hundred and Seventy Seven with the Subscriptions thereto are all of his the said John André’s own proper hand Writing and further saith not.

CARY LUDLOW, SURT.”

According to the dates, it will be seen that the will was admitted to probate just a week after the execution of its maker at Tappan, on the 2d of October, 1780.²

Major André’s death was one of the saddest incidents of the war. The decision, though just, was painful—painful to Washington—to the Board—to the officers of the American army—but more painful, if possible, to Sir Henry Clinton and the companions of André in arms.

Efforts, and such as did honor to Clinton, were made to reverse the doom of André. Intimations were given from Washington, that upon one condition—the surrender of Arnold—André might be released; but to this Clinton thought he could not in honor yield—while in the scale of affection, André would have outweighed a thousand traitors like Arnold.

Poor André! Just even though it was, his death was everywhere lamented; for thus was cut off in the morning of life a man full of promise and expectation—one to whose personal attractions were added accomplishments, rich, varied and brilliant—destined, but for an untimely sacrifice of himself, under the impulse of a rash ambition, to have reached the goal of his wishes—honor and renown. His death at the hands of the Americans, according to the usage of war, was just; but to Arnold, the pioneer of the base transaction, the news

² Major John André and Lieutenant-Colonel John Graves Simcoe, of the “Queen’s Rangers,” occupied quarters in the old Cuckles Towne Inn at the same time, and were fast friends. When Colonel Simcoe learned of Major André’s capture, he made a very earnest appeal to General Clinton for permission to

take the Queen’s Rangers and recapture the unfortunate officer! Simcoe stamped General Washington as a murderer and called down upon his head the fiercest of maledictions for approving the verdict and sentence of the court-martial which ended poor André’s career.

of his execution must, it would seem, have been as the bitterness of death.

* * * * *

The people who lived on Staten Island during the Revolution remembered with keen interest the cold winters of that period, and the stories they told were repeated by the generations that followed. The following statement is taken from the *New York Gazette* of December 26th, 1778:

"The intense cold weather has, within these two days, occasioned the quick-silver in the weather-glass to fall four degrees lower than has been observed for the last seven years; several ships, &c., and



THE FACTORY POND, WEST NEW BRIGHTON, AS IT APPEARED IN 1893; NOW DRY LAND.

many lives have been lost by the monstrous bodies of ice floating in our Bay."

* * * * *

There are frequent allusions in the records in the County Clerk's office relative to the gunboat which did service in the Staten Island waters during the war. For instance:

"Sept. 28th 1779 Richmond County. Received of John Bedel Esq. the sum of Fifty-one pound six shill for the use of the Gun boat as appears by the following receipt

" Richmond County Sept the 28, 1779

" Received of Mess^{rs} Richard Conner, Christian Jacobson, Henry Perine, Cornelis Corson supervisors for said County the sum of Eighty four Pound being in full for my selfe & Eight men belonging to the gun boat commencing the fourteent of august last and continued for one month

" by me JAS. STEWART Cap't."

This gun boat was, beyond a doubt, the one used by Colonel Christo-

pher Billopp, (whose position as commandant of the Staten Island militia made him practically the Provost Marshal), to prevent communication between New Jersey and Staten Island. It was a very unpopular affair with the people of both sections. It was an almost daily occurrence that those on board fired at any person within gunshot on the Jersey shore.

A party of several Jerseymen once attempted to get possession of the boat, but failed. It was lying at anchor one bright, moonlight night, near Billopp's ferry, (now the terminus of the Amboy road at Tottenville), and as no person was seen moving on board, they supposed their opportunity had come. Accordingly one of their number was sent in a small boat to row up some distance above the gun-boat, and then drift silently down with the ebb tide, and, as he passed, to observe if there was any person on her deck. He succeeded in accomplishing his purpose, and discovered a man sitting flat upon the deck, apparently engaged in strapping a knife upon his boot. When he reached the shore he made his report, and the enterprise was abandoned for the time. Several attempts were made afterwards to capture the boat, but without success.

* * * * *

The "Neptune," a small sloop of war, commanded by Captain Palfray, did service as a guard boat at the point now known as the Bergen Point ferry. On the morning of October 15th, 1779, the boat became unmanageable and drifted within range of the American guns at the fort at Elizabethtown Point, where it grounded. Captain Coogle, the British commander at Decker's ferry (Port Richmond), soon discovered the "Neptune's" situation, and ordered Cornelius Hatfield, who had command of a small gun boat at that post, with twenty men to recover the sloop.

The latter was immediately joined by Job Hatfield in another boat, which was well manned, and they both set off for the relief of the "Neptune," which before their arrival, was boarded by about thirty Americans from the fort at Elizabethtown point. But the latter, seeing the superior number and strength of their assailants, abandoned the sloop and the Hatfield party went on board. The cannon in the American fort then opened on the sloop, and the fire was returned by the Hatfields.

For several hours the vessel remained aground, before the tide rose sufficiently to float her, and during that time firing continued with more or less activity. Though several men were killed and wounded, and considerable damage was done, the boat was able to escape to its station.

* * * * *

Rivington's Gazette, of February 7th, 1780, gives an interesting account of the condition of New York bay. It says that the ice became so solid that there was a bridge all the way from New York

to Staten Island, over which loaded sleighs and other heavy burdens were drawn. Eighty-six loaded sleighs were counted crossing in one day.

The most intense frost, accompanied by great falls of snow began about the middle of December, and shut up navigation to the port of New York from the sea for many weeks. The severity of the weather increased to such an extent that about the middle of January all communication with New York City by water was cut off, and new means opened by the ice. The passage to the North River from the Island was about the 19th of January practicable for the heaviest cannon, a circumstance previously unknown in the memory of man. Soon after provisions were transported in sleighs, and detachments of cavalry marched from New York to Staten Island upon the ice. It was not until the 20th of February that the frost abated so as to allow the waters surrounding New York to become navigable.

* * * * *

The social possibilities under a martial condition, such as that in which Staten Island then lay, may be judged from the following paragraphs, copied from *Rivington's Gazette* of November 12th, 1781:

"Last Saturday William Hatfield, an inhabitant of Elizabethtown, Rahway, came to Staten Island with a small quantity of flour to dispose of, that he might get some hard money which would enable him to pay the taxes imposed by the rebel Governor. On his return in the evening, he was met in the Sound by one Peter Terrat, a noted thief, who supports himself and a gang of such miscreants, by robbing and plundering; to him and his party Hatfield surrendered himself; but after he was a prisoner, Terrat thought Hatfield threw something overboard, on which the infernal fiend took a pistol out of his pocket and shot him dead, laid the body on the bank of the Sound, and went off exulting with the other prisoners he had taken.

"Hatfield has left a wife and several children to lament their loss. It is said the people of the county, [Essex, now Union], detesting such horrid violence, intend making enquiry into the murder, and punish the villain as he deserves.

"We since hear that a Jury has brought a verdict against him *guilty of murder*, on which he fled from justice."³

3 The victim was the son of David Hatfield, an elder of the Rahway church, who had been captured in June, and had now been restored to his home, and a cousin of J. Smith Hatfield, the desperado of Staten Island. The latter, having ventured to return openly to town in a flag boat, was, together with one of

his comrades, Lewis Blanchard, (son of John Blanchard and nephew of Captain Cornelius Hatfield), seized by some of the Westfield [New Jersey] people, loaded with irons, and hurried off to Burlington, where he was kept in close confinement.—*Hatfield's History of Elizabeth*.

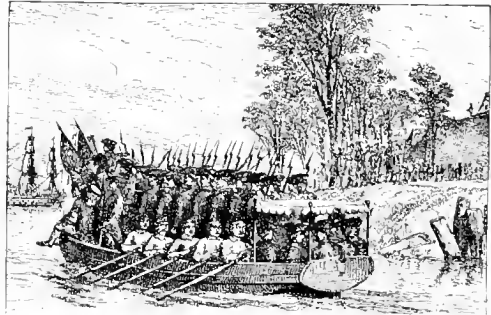
CHAPTER XXXIII.

INCIDENTS OF THE REVOLUTION—CONCLUDED.



VISIT from some of the "Cowboys" of Staten Island is thus described in the *New Jersey Journal*, of December 5th, 1781:

"Last Saturday night [1st] seven Refugees from Staten Island landed at Halstead's Point, with the expectation (as their leader told them) of meeting some of their quondam friends with fat cattle; but Captain Jonathan Dayton having notice of their intention collected a party of men, and knowing the route they were to take, laid in ambush for them, though unfortunately a muddy place in the road had turned them a little out, and obliged his party to fire through two fences, otherwise, in all probability, they would have killed every one the first fire; however they killed one, mortally wounded another, and took three prisoners; the other two favoured by the shades of the night, and a good pair of heels, made their escape. Three of the party were left in the gunboat, but hearing a boat of ours coming out of the creek, pushed over to Staten Island shore, nevertheless she fell into the hands of Lieutenant Randall. It seems their leader, Swain Parsel, was a deserter from our army. On his information David Oliver, a villain who has long been the supporter of the illicit trade, and a dread to the inhabitants on the lines, was taken the same night concealed in a house at Rahway."



DEPARTURE OF THE BRITISH TROOPS.

* * * * *

On the night of Friday, December 15th, 1781, Captain Baker Hendricks and Luther Baldwin, with a small party of men from Elizabethtown, came over in a whale-boat to Staten Island, where they "surprised and took a sloop armed with two three-pounders, two blunderbusses, and manned with five hands"; as the sloop was aground, they "stripped her of arms, sails, rigging, cable, anchor and long boat." Two other sloops they served in like manner. Even the

flagboats (truce) suffered from the depredations on the Sound. *Rivington's Gazette* says:

"Last Friday a vessel with a Flag of truce sailed from this garrison [New York] for Elizabeth Town Point, in which went a Hessian Paymaster with a large sum of money for the use of the Hessian prisoners in Pennsylvania. Same night, about 12 o'clock a rebel whale-boat boarded the flag vessel at said Point, the crew of which seized the cash which the Hessian gentleman had in charge for the before mentioned purpose. Several other gentlemen on board the flag vessel were also robbed of what cash they had with them."

The American account presents quite a different aspect of this affair. From the *New Jersey Journal*:

"Thursday night a flag of truce, on her way to this shore, was boarded, near Shuter's Island, by some men in disguise, and robbed of upwards of two thousand guineas, being a part of a sum of money for the use of Cornwallis' army. They also plundered several individuals that were on board. The party that committed the above robbery, were supposed to be refugees from New York or Staten Island."

The amount, as afterwards appeared, was nine hundred guineas, the losers having, as usual, magnified their loss.

* * * * *

In June, 1781, an expedition was fitted out from Elizabethtown, the account of which we copy from *Gaines' Mercury*:

"Intelligence being received at Elizabeth Town of two whale boats, fitted for a two-months' cruise in the Delaware bay, lying at a wharf the north side of Staten Island, a plan was concerted to surprise and bring them off, which was put in practice last Thursday night [20th], and the boats, with all their appurtenances, were safely moored at Elizabeth Town bridge next morning together with eighteen prisoners that were on board, six of whom were valuable Negroes. The party, continentals and volunteers, consisted of upwards of thirty, commanded by Major [William] Crane. There was a sentinel in each boat, who hailed and attempted to fire on the party, but their pieces providentially flashing in the pan, the party, regardless of danger, rushed on them with such impetuosity, that they had not time to prime again, and a few moments put them in complete possession of their object, without any further alarm."

* * * * *

Next to the disreputable Hatfields, Nathaniel Robbins was the most despised man on Staten Island. In his depredations he scarcely recognized friend or foe. He resided near Long Neck (now New Springville). The house which he occupied was demolished many years ago. It stood near the corner of the roads leading to Richmond and Port Richmond, fronting on the former.

Robbins was an Englishman by birth, extremely dissolute in his



ERASTUS BROOKS

habits, and a terror not only to those who dwelt in his neighborhood, but of the whole Island. His wife was a native of Staten Island, and a daughter of widow Mary Merrill. His depredations were generally committed under some disguise, which he supposed effectually concealed his identity, though he was often betrayed by his voice or some other tell-tale circumstance.¹

Robbins' death was hailed with a great deal of relief by the people of Staten Island, for there was a constant fear that life and property were in danger. It is said that his grave was several times marked by stones bearing inscriptions relative to the life he had lived; but within a few days after each stone was erected it disappeared mysteriously under the cover of darkness. At last all effort to mark the grave was abandoned, probably because of the death of the person who had attempted thus to perpetuate his tainted memory.

* * * * *

Abraham and Peter Prall, prosperous farmers, resided near Chelsea. The house in which the former resided still stands on the Chelsea road, a short distance from Richmond turnpike, although considerably modernized. Chelsea road at that time was little better than a private lane leading to these residences from the main road and passing through dense woods.

The present representatives of the family cherish a story to the effect that—

On one occasion a man who was indebted to Abraham Prall called on him and paid him a considerable sum in gold. The next evening the family were surprised by the approach of two men, who were evidently disguised. Their errand was at once suspected, and the old man had just time enough to take the money he had received out of the cupboard, in which he had deposited it, and put it into his pockets.

When the strangers entered the house one of them presented a pistol and said,

“Prall, we know you have money; so deliver it up at once.”

He was very much alarmed, and his wife, perceiving his agitation, said,

“Father, don't be alarmed; these men are our neighbors.”

She had detected the speaker by his voice, and knew him to be the same person who had paid the money the previous evening, and had seen it deposited in the cupboard.

“Do you suppose,” said the old man, “that I am so unwise as to keep any large sum of money in my house in times like these?”

¹ Robbins was very brutal in his nature, and several murders, committed on Staten Island and even in New Jersey, were chargeable to him. There were several members of his gang of which he was the acknowledged leader.
* * * The opinion which the widow Merrill, his wife's mother, held of him is plainly told

by a clause in her will, which was dated January 10th, 1789, and in which she bequeathes to her daughter, Mary Robbins, the sum of £40, viz.: “So as never to be in the power or at the command of Nathaniel Robbins, her present husband.”—*Raymond Tyson's Historical Sketches of Staten Island.*

They took him at his word, and the cupboard was the first place visited. The rest of the house was also searched, but without success. They then turned to go; but directed the old man to go before them through the lane to the public road. The path through the woods was intensely dark, and he managed, as he went along, to drop the guineas, one by one, upon the ground, until by the time they had reached the highway he had none remaining in his pockets. Here another effort was made to compel him to tell what he had done with it; but all the reply they could extort from him was, "The money I had in my house yesterday is not now in my possession."

Prall was then searched, and made to solemnly swear that he would never divulge the circumstances of their visit, nor mention any names he might suspect. The oath, by no means obligatory, he scrupulously kept. The next morning he retraced his steps of the previous night, and picked up every piece of his money.

* * * * *

In "Clute's Annals" we find the following account of an incident, which the author claimed was told him in person by an old man, then in his ninetieth year. From inquiry we are led to believe that it was old Mr. Housman, who, during the early part of the present century, resided in the Black Horse Tavern, at New Dorp:

One afternoon, late in the fall, two British officers, on horse-back, rode into his barn-yard, and having dismounted, entered the barn, and seeing two horses in their stalls, peremptorily ordered him to take them out and put theirs in. They then directed him to see that their beasts were well fed and otherwise cared for. From there they went into the house, and ordered the mistress to show them her best room. This being done, they proceeded to the upper part of the house, and after having examined every apartment, selected one, and directed her to prepare two beds in that room, and to see that they were clean and comfortable in all respects, and that the best room was furnished with everything suitable for the accommodation of gentlemen. They then descended into the cellar, and examined the family stores there and in the out-houses. Having ascertained the conveniences of the place, they ordered their supper to be prepared and served in the best room, informing her that they intended to reside there for some time, and expected to have their meals served regularly every day when they were at home. They brought no luggage with them except what was contained in two large valises strapped to their saddles.

They remained in that house until spring. Their clothes were thrown out every week to be washed, and by their order a supply of fire-wood was constantly ready at their door. They did not always take the trouble to put the wood on their own fire, frequently calling on some one of the family to do it for them. One of them was a Tory officer from Amboy, the other was an Englishman. Said the old man, "They lorded it over our house for that whole winter, and all we had

to do was to obey them. There was no use in complaining or remonstrating. If we had done so we would have been requited with a curse and a blow of their swords. I felt like poisoning them, and verily believe I should have done so if it had not been for fear of the consequences. They left us as unceremoniously as they came, without even a 'thank you' or a 'good-bye.'"

* * * * *

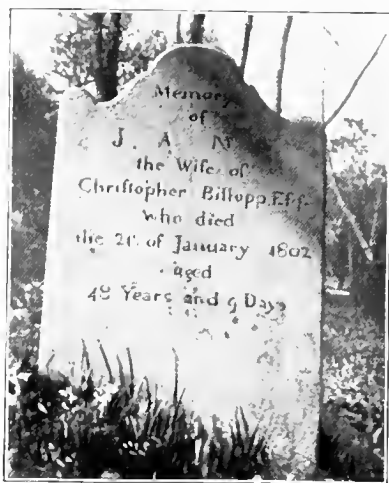
The story is told of a young woman, the daughter of a farmer residing in the vicinity of Fresh Kills [Green Ridge], while engaged one morning in boiling soap, two British soldiers entered the kitchen and ordered her to prepare breakfast for them; she declined to do so, as she was otherwise engaged, and could not leave her employment to oblige anybody.

This reply excited their wrath, and one of them approached her with an intention of striking her. Seizing a large dipper, she filled it with the boiling liquid and dashed it at him. Perceiving her intention, he wheeled suddenly around and thus saved his face; but received the whole charge upon the back of his head and neck. His companion, fearing a similar reception, escaped as quickly as possible; but the scalded ruffian, in endeavoring to remove the hot soap, took all the hair off with it, and left the back of his head bald ever after.

* * * * *

A farmer, whose name has long been forgotten, residing in "the Clove," near the present settlement known as Concord, left his home one day in charge of his wife and a seventeen-year-old son. It was after dark before the son completed his work about the barn; but just as he was coming out he saw a soldier enter the house with a musket in his hand. Before he had time to reach the house he heard his mother shrieking for help. He rushed forward, and, as he entered, saw the soldier holding his mother by the throat with his left hand, while his right was drawn back to strike her.

When the soldier entered, he placed his musket by the side of the door in the passage; the son seized it, and, at the risk of shooting his mother, levelled it at the ruffian's head and sent a ball crashing through his brain, killing him on the spot. But there was still cause for alarm. If the shot had been heard, and should attract any person to the spot, an exposure must necessarily follow and the lad would



GRAVE OF JANE, WIFE OF COLONEL CHRISTOPHER BILLOPP AND DAUGHTER OF JUDGE BENJAMIN SEAMAN, IN ST. JOHN CEMETERY, PROVINCE OF NEW BRUNSWICK.

be executed, for no circumstances would be admitted as justification for killing a British soldier.

Fortunately, however, the noise had not been heard, or at least had attracted no attention. All that could now be done was to conceal the body of the soldier until the return of the husband and father in the morning. This was done by dragging it under the stairs, where it was not likely to be seen by any person but themselves. The next morning, when the farmer returned, he removed a part of his barn floor under which he dug a grave; and after dark, the evening following, the body was thrown into it, and the musket also, and buried, and there they probably remain to this day. The family kept their secret until after the evacuation of the Island by the British.

* * * * *

It is refreshing to recall an incident that reflects credit upon any of those who wore the British uniform on Staten Island during those dark days. It will be remembered that the majority of the English, of all ranks, regarded the colonists as physically, intellectually and morally inferior to themselves. In their social intercourse with them, as well as their plundering, they made but little distinction between "loyalists" and "rebels." But there were some exceptions. Among the officers of the British army were some who were gentlemen by nature and by culture, and a few were eminently pious men, who found no difficulty in reconciling their obligations to their King with their duty to their Maker. These two latter classes were ever ready to listen to the complaints of the oppressed, and as far as lay in their power, to redress the wrongs of the injured. Of this class was Captain John Voke, of whom the following anecdote has been preserved:

"He was billeted upon a farmer in the vicinity for some two or three months, and, unlike many other officers, regularly paid for his board and lodging. A few days after he had removed his quarters the farmer went to him and informed him that during the previous night his house had been entered and robbed of a sum of money, and that he suspected that it had been done by soldiers, because beneath the window through which the house had been entered, and which had been left open, he had found a button, by means of which, perhaps, the culprits might be detected.

"The captain took the button and promised to give the matter his immediate attention. The button indicated the regiment as well as the company to which the loser of it belonged. During the parade that same day, the captain closely scrutinized the company indicated, and found a soldier with a button missing on the front of his coat.

After parade he communicated his suspicions to the colonel of the regiment, and the soldier was sent for. When he arrived, the colonel, using a little artifice, informed him that he suspected him of being implicated in a drunken brawl the night before at a tavern a mile or two distant. This the soldier denied, saying that he could prove he was

nowhere near that tavern, or even in that direction, during the night previous.

"Were you out last night?" inquired the colonel.

"Well—yes," answered the soldier; "but not in that direction."

"Where were you?"

"In various places; but not at the tavern."

"By whom can you prove that you were not at the tavern?"

The name of another soldier was mentioned, and the colonel sent for him. When he arrived, he corroborated all the first had said, adding that they two had been together all the night.

"Then," said the colonel, "you are the two burglars who entered the house of Mr. — through a window last night, and robbed him of twenty guineas. Lay down the money upon this table, or you shall both be executed for burglary and robbery."

The affrighted soldiers, taken by surprise, confessed their crime, and each placed ten guineas upon the table. What punishment was meted out to the culprits is not related; but Captain Voke had the satisfaction of returning the money to the owner thereof in less than twenty-four hours after it had been stolen.

* * * * *

The Colonial records tell of a man named Taylor, who came from New York and took up his abode on Staten Island, for the purpose of trading with the English vessels. This he did for months openly and in defiance of all the cautions he had received by means of anonymous letters, which he openly exhibited in public places, and held up to ridicule. He defied any power which the "rebels" possessed to prevent his doing as he pleased in the matter of trading with the ships.

One very dark and stormy night, five men entered Taylor's dwelling unannounced. They were all disguised, and while a part of them seized and bound him, the remainder performed the same service for his wife. With pistols at their heads, they were cautioned to make no outcry. Having secured Taylor, they led him to his own barn, put a noose around his neck, threw the rope over one of the beams, and hoisted him from the floor by his neck; then having fastened the rope to a post, left him and went their way.

Taylor's wife, hearing the men depart, apprehended something serious had occurred, and made most desperate efforts to loose the thongs which bound her, and finally succeeded. Fortunately, a lighted lantern stood in an adjoining room, which she seized and ran into the barn, where she found her worst apprehensions realized by seeing her husband struggling in the agonies of death.

Finding she could not untie the knot around the manger-post, she found a hatchet, with which she cut the rope and let him down upon the floor. Having removed the noose around his neck, and finding him insensible, she ran to a neighboring house for assistance, and at

length succeeded in restoring him to consciousness. Two or three days afterward Taylor removed back to New York, and was accompanied by a guard of soldiers all the way to the city.

* * * * *

At some time between the cessation of actual hostilities and the evacuation of the Island by the British, the following interesting incident is said to have occurred:

There were many ships of war lying at anchor in various parts of the harbor, mostly in the vicinity of the city; there were some, however, which lay in, and even beyond the Narrows, and these were anchored as near the shores of Long and Staten Islands, as could safely be done, for the convenience of easy access to the land in all conditions of the weather, in order that the officers might obtain supplies of butter, vegetables, etc., from the farms in the vicinity.

One day a boy, about seventeen years of age, was in search of some stray cattle in the woods near the water, [presumably in the vicinity of what is now known as Arrochar] and saw a ship's boat with two sailors approaching. Supposing he might as well keep out of their sight in that solitary place, he concealed himself behind a large tree; he saw them land, and while one of them remained in charge of the boat, the other, with a basket in his hand, entered the wood. After having proceeded a few rods, until he was out of sight of his companion, and everybody else, as he supposed, he took off his coat, knelt down at the foot of a large, gnarled tree, and, with an instrument resembling a mason's trowel, dug a hole in the earth, and having deposited something therein, carefully filled the hole again with earth, and laid a large, flat stone upon it. This done, he arose to his feet, and took a long and careful survey of the surroundings, then proceeded on his way.

The youth kept in his place of concealment for two full hours, when he saw the sailor returning with his basket apparently filled with vegetables. He passed by the place where he had dug the hole, scrutinized it closely, and returned to the ship. Assuring himself that the coast was clear, the young man went to the place, reopened the hole, and found therein a heavy canvas bag, evidently containing, as he judged by its sound, a quantity of money. Securing the prize, and without waiting to refill the hole, he hastened away, and found some other place of deposit, known only to himself.

A day or two thereafter posters were put up in every public place, offering a large reward for the recovery of three hundred guineas, which had been stolen from one of His Majesty's ships, being the property of the government, and an additional reward for the detection of the thief; but the boy kept his own counsel. The theft occasioned a good deal of talk at the time; but it was soon forgotten in the excitement consequent upon the declaration of peace and the preparations for the departure of the British from the country.

For nearly four years the young man kept his own secret, at which time he had attained his majority; and then, when he purchased a farm for himself, and paid for it, did he first reveal, to his parents only, the manner in which he obtained his means.

* * * * *

Throughout the period in which Staten Island was directly affected by the war—that is, from July, 1776, to November, 1782—the British maintained a number of lookout and signal stations here. “At one time,” says a writer of that period, “a sentinel was placed in the top of a large chestnut tree which grew upon the summit of the Island, about a mile from a small wooden [Moravian] church, which stood near the King’s highway.”²

The sentinel in the tree was provided with a platform upon which to stand, and signals to elevate upon a pole lashed to the highest limb of the tree. The position was a perilous one in a heavy wind, and peculiarly so during a thunder storm. It is said that on one occasion a soldier on duty in the tree was overtaken by a severe thunder storm. The ladder attached to the tree was blown down, and the soldier could not escape in safety. “When the storm had passed away his body was found on the ground beneath the tree, with his neck broken; and certain livid marks on his person, together with the condition of the tree itself, indicated that he had been stricken by lightning and fallen to the ground. About a month afterward another storm passed over the same locality, and the lookout descended as quickly as possible; but he had no sooner reached the ground than the tree was again struck, and he was killed at its foot.”³ After that the place of lookout was changed, and brought down the hill nearer the church, probably in the vicinity of the site of the light-house. The following season the tree was again struck and riven to splinters.”

* * * * *

Professor Charles Anthon, who resided on the Island about fifty years ago, began the work of writing a history of the place. The work was never completed, however; but all those who have come later and have attempted to perform the same work, have profited very materially by his efforts. Professor Anthon interviewed a number of old citizens who were witnesses to those stormy scenes that filled the struggling years of the war, and from his writings we quote:

From a conversation with Captain Blake, March 15th, 1851: He was about thirteen years old when the British landed. It was three or four days before any of them were seen where he lived. Then four

² There is a tradition confirmatory of this statement, which said that the British kept a number of soldiers on top of Todt Hill to guard the road and to keep a lookout over the land and water. From the locality indicated this might have been done very easily, for it commands a view of the outer bay and Sandy Hook in one direction, and the Kills, and New

Jersey beyond, in another.—*Preston's History of Richmond County.*

³ The tree in question stood about where the residence of Mr. David J. Tysen is located, it being the highest point on the Island. According to tradition, the Indians utilized the same spot for a lookout for very many years.

soldiers came along and said they wanted something to eat. When they had finished they each threw down a half-dollar, to the great surprise of the people. The soldiers in general behaved at first very well, paying for everything that they took; but when they came back from Jersey they stole everything they could lay their hands on. The currency used was principally English. Dollars passed for 4s. 6d.



GUYON, OR DE EPHRAIM CLARK,
HOMESTEAD, NEW DORP; ERECTED 1671.

The soldiers were very liberal. All the vacant buildings were occupied by them. At Ryers' [Port Richmond], there was a "Fives' Court," a kind of game at which the British officers spent a great deal of time in playing. During this time a man by the name of Hous-

man occupied the old Dongan manor house. He once saw two Hessians receive two hundred lashes apiece. The Forty-second Regiment lay in Bodine's orchard [West New Brighton]. They were Scotch and wore the Highland uniform. The Hatfields were all robbers. There were several brothers of them. They frequently brought over thirty or forty head of cattle from Jersey to the British. On one occasion they threw a man into a hog-pen and required him to eat corn. On his refusal to do so, they took him out and hammered his toe-nails off. Decker's [a Tory guide] house was on the site of the Port Richmond Hotel [now the St. James]. At the time of the invasion under Sullivan the Americans burned it.⁴ The Dutch church was burned on the same occasion. Captain Blake's father was crossing the mill-dam, and when he reached the west side he came all at once among the Americans. They remained there until the British troops appeared with light-horse. They fired and killed a light-horseman, then ran away through the woods like so many frightened horses.

Interview with Rev. Dr. J. P. Van Pelt, of the Port Richmond Reformed Dutch Church, June 5th, 1851: A man stopped at his house about the year 1804, he then living in the Port Richmond Hotel. That man said he was in the engagement at the Dutch Church. The weather was cold, but the heat of the action caused them to sweat profusely. The church, which was like a hay-stack in form, was completely riddled by balls. When the war broke out there were two other Dutch churches on the Island, one in Westfield, and another

⁴ This is an error. Lord Stirling, in his official report to General Washington, states that Decker's house was destroyed at the time of his (Stirling's) invasion of the Island.

at Richmond. The latter had just been completed when the war broke out.⁵ It was a frame building, and the British used it gradually up for fire wood. Judge Micheau [Mersereau] was a witness to this; but was afraid to say anything, lest he should be suspected of disaffection. The few who remained on the Island who were attached to the American cause, belonged generally to the Dutch Church. Many persons living here professed attachment to the British, but secretly sent very valuable information to General Washington. A Mr. Latourette was engaged in carrying wood to the city during the bad winter of 1779-80, as long as a passage remained open, and would often enable American officers detained as prisoners in the Sugar House prison to escape. It was necessary for everyone who wished to leave the city to present himself to General Howe for permission to do so. Latourette would go before the General with those officers in disguise, and say, "General, I have brought you a fine load of wood and am going directly down for more; I have some countrymen here who would like to go with me." The General would give them a hasty look and say, "Let them all pass." Then they would go aboard the boat and make sail for Staten Island. At the mouth of the Kills an armed vessel was stationed to examine all boats that passed; but Latourette, being well known, was allowed to pass without examination, under the plea that he was in a hurry to bring another load of wood to General Howe. So, having the officers secreted in his vessel, he was able to land them safely where they could easily effect their escape.

Interview with Mrs. Bird, (ninety-one years of age), November 22d, 1851: She was fifteen years old when the British landed. They landed mostly at Van Buskirk's dock. The first she saw of the British was a body of Highlanders, who came marching up into the Clove, (where she was living), from the direction of Van Duzer's ferry, in quest of lodging. Some of them were quartered in her father's barn. She lived with her adopted father, Thomas Seaman, whose house at that time was the first one on the left, as you turn out of the Clove road into the Little Clove. General Knyphausen was a very fine looking man, and used to ride a fine white horse. The Hessians were all fine looking men. Their dress was nearly all blue, and both dress and accoutrements were very heavy. During the war the people along the North Shore did not dare to burn lights at night, even in case of sickness or other extreme need, lest they should be suspected of showing signals to the rebels. People in general had to be very discreet, and keep their mouths shut.

Interview with Isaac Simonson, (ninety years of age), December 26th, 1851: At the time of the Revolution, General Howe, within a

⁵ If this be true, the Dutch church destroyed by the British was the second edifice in Richmond belonging to that denomination, for it is a well-established fact that very many years

prior to the Revolution the Dutch established a house of worship in Cucklestown, which, early in the eighteenth century, was named Richmond, and became the county seat.

few days after landing, employed Isaac Decker, a noted man and a great friend of the British, who was a captain of the light horse, to go all over the Island and direct the farmers who were willing to dispose of their cattle or sheep, of which there were a great number on the Island, to drive them to the watering place. None were taken by force. When the farmers had brought them they were all paid by the officer whose duty it was to attend to that business. When those cattle arrived at the watering place they were turned into the fields of the "Glebe," among the young oats and wheat, and mowing grass. Guards were stationed to watch them, as the fences were all destroyed, not a rail being left in three months. At that time things were very cheap. After the British came prices more than doubled.

* * * After the Revolution all about the quarantine grounds was commons. Judge Seaman owned a large tract of land in the Manor, off which he sold the wood. Toward the latter part of the Revolution he had teams cutting and carting there. The inhabitants commonly worked on the roads on Saturdays. One very warm day Mr. Simonson remembered working in company with others on the road that runs down from Four Corners to the north side, when Colonel Billopp and Judge Seaman came along, riding on horseback. They stopped and chatted with the road-master, and gave something to the men, as was then customary,⁶ but the men were dissatisfied with the smallness of the gift. * * * The night when Hatfield⁷ and his party burned the church in Elizabethtown they came back and had a meeting in a large mill in Port Richmond. They went in there and Hatfield preached a sermon, and prayed like a minister. Hilliker bought this old mill, which was a large building containing a dwelling home, and had two runs of stone. It afterwards caught fire and burned down. Hilliker built a smaller one in place of it, and that was burned, after which another was built. Daniel Selter was a great friend to the American cause. He was almost the first settler at Fayetteville, and built a public house there and cleared away the woods during the Revolution. Colonel Aaron Cartelyon kept a store where Edward Taylor since lived. It was this store that the negro Anthony Neal broke into, or was accused of breaking into, and was hung for the offense.⁸

Interview with Peter Wandel, January 8th, 1853: When the British first landed on the Island they destroyed all the fences, and when they went to Jersey proclamation was made to put them up again; but when they returned they destroyed them again. The forts aban-

6 This custom prevailed as long as the system of indiscriminate work on the public roads continued. The writer recalls many instances where men were thus working, being stopped and asked to "donate money for refreshments." It was finally abandoned when the present county roads system went into effect.

7 The name is spelled sometimes Hetfield, and sometimes Hatfield. The Hatfields now residing in Northfield are direct descendants of this family. The large property which his father left to Cornelius Hatfield, in Northfield, was transferred to his brother-in-law to prevent its confiscation.

8 A record under date of December 1st, 1789, contains the following account:

done by the British were never occupied by American soldiers. The buildings that were in them were afterward gradually removed. Some were barracks, and in the fort at the Narrows there was a magazine under ground, made of timbers very close together, like a wall. This was built a year or two before the end of the war. After the evacuation of New York City by the British they made no stay on the Island. They left things here in a very damaged state. All was commons about the quarantine grounds. Cornelius Hatfield was a noble looking fellow, but capable of doing almost anything. He was, probably, not under General Skinner's command, but a kind of commander himself. He ought to have been hung. He, however, went to Nova Scotia after the war. Smith Hatfield was a great bully. The refugee post on Bergen Point was opposite to Port Richmond. There was a whole company there. * * * When General Stirling came to the Island, Peter Wandel, then a youth, served in the fort that stood near the reservoir at Fort Hill, New Brighton, as a volunteer for the occasion. For this his father gave him a good whipping. Stirling could have taken all the forts in half an hour, had he known their weakness and scantiness of provisions and ammunition. But instead of doing this he strung his troops all over the Island. They were extended all along the heights, the snow being four feet deep, and the weather intensely cold. The light horse went along the North Shore in pursuit of them, and took some prisoners, but not many. No reinforcements came to the forts that day; but subsequently two hundred sleighs came down, and Ned Beatty, one of the Hatfield gang, availed himself of the opportunity to bring down a barrel of rum. * * * Wandel, when a boy, went to school to Mr. Rogers, in a small, one-story house that stood just above the Port Richmond church; afterward taught by Mr. Riley, and moved to a point near the dock. His father's house was a short distance east of the Snug Harbor site. He stood at the door of his father's house and saw Hatfield's party engaged in hanging Ball on a tree on Peter Buskirk's farm. The night the British arrived his family was up in the Clove, his father having removed them all thither through fear of the troops; but being assured of safety they all returned the next day. The British turned their horses in upon the growing crops on the farm. No compensation was ever received for it. At that time

"To Richard Scarret for digging a Grave
£0 10 0.

"To Lewis Dey for Boarding the Carpenters
when repairing the County House & Building
the Gallows & furnished 100 shingles 1
Bushel of Lime a pair of hinges & For fetching
Anthony Cornish [alias Neal] from New
York Goal, etc., etc., £6 0 0.

"To Lewis Ryerss (then sheriff) for two
locks for the Goal, for going to New York for
to Report Anthony Cornishes Escape from

Goal, for Going to New York when he was apprehended, for Fetching him from New York, Making the Gallows & Executing of Anthony Cornish, for Expence of Apprehending of sd Cornish at New York. Goal costs £16 16 0."

It is also claimed that the prisoner had murdered a man on board of a vessel lying in the Sound. There is no perfect record of either crime. The scene of the execution is the site of the public school building in Richmond village.

there were not over nine houses between Van Duzer's and Richmond.



OLD VAN DUZER HOMESTEAD, TOMPKINSVILLE; RECENTLY DEMOLISHED.

When the fleet came up to Prince's Bay the children all went up into the garrets to look out to see the ships come in. All the people in the neighborhood immediately got fresh provisions ready and killed great numbers of their young cattle. The English came ashore to purchase these articles.

After the ships had come to at quarantine, the sailors took the sails off, and made tents of them for some of the soldiers. The encampment extended from New Brighton to Stapleton.

In all the space occupied by them, in a short time there was not a blade of grass to be seen. Everything was trodden down by the troops, who were kept "forever marking time." Before the arrival of the main body of troops three vessels kept cruising in the waters about Staten Island. At this time there were on the Island a body of New England troops stationed at the Narrows, and another of Virginia riflemen, among whom were some men sixty years of age. These were billeted among the farmers on the North side. The British vessels stopped at the Watering place to get water one day, the "Savage" [British man-of-war] lying quite close to the shore, while six or seven of her men were engaged in getting water. The Virginia riflemen heard of it, and taking Peter Wandel's father for a guide, started for the spot. They rushed upon the sentinel so suddenly that he had not time to fire before he was seized and made a prisoner. As they continued the course down the hill they were seen from the sloop and fired upon by those on board. The riflemen protected themselves behind rocks and trees as well as they could, and none were hurt by the fire. The men who were getting water ran into the stream up to their chins; but being ordered to come out under a penalty of death, they obeyed, and all were taken prisoners. One of the men on board the "Savage" went up into the "round top" with a blunderbuss, but the riflemen shot him off. The British were prevented from getting water on this occasion. On the American side none were injured except Ned Beatty, who heard the firing and took a walk over the hill to see what was going on. He was struck by a spent ball, but without receiving any serious wound. * * * During the war little "bush shops" were frequent all over the Island. Their whole stock in trade consisted of rum and a gill cup. The latter having no handle, the dealer would put his thumb in it to hold on by, and at the same time lessen the quantity required to fill it.

Interview with old Mr. Disosway, December 26th, 1850: There

was an encampment of British soldiers in Edwards' orchard [the old Dongan manor] on the shore road corner toward New Brighton. In making excavations while erecting one of the buildings on the property an entire skeleton was dug up. From time to time several baskets full of bones have been uncovered at the same place. It was the custom to send the invalid soldiers of the British army to Staten Island. There was another encampment at Belmont's Hill, where the Hessians lived under ground. * * * Judge Ryerss [of Ryerss' ferry] was Disosway's grandfather. He made a fortune out of the British. He was a contractor for supplies to the British troops. The Americans would drive their cattle over from Jersey to be sold. These would be kept at the slaughter house, which was near Bard's. The Americans would come over in the night, steal the cattle and sell them again to Ryerss, who never said anything. He was a man of large size and great business tact. His first wife was killed by fright at the landing of the British.

Interview with Mrs. Blake, who had been a Miss Merrill: She was born near Bull's Head. There were a number of Americans who came over from the Jersey shore one day, and were merry making at a drinking house, [old Bull's Head Tavern, the Tory headquarters]. An English officer who was stopping at her father's house appeared at dinner with his ruffles all bloody. He explained that he had killed half a dozen drunken Americans. She recollected seeing a negro woman covering one dead body with brush.

Interview with Peter Jacobsen, October 18th, 1851: His grandfather, Christian Jacobsen, was killed in his own home by the British. Four soldiers came at night, when he was in bed. They entered the kitchen and aroused the blacks, demanding to know where their master kept his money, and threatened to kill them if they did not tell. An old black woman passed by a secret route to the room of her master and aroused him. He opened the kitchen door and asked what the noise was about, whereupon one of the soldiers returned some insolent reply and at the same time fired upon him. The ball entered his side and he died in a few hours. The soldiers were made known to the officers, and the man who did the firing was hung.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS.



N the great distance of time, while the silken furls of the Stars and Stripes and the old British standard greet each other daily along the shores of Staten Island, and common interests govern the two great nations which they represent as perhaps none others are governed, we approach this subject with a spirit of profound fairness. We shall deal with it only as a matter of history, with no desire to reawaken the animosities and sectional hatred that were left as a legacy of the Revolution.

Nations, as well as individuals, are creatures of circumstances. The people of Staten Island had lived for more than a century as subjects to the English government, and the word loyalty to them had no other meaning than honest friendship for England's king and English institutions. In fact the social and political leaders of Staten Island were fit representatives of royalty, and the people were taught to be subservient, under all circumstances, to whatever measure the parent government thought proper to impose.

It is safe to assume that the people of no other section of the country were similarly situated. They were threatened with death and loss of property by the Americans if they should favor the British cause, and they were met with the same condition of affairs by the British should they favor the rebellion and aid the Americans.¹ No wonder they hesitated to cast their fortunes with either side under those trying circumstances! Scores of leading citizens, however, when the news came from Bunker Hill, decided to strike a blow for liberty, and many enrolled themselves in the cause of freedom. But when the magnificent army of the king took possession of the Island, and glittering promises were held out, and vengeance threatened if they failed to accept, they reasoned that it was discretion to remain loyal to England and its cause. How different would have been their position in history had the British arms been successful!

Some light may be thrown upon this subject by the following extract from a letter addressed by Governor Tryon to "Christopher

¹ Tories who were so strong in their sentiments as to make a residence among the friends of independence undesirable, were frequently coming over to the Island to join the British army or to take advantage of its protection. Some Quakers, whose peculiar principles forbidd their taking any active part in

warlike transactions, fled to the Island as an asylum from the appeals of their active Whig neighbors. Sullivan, in his raid on the Island, claimed to have taken twenty-eight Tories in addition to his other trophies; but the accounts from the other side represent that they were not Tories but peaceable Quakers."

Billopp, Esq., Colonel of Militia of Richmond County, Staten Island," dated May 19th, 1777, which appeared in *Rivington's Gazette* on June 9th, with the annexed remarks by the editor of that paper:

"It is my earnest recommendation, that the inhabitants of Richmond County, who had the first opportunity of testifying their loyalty to the Prince, and fidelity to the British constitution, on the arrival of the King's troops, and which was most graciously accepted by his Majesty, should, on this occasion, eagerly follow the approved example of the militia of Kings County, by liberally raising a sum of money for the comfort and encouragement of the Provincial troops raised in this province. I enclose the form of the instrument which is adopted for the inhabitants of the city and county to subscribe; copies of which will be sent to Queens and Suffolk counties, for a similar purpose. Any suggestions of fears and apprehensions from circumstances of situation, must, and assuredly will be construed into a lukewarmness at this crisis, to the king and the old constitution. Therefore, let the loyal subjects now distinguish themselves by free



THE OLD AUSTIN MANSION, OVERLOOKING THE NARROWS, AT CLIFTON.

donations, and dare the worst from men who have struck at the root of their liberty and property."

The *Gazette* also contains the following editorial remarks on the subject:

"We have the pleasure to inform the Public, that the loyal inhabitants of STATEN ISLAND have already subscribed *Five Hundred Pounds* for the Encouragement of the Provincial Corps of this Colony, and transmitted the same to our worthy Governor, to be applied to that laudable Purpose. The Subscription in other Parts meets with great Success among his Majesty's loyal Subjects, both in this City and County, and in the Counties upon Long Island, almost

every one being desirous to give this Test of Loyalty and Love of constitutional Freedom. Trimmers and some doubtful Characters, it is expected, will be made manifest upon this occasion, and of course be properly noticed."

In connection with this we notice that in March, 1779, Sir Henry Clinton, by proclamation, gave permission to any loyal subjects of the king to enclose and cultivate for their own benefit portions of the cleared woodlands and other uncultivated lands of persons who had left their homes on Staten Island and Long Island, and were not under the protection of the government, and such loyal subjects were also permitted to erect temporary habitations upon such lands.

Immediately after the encampment of the British army here, Staten Island became practically the headquarters for Tories. A band of desperadoes was organized, with Captain Cornelius Hatfield as the leader. There were more than a hundred men under his command. Some writers claim that he had fully three hundred. He was given a roving commission and held accountable only to the commander-in-chief. He established his headquarters in the old Bull's Head Tavern, in Northfield, (destroyed by fire a few years since), while one of his Lieutenants, Van Buskirk, occupied a building, still standing, but remodeled, opposite the Woodrow M. E. Church. The devilish deeds which the Hatfields and their companions committed will forever blacken their memory. Murder, robbery and arson were their delight. Men, women and children were their victims. Nothing was too sacred to escape their fiendish practices. Old friends had no claim upon their mercy. Day and night they prowled over the Island, committing depredations upon persons and property which they had on their "black list," until they became a terror to all those with whom they were not immediately connected.

It is due to this subject and to the people whom it affects, however, that this chapter be not treated other than with the profoundest consideration and fairness. Hence we appeal for assistance and guidance to the faithful historians of the trying times in which the American Loyalists acted their part in the great political drama.²

"Of the reasons which influenced, of hopes and fears which agitated, and of the miseries and rewards which awaited the Loyalists; or, as they were called in the politics of the time, the 'Tories'—of the American Revolution, but little is known." Such are the words of Sabine, in his history of the American Loyalists. "The best intellect, the

2 The war, brought thus to their very doors, had wrought a great change in the society of the town. A large number of the best men of the place had taken up arms, either in the militia, or in the service of Congress, and so were of uncertain residence. Intercourse between families had become much more reserved, as no one knew at what time he might be betrayed to the one or the other party,

nor which party might presently be in the ascendant. With the vast host of disciplined troops on Staten Island, the very flower of the British army, and daily increasing in numbers by the arrival of reinforcements, the Tories had great reason to expect to be shortly restored to their homes and estates, and in turn to vex and dispossess their patriot neighbors.—*Hatfield's History of Elizabeth.*

best informed among us, confess the deficiency of knowledge. The reason is obvious. Men, who, like the Loyalists, separated themselves from their friends and kindred, who are driven from their homes, who surrender the hope and expectation of life, and who become outlaws, wanderers and exiles—such men leave few monuments behind them. Their papers are scattered and lost, and their very names pass from human recollection. * * * To weave into concrete and continuous narrations the occasional allusions of books and State Papers; to join together fragmentary events and incidents; to distinguish persons of the same surname or family name when only that name is mentioned, and to reconcile the disagreements of various epistolary and verbal connections, has seemed at times utterly impossible. There are *some* who can fully appreciate these and other difficulties which beset the task.”

It is interesting to note that while so large a proportion of the people of the Province of New York preferred to sever their connection with the mother country, very many of them entered the British army and fought in deference of their principles. Indeed, whole battalions, and even brigades, were raised by the great landholders, and continued organized and in pay throughout the struggle. It is a lamentable fact that New York was really the Loyalists' stronghold, and contained more of them than any other colony in all America. “I will not say that she devoted her resources of men and of money to the cause of the enemy,” says Sabine; “but I do say that she withheld many of the one, and much of the other, from the cause of the right.”

Massachusetts furnished 67,907 men for the Continental army between the years of 1775 and 1783; while New York supplied but 17,781. In adjusting the war balances, after peace was established, Massachusetts, as was then ascertained, had overpaid her share in the sum of \$1,248,801 of silver money; but New York was deficient in the large amount of \$2,074,846. New Hampshire, though almost a wilderness, furnished 12,496 troops for the Continental ranks, or quite three-quarters of the number enlisted in the Empire State.

Unless Galloway, the historian, was mistaken, the Loyalists of the Middle Colonies were ready to enter the military service of the Crown in large numbers. His statement is, that, “had Sir William Howe issued a proclamation when in Philadelphia, 3,500 would have repaired to his standard; that, in that city, in New Jersey, and in New York, he could have embodied quite 5,000; that upwards of fifty gentlemen went to his camp to offer their services in disarming the disaffected, but failing to obtain even an interview, retired in disgust, and that, under Sir William's successor, 5,000 actually appeared in arms for the defense of the city of New York.”³

3 The patriot cause appeared to be utterly hopeless. It seemed impossible for Congress to retrieve the disaster that, since the fatal field of Flatbush, had come upon the country.

The Declaration of Independence seemed now but an idle boast. It was regarded as certain that the authority of King George would soon be re-established in all the States. Such was

"I affirm," adds Sabine, "that the Whigs and their opponents did not always meet in open and fair fight, nor give and take courtesies; and observe the rules of civilized warfare; but that on the contrary they murdered one another! General Greene and Chief Justice Marshall are my authorities. 'The amenities between the Whigs and Tories,' wrote the first, 'render the situation truly deplorable. The Whigs seem determined to extirpate the Tories, and the Tories the Whigs. Some thousands have fallen * * * and the evil rages with more violence than ever. If a stop can not be put to these homicides the country will be depopulated in a few days, as neither Whig nor Tory can live.' "

"The people of the South, too," remarked Marshall, in his *Life of Washington*, "felt all the miseries which are adopted by war in its most savage form. Being about equally divided between the two contending parties, reciprocal injuries had gradually sharpened their resentments against each other, and had aroused neighbor against neighbor, until it had become a war of extermination. As the parties alternately triumphed, opportunities were alternately given for the exercise of their vindictive passions."

Let us glance at the various claims which influenced the men then prominent in the colonies. First, consider those who held office. Nearly all the officials of all grades adhered to the Crown. This was to have been expected. Men who lived in ease, who enjoyed all the consideration and deference which rank and station invariably confer, especially in monarchies, and who, therefore, had nothing to gain, but much to lose, by a change, viewed the discensions that arose between themselves and the people in a light which allowed their self-love and their self-interest to have full play. In obeying the instructions of the Ministry to enforce the statutes of the realm, they did but perform common acts of duty!

These were the arguments, and they were neither the first nor the last persons in office who have reasoned in the same manner, and who have kept their places at the expense of their patriotism. Beside, they affected to believe that the Whig leaders were mere ready office hunters, and that the contests between them were in some measure personal.

The church played its part in the drama. In the early settlement of the country the duty of the ministers was not confined to instructions in things spiritual; but embraced matters of temporal concern. On questions of pressing public exigency their counsel and advice were eagerly sought and implicitly followed. This deference to their office, and to their real or supposed wisdom, though less general than at former periods, had not ceased; and clergymen, both Whigs and Tories, often made a recruiting house of the sanctuary. Some of

the confident expectation and boast of the Loyalists at New York, on Long Island, on Staten Island, and in every place occupied by

the British troops. Even the most sanguine of patriots spoke and wrote in the most despondent terms.—*Irring's Life of Washington*.

them, of both parties, disregarded the obligations of Christian charity, and sacrificed their kindly affections as men, in their earnest appeals from the pulpit. Generally, the minister and his people were of the same party; but there were some memorable divisions and quarrels, separations and dismissals.

It is a fact that the majority of lawyers were Whigs. Few adhered to the Crown. The majority of speakers and advocates on the popular side were educated to the law. Many gentlemen of the bar, on being retained by the merchants, became impressed with the enormities of the commercial code, and, in advocating the cause of clients who claimed to continue their contraband trade on the ground of usage, they were impelled to take a lofty stand that commerce should be, and, on principles of justice, really was, as open and as free to British subjects in the Old World as it was for those in the New.



THE BARNE TYSEN HOMESTEAD, KARLE'S NECK; ERECTED ABOUT 1680.

And yet the ministry had their partisans among the lawyers, and some of them were persons of great professional eminence. In fact, the "giants of the law" in the colonies were all Loyalists. As in the case of the clergy many of them were driven into exile. Several entered the military service as officers, and at the return of peace a few returned to their former abodes and pursuits; but the greater number passed the remainder of their lives either in England, or in her present possessions in America. The anti-Revolutionary bar of Massachusetts and New York furnished the Admiralty and Common-law Courts of New Brunswick, Nova Scotia, Canada and the Bermudas with many of their most distinguished judges.

The physicians who adorned the cause were numerous, and the proportion of Whigs in the profession of medicine was less, probably, than that of law or the ministry. Most of them remained in the country, and generally pursued their business. There seems to have been an understanding that, though pulpits should be closed, and litigation be suspended, the sick should not be deprived of their regular and freely chosen medical attendants.

The private and professional life of John Adams offered a fair illustration of the disabilities which existed here prior to the Revolution. "If a horse flung a shoe," says Sabine, "the stinging, insulting declaration of Pitt that an American could not of right make so much as the nails required to set it, rang in his ears," and similar expressions. In a word, everywhere were the humiliating evidences that an American was in every manner the inferior of an Englishman!

If neither Mr. Adams nor any other representative of his party had addressed the American people on the momentous wrongs and demands, which for generations had palsied the arm of New England, and had rankled in the universal American heart, and which in less than fifteen months were embodied in the Declaration of Independence, the Loyalists might have been excused for acting in conformity with the grievances stated by their opponents.

The denial that independence was the final object, was constant and general. To obtain concessions and to preserve the connection with England, was approved everywhere; and John Adams, years after the war was over, went further than this and said: "There was not a moment during the Revolution when I would not have given everything I possessed for a restoration to the state of things before the contest begun, provided we could have had a sufficient security for its continuance."

If Mr. Adams be regarded as expressing the sentiments of the Whigs, they were willing to remain Colonists, provided they could have had their rights secured to them; while the Tories were committed to this condition without such security. Such, it appears, was the only difference between the two parties prior to hostilities; and many Whigs like Mr. Adams, would have been willing to rescind the Declaration of Independence, and to forget the past, upon proper guarantees for the future! ⁴

"This mode of stating the question, and defining the difference between the two parties, down to a certain period at least," adds Sabine, "cannot be objected to, unless the sincerity and truthfulness of some of the most eminent men in our history are directly impeached."

Benjamin Franklin's testimony, a few days before the Battle of Lexington, was, that he "had more than once traveled almost from one end of the continent to the other, and kept a variety of company, eating, drinking and conversing with them freely, and never had heard in any conversation from any person, drunk or sober, the least expression of a wish for a separation, or a hint that such a thing would be advantageous to America."

Mr. Jay is quite as explicit: "During the course of my life, and until the second petition of Congress in 1775, I never did hear an American of any class, or of any disaffection, express a wish for the independence of the colonies. * * * It has always been, and still is, my opinion and belief, that our country was prompted and impelled to independence by necessity, and not by choice."

Mr. Jefferson said: "What, eastward of New York, might have been

⁴ Intelligent Loyalists, when asked why they adhered to the Crown, have said that those who received the name of Tories, were at first, indeed for some years, striving to preserve order and an observance to the rights of persons and property; that many who took

sides at the outset as mere conservators of the peace, were denounced by those whose purposes they thwarted in pure self-defense to accept of royal protection, and thus to become identified with the royal party ever after.
—Sabine's *American Loyalists*.

the disposition towards England before the commencement of hostilities, I know not; but before that, I never heard a whisper of a disposition to separate from Great Britain; and after that its possibility was contemplated with affliction by all."

Washington, in 1774, fully sustains those declarations, and, in the "Fairfax County Rules" it is complained that "Malevolent falsehoods" were propagated by the Ministry to prejudice the mind of the king: "particularly that there is an intention in the American Colonies to set up for independent states."

Mr. Madison was not in public life until May, 1776; but he says: "It has always been my impression that a re-establishment of the Colonial relations to the parent country, as they were previous to the controversy, was the real object of every class of the people, till the despair of obtaining it."

It is impossible at this time to ascertain the exact number of Loyalists who took up arms; but from present evidence, it is conceded that there were twenty-four thousand at the time of the surrender of Cornwallis. It is seen that the number of their killed and wounded in the Battle of Bennington, General Sullivan's raid on Staten Island, adventure of Nelson in New Jersey, Battle of King's Mountain, in the actions of Colonel Washington, Marion, Lee and Sumter, would amount to one-tenth of that number alone; another tenth part of that number was slain in hand-to-hand conflicts, without leaders.

At the time of the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, Virginia, a considerable portion of his army was composed of native Americans, and his Lordship evinced great anxiety for their protection. Failing to obtain special terms for them in articles of capitulation, he availed himself of the conceded privilege of sending an armed ship to the north, without molestation, to convey away the most obnoxious among them. General Burgoyne had been spared this trouble, for, as his difficulties had increased and his dangers threatened, the Loyalists abandoned him to his fate.

The following organizations, composed exclusively of American Loyalists, were at various times encamped on Staten Island: The King's Rangers, the Royal Fencible Americans, the Queen's Rangers, the New York Volunteers, the King's American Regiment, the Prince of Wales' American Volunteers, the Maryland Loyalists, De Lancey's Battalions, the Second American Regiment, the King's Rangers, Carolina, the South Carolina Royalists, the North Carolina Highland Regiment, the King's American Dragoons, the Loyal American Regiment, the American Legion, the New Jersey Volunteers, [Skinner's Brigade]; the British Legion, the Loyal Foresters, the Orange Rangers, the Pennsylvania Loyalists, the Guides and Pioneers, the North Carolina Volunteers, the Georgia Loyalists, the West Chester Volunteers, the Loyal New Englanders, the Associated Loyalists, Wentworth's Volunteers, Hamilton's Loyal Militia, and Billopp's Staten Island Militia.

The Sons of Liberty often became mobs — needlessly and some times in their very wantonness offended beyond all hope of recall, persons who hesitated and doubted, and for the moment chose to occupy the position of neutrals. The practice of “tarring and feathering,” however reprehensible, had, perhaps, very little influence in determining the final choice of parties. This form of punishment, though so frequent as to qualify the saying of the ancients, that “man is a two-legged animal without feathers,” was borrowed from the Old World, where it had existed since the Crusades, and was confined principally to the obnoxious western home affairs and informers against smuggled goods, who adhered to the Crown.

Many loyalists were confined in private houses, some were sent to jails, and others to “Sunsbury Mines.” But the prisons were hardly proper places for the confinement of such people, and it is hinted that a large proportion of the persons whom it was deemed proper to arrest, preferred banishment to the loss of liberty, even though they were sure to be comfortably quartered in the homes of Whigs.

After the war, even when peace had been thoroughly established, the successful Americans in several of the States committed a serious error. Historian Sabine calls it nothing short of a crime. “Instead of repealing the proscription and banishment acts,” he says, “they manifested a spirit to place the humbled and unhappy Loyalists beyond the pale of human sympathy. Discrimination between the conservative and pure, and the unprincipled and corrupt, was not perhaps possible during the struggle; but, hostilities at an end, it was thought by many that mere loyalty to the Crown should have been forgotten.”

In August, 1783, Sir Guy Carleton wrote to the President of Congress that the Loyalists “conceive the safety of their lives depends on my removing them”; that “as the daily gazettes and publications furnish repeated proofs, not only of a disregard to the establishment of peace; but barbarous menaces from committees formed in various towns. * * I should show an indifference to the feelings of humanity, as well as to the honor and interest of the nation whom I serve, to leave any that are deserving to quit the country, a prey to the violence they conceive they have so much cause to apprehend.”

From another source, it appears that when the news of peace was known, the City of New York presented a scene of distress not easily described; that adherents to the Crown, who were in the army, tore the lappels from their coats and stamped them under their feet, and exclaimed that they were ruined; that others cried out they had sacrificed everything to prove their loyalty, and were now left to shift for themselves, without the friendship of their King or their country. Previous to the evacuation, and in September, upwards of twelve thousand men, women and children embarked at the city and at Long and Staten Islands for Nova Scotia and the Bermudas. Some of these

victims to civil war tried to make merry at their doom, by saying that they were "bound to a lovely country, where there are nine months winter and three months of cold weather every year"; while others, in their desperation, tore down their houses, and, had they not been prevented, would have carried off the bricks of which they were built. Those who went north landed at Port Roseway (now Shelburne), and at St. John, in the Province of New Brunswick, where many, utterly destitute, were supplied with food at the public charge, and were obliged to live in huts built of bark and rough boards.

"Among the banished ones thus doomed to misery," says Sabine, "were persons whose hearts and hopes had been as true as Washington's own; for in the divisions of families which everywhere occurred, and which formed one of the most distressing circumstances of the conflict, there were wives and daughters who, although bound to Loyalists by the holiest of ties, had given their sympathies to the right from the beginning, and who now, in the triumph of the cause which had been their prayers, went meekly into hopeless, interminable exile. The mischief all done—thousands ruined and banished, new British colonies founded, animosities to continue for generations made certain—the violent Whigs were satisfied. All this accomplished, the statute book was divested of its most objectionable enactments, and a few of the Loyalists returned to their old homes; but by far the greater part died in banishment."



OLD VANDERBILT HOMESTEAD, STAPLETON.

The subject of restitution to the Loyalists was a source of great difficulty during the negotiations for peace, both in this country and in England, and many were the long and bitter suits to recover confiscated property. Congress took up the matter, and it dragged for a long time. Very earnest demands were made to recompense the Loyalists. There were falsehoods and misrepresentations, for many had destroyed their own property; others had borne arms against the country and assisted to ravage and burn, and others still had sold their property themselves. And then, the country was not in a condition to properly reward those who had toiled and bled for its emancipation, or even make good their losses, much less to compensate its enemies. "All this was, as a matter of course, considered by counsel. But supposing the forces of the Crown had been successful, and the Americans had been defeated, would the claims of thousands who expended their estates in the cause of liberty, and who had no shelter for their heads, have been allowed?"

In the British House of Commons Mr. Wilberforce said that "when he considered the case of the Loyalists, he then confessed he felt himself conquered; then he saw his country humiliated—he saw her at the feet of America! Still, he was induced to believe that Congress would religiously comply with the Article, and that the Loyalists would obtain redress from America."

Lord North said that "never were the honor, the principles, the policy of a nation so grossly abused as in the desertion of those men, who are now exposed to every punishment that desertion and poverty can inflict, because they were not rebels."

Lord Mulgrave declared that "the Article respecting the Loyalists he could never regard but as a lasting monument of national disgrace."

Mr. Burke said that "a vast number of the Loyalists had been deluded by England, and had risked everything, and that, to such men, the nation owed protection, and its honor was pledged for their security at all hazards."

Mr. Norton said that "he could not give his assent to the Treaty on account of the Article which related to the Loyalists."

Lord Stormont said that "Britain was bound in justice and honor, gratitude and affection, and every tie, to provide for and protect them."

Lord Shelburne said "I have but one answer to give the House. It is the answer I gave my own bleeding heart. A part must be wounded, that the whole of the empire may not perish. If better terms could be had, think you, my lord, I would not have enforced them? I had but the alternative either to accept the terms proposed, or continue the war."

During the negotiations of the Treaty, it appears to have been considered by the Commissioners on both sides, that each party to the contest must bear its own losses, and provide for its own sufferers. A number of Loyalists who were in England, came to the United States to claim restitution of their estates; but their applications were unheeded.

Loyalists generally finally applied to Parliament for relief, and George III., in his speech, recommended restitution. Commissioners were appointed to consider the claims. The first thing to be considered by the Commissioners was the "loyalty and conduct of the claimants." In their first report they divided them into six classes, as follows:

Those who rendered service to Great Britain.

Those who had borne arms for Great Britain.

Uniform Loyalists.

Loyal British subjects resident in Great Britain.

Loyalists who had taken oaths to the United States; but afterwards joined the British.

Loyalists who had borne arms for the American States; but afterwards joined the British navy or army.

The claimants were required to state in proper form every species of loss which they had suffered, and for which they thought they had a right to recover compensation. A few received their whole demands, without the deduction of a shilling, while others received pounds where they demanded hundreds. Others still obtained nothing, having been excluded by their inability to prove their losses. Many fraudulent claims were discovered. The rigid rules enforced, which it would seem applied to all claimants, caused much murmuring. The mode pursued of examining the claimant and the witness in his behalf, separately and apart, caused some severe epithets, and the Commissioners were called an "Inquisition."

Human nature then was about the same as it is to-day. With all the caution which it was possible for the Commissioners to exercise, some who did not lose a single penny, who were entirely destitute of property when the war began, and to whom hostilities were actually beneficial by affording pay and employment, were placed in comfortable circumstances, and stories which show the plans and schemes that were devised to baffle the rigid scrutiny of the board are still repeated.

The 26th of March, 1784, was the latest period allowed for presenting claims, and on or before that day the number of claimants was 2,063, and the amount of property reported to have been confiscated, £7,046,278; in 1788, the Commissioners in England had determined 1,680 claims, besides those withdrawn, and had liquidated to the amount of £1,887,548. The delay caused much discontent on the part of those who were grieving over their losses. Twelve years elapsed before the property of most of them had been alienated under the confiscation acts, and five, since their title to recompense was urged by the law under which their claims had been presented.

A very popular error exists to the effect that "fifty-five Loyalist families on Staten Island joined Colonel Christopher Billopp in petitioning Sir Guy Carleton for grants of land in Nova Scotia, and accompanied him to that Province." The truth is, Colonel Billopp did join fifty-four others in presenting such a petition; but the fifty-four came not from Staten Island alone, but from New York City, Long Island, New Jersey, Connecticut and Massachusetts. It transpired in July, 1783, and the petitions were, and still are known as the "Fifty-five." They represented that their position in society had been very respectable, and that previous to the Revolution they had possessed much influence. They stated that they intended to remove to Nova Scotia, and desired that the same number of acres that were granted to field officers of the army might be given to each of them. And they asked that, if possible, the lands should be conveyed free from quit-rents, and from other incumbrances. The petition caused much clamor in

New York, and a copy of it having been sent to St. John, and printed, created excitement there.

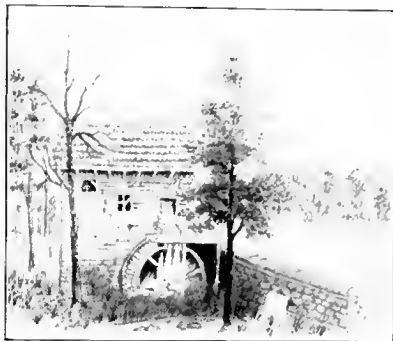
Biographical sketches of those American Loyalists who were directly connected with Staten Island, are given in the two following chapters.

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS—CONTINUED.



ALSTON, DAVID. He resided near Rahway, N. J., prior to the Revolution. When Skinner's Brigade was organized he was commissioned a captain in the Third Battalion.¹ His company was recruited mainly in the vicinity of Rahway. He resigned the same year of his appointment, and was re-appointed captain, this time in Lieutenant-Colonel Christopher Billopp's Battalion of Staten Island Militia, in which he continued to serve until the close of the war. He purchased the property in Northfield, now familiarly known as the Samuel Decker estate. The large stone house in which he resided and died is quite familiar to many people living on Staten Island to-day. It was demolished about twenty-five years ago. Captain Alston died between the 6th and 14th of May, 1805, and his grave, marked by a small brown stone, is located near the main entrance to St. Andrew's Church, in Richmond. He continued to draw half-pay from the British Government as long as he lived.



THE BRITTAIN MILL, CLOVE LAKE; DEMOLISHED SEVERAL YEARS SINCE.

AIKEN, MOSES. This name appears in Staten Island affairs prior to the Revolution, and is dropped at the commencement of hostilities.

¹ A copy of Captain Alston's commission in Skinner's Brigade is here given, and is an interesting and curious old document:

"L. S. By His Excellency Sir William Howe, Knight of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, General and Commander-in-Chief of all His Majesty's Forces within the Colonies lying on the Atlantic Ocean from Nova Scotia to West Florida inclusive, etc., etc., etc.

"To David Alston, Esq.:

"By virtue of the Power and Authority in Me vested I DO hereby constitute and appoint You to be a Captain of a Company in the Third Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, Commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Edward V. Dongan. You are therefore to take the said Company into Your Care and Charge, and duly to exercise the Officers and Soldiers thereof in Arms, and to use Your best Endeavours to

keep them in good Order and Discipline from Time to Time, as you shall receive from the General or Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in North America, now and for the Time being Your Lieut.-Colonel Commandant or any other Your Superior officer, according to the Rules and Discipline of War in Pursuance of the Trust hereby reposed in You.

"Given under my Hand and Seal at Head Quarters in New York, the Fifteenth day of July, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Seventy-Six, in the Sixteenth Year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord George the Third, by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, and so forth.

"By his Excellency's Command, W. HOWE.

"ROBERT MACKENZIE."

We find it again in the muster roll of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, at St. John, N. B., which, after a service of several years, was disbanded at Fort Howe, N. B., in 1802. We believe this to be the same man. It is taken for granted that he never returned to Staten Island, as the name does not appear again in the county records.

ANSLEY, OZIAS. In 1782 he was an ensign in the First Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, and was acting adjutant. After the war he settled in the Province of New Brunswick, and received half-pay from the British Government. He became a magistrate and judge of the Common Pleas, and served in that capacity for several years. He returned to Staten Island, where he died in 1828, aged eighty-five years. His son, the Rev. Thomas Ansley, an Episcopalian clergyman of Nova Scotia, died in St. Andrew, N. B., in 1831, aged about sixty-five years. His grandson, Daniel Ansley, Esq., resided in St. John, N. B., in 1847. His daughter, Charity, wife of Nathaniel Brittain, died in 1848, in her seventieth year.

ARMSTRONG, RICHARD. Resided for a time on Staten Island before the war. He became a major in the Queen's Rangers, and went to England after peace was declared. It is said that he occupied with his family the old Fountain house, still standing near the Black Horse Tavern, at New Dorp.

BARBARIE, JOHN. A short time before the Revolution he came to Staten Island and resided near Richmond. He was appointed a captain in Skinner's Brigade, and was taken prisoner in 1777 and sent to Trenton, N. J. In the siege of Ninety-six, S. C., and at Eutaw Springs he was badly wounded. He went to St. John, N. B., after the war, and was a grantee of that city, and also received half-pay from the British Government the remainder of his life. He was a colonel of militia and a magistrate of the County of York. He died at Sussex Vale, N. B., in 1818, aged sixty-seven years. His son, Andrew Barbare, became a member of the Provincial Assembly.

BARNES, GEORGE. The friendship of this man was highly prized by Sir Henry Clinton, on whose staff he served as a volunteer aide, a fashionable thing for those with aristocratic notions to do in those days. He went to England with General Clinton, but came back soon and gave his services to Sir Guy Carleton in a similar manner. He is supposed to have been a native of Staten Island, but we find no record of him after the Evacuation.

BARNES, JOSHUA. Lived in Westfield before the Revolution. He was commissioned a captain in De Lancey's corps of Loyalists. In 1778, while serving in Massachusetts, together with his entire company he was captured by Major Leavenworth. He died in York, (now Toronto), Canada, in 1813.

BARTON, THOMAS. He inherited a tract of land near the Narrows, which he disposed of and removed to New Jersey several years prior to the Revolution. At the organization of Skinner's Brigade

he was commissioned a lieutenant-colonel. While serving on Staten Island in 1777, he was defeated by an American detachment, and later was victorious in an engagement at Paramus. He was captured on Staten Island, together with about forty of his men, the same year, and sent to Trenton, N. J. After the war he retired with his family to Nova Scotia, and received a large tract of land at Digby, where he died about 1790. His family returned to the United States, and it is said for a time resided on Staten Island.

BAYLEY, RICHARD. He was born in Connecticut in 1745, and became an eminent physician. In 1769-'70 he attended lectures in London. In 1772 he began practicing in New York and also on Staten Island, where he was related on his maternal side, and resided here much of the time. His attention was called in 1772 to that disease now known as the croup, which theretofore professional men had treated as putrid sore throat. His experiments resulted in the adoption of active treatment and in an entire change of remedies for that formidable disease. In 1776 he entered the British army under Sir William Howe, as a surgeon; but, incapable of enduring separation from his wife, he resigned just before her decease in 1777. For the remainder of his life he was engaged in professional duties. He occupied the chairs of anatomy and surgery in Columbia College, and published letters and essays on medical subjects. He died in New York in 1801, aged fifty-six years.

BEARDSLEY, REV. JOHN. He figured prominently on Staten Island during the Revolution, where he was well known, having spent much of his time here with relatives, the Kruzers, from his boyhood. He is spoken of as a noble man, and did much during the war to prevent suffering and loss on the part of the residents, regardless of their political sentiments or affiliations. He was one of the Loyalists who applied for Crown land in the Province of New Brunswick, and in 1793 was appointed chaplain of the King's New Brunswick Regiment.

BEDELL, CORNELIUS. He was very enthusiastic in support of the King. He gave his property liberally in helping the British army, and at the end of the war was very poor. Joining some of his fellow Loyalists, he went to Upper Canada, and died in the following year. He is said to have had sixteen children, all of whom left Staten Island with their father and scattered throughout Canada.

BEDELL, FREEMAN. He was a warm, personal friend of Colonel Christopher Billopp, and before the war was superintendent of the Billopp plantation. He left Staten Island with Colonel Billopp; but disappeared on his way and was never heard of again. It is thought that he was drowned.

BEDLE, JOHN. He was born in Westfield, Staten Island, in 1757. In the Revolution he served as private secretary to Lieutenant-Colonel Christopher Billopp. He went to St. John, New Brunswick,

at the end of the war, and was employed a year or two in surveying that city. He removed to Woodstock, in the same Province, about the year 1794, where he was a magistrate for forty years. After the division of York County he was a magistrate, judge of the Common Pleas, and register of wills and deeds for the County of Carleton. He died in 1838, aged eight-three years. He married Margaret Dibble, who was living in 1852 at the age of fifty-six. He had ten children: William Jarvis and Paul M., magistrates; John, a judge of the Court of Common Pleas; George A., Register of Deeds; Joseph, Tyler, Walter Dibble, and three daughters.

BILLOPP, CHRISTOPHER. He was born in the old stone house in Westfield, known as the Manor of Bentley, and represented the third generation of that family on those premises. His grandfather was Captain Christopher Billopp, of England. Judge Thomas Farmar, of Perth Amboy, (formerly of Staten Island), a brother to Mrs. Billopp, had a son Thomas, who married his cousin Eugenia, Captain Billopp's only child. Thomas Farmar, upon his wife's inheriting her father's property, (the Manor of Bentley), adopted the name of Billopp. He was Thomas Farmar Billopp. Their son was Christopher Billopp, the noted soldier of the Revolution. He commanded the Staten Island Militia during the war, and was twice captured. Colonel Billopp was Chief of Police of Staten Island for many years up to 1782. A portion of his property was confiscated by the Government. In 1783 he went with his family to Nova Scotia, and removed later to St. John, New Brunswick, where he became a very useful and prominent man. He died in St. John in 1827, ninety-two years of age. (See the Story of the Billopps and their Home.)

BLAKE, ISAAC. He was a private in the Staten Island Militia. He went to Nova Scotia in 1783, and it is thought died there a few years later.

BLEAU, WALDRON. He resided near Blazing Star, (Rossville), about 1770, shortly after which he removed to New York, from whence he came. In 1776, he was an addressor of Lord and Sir William Howe. In 1782, he was a captain in the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. He went to St. John, Province of New Brunswick, in 1783, and died five days after landing there. His house and land in the City of New York were confiscated, but restored later to his wife and daughter.

BODINE, JOHN. On two or three occasions this man was identified with the Hatfield band. He became notorious for his hostility to the cause of freedom. He attempted to remain on Staten Island after the war, but was driven away. We find the name in Upper Canada near the close of the century, and it is thought he located there. He had no family.

BONNELL, ISAAC. He was a native of New Jersey and was sheriff of Middlesex County under Governor Franklin, the last colonial gov-

ernor of that Province, and was his intimate and personal friend. In 1776, he was apprehended by order of Washington, and directed by the Provincial Congress to remain at Trenton on parole; but leave was given, finally, to live elsewhere. Subsequently he retired to the British lines, and became Barrack-Master on Staten Island. He occupied an old stone house that stands near the entrance to the Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp. At the end of the war he went to Digby, Nova Scotia, where for fifty guineas he bought a log hut and a lot of land. His property across the Kills was confiscated. In Nova Scotia he was a merchant and a justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He died in 1806, aged sixty-nine years. His only son bore the name of William Frankfin, as also did a grandson, who, in 1861, was postmaster of Gagetown, New Brunswick.

BONSALL, RICHARD. He was a native of Wales, and a physician. Emigrated to New York prior to the Revolution. He spent almost all his time during the war on Staten Island in the hospitals. In 1783, he went to St. John and was a grantee of that city; he died there in 1814, aged seventy-two years. His wife's name was Smith; she was a native of Staten Island, but at the time of marriage resided on Long Island.

BOWDEN, THOMAS. He removed from New York to Staten Island shortly after the arrival of General Howe's army, his wife being a native of this place. He entered the king's service in the course of a few months, and rose to the rank of major in De Lancey's Second Battalion in 1782. After the war he went to England, and died near the close of the century.

BREWERTON, GEO. In the French and Indian war he commanded a New York regiment. In 1776, he was charged with "dangerous designs and treasonable conspiracies against the American cause, and at the instance of Livingston, Morris and Jay, a warrant was issued by General Greene for his apprehension and seizure of his papers." Colonel Brewerton came to Staten Island, where he remained in seclusion for a time. One day he ventured to the city and was captured. In his examination he stated that "instead of aiding the Ministerial armies, he had avoided, and persuaded men to enlist in the Colonial service." But he was held for good behavior in a bond of £500. Subsequently,



DANIEL LAKE HOMESTEAD, NEW DORP, 1690.

he entered the service of the Crown as Lieutenant-Colonel, and commanded the Second Battalion of De Lancey's Brigade. He died in New York in 1779. His widow, three sons and two daughters arrived in New York from London in 1786, and for a long time resided on Staten Island.

BRITTAI, JOSEPH. He came here from Monmouth County, New Jersey, claiming protection as a Loyalist. When Skinner's Brigade was organized he was appointed an ensign. He was captured, but made his escape. He went to St. John, New Brunswick, in 1780, and died there in 1830.

BRITTAI, NATHANIEL. He was a Staten Island farmer, and furnished provisions to the British. He went to Nova Scotia with the intention of taking up land; but died before negotiations were completed.

BURGER, JAMES L. He was a private in the Staten Island Militia, under Captain Abraham Jones. While waiting to embark with the Loyalists in New York, he was injured by a fall, from the effects of which he died in the course of a few days.

CHILD, JOSEPH. A person by this name lived on Staten Island at the commencement of the war. He is credited by Sabine as being a member of the "New York Artillery." In 1776, he was tried by court-martial for defrauding Christopher Saturn of a dollar; for directing damnation to all Whigs and Sons of Liberty, and for profane cursing and swearing. He was found guilty, and sentenced to be drummed out of the army. The name appears on the Island later, but too late to be that of the same person.

CHIPMAN, WARD. He was a native of Massachusetts and was born in 1754. In 1775 he was driven from Boston; was one of the eighteen country gentlemen who that year were addressors of General Gage. In 1776, he went to Halifax, thence to England, where he was allowed a pension. This he relinquished soon and returned to America and joined the King's army. During the remainder of the war he was employed in the mail department and Court of Admiralty. In 1782, he was Deputy Muster-Master General of the Loyalist forces and remained on Staten Island. In 1785 he petitioned for a grant of land in Nova Scotia and made his home later in New Brunswick. There he became a Member of the House of Assembly, Advocate General, Solicitor General, Justice of the Supreme Court, Member of the Council, President and Commander-in-Chief of the Colony. He died in Fredericton, the capital, in 1824, and was buried in St. John.

CHRISTOPHER, RICHARD. He lived on the New Springville road, about a mile from Richmond. Served in Captain Jones' company of Staten Island Militia. He went to Nova Scotia with Colonel Billopp, and afterward served as a private in the King's New Brunswick Regiment. He was of the family of Christophers who once owned the land now belonging to Mr. Sylvester Decker, in Northfield.

CLARK, WILLIAM. He resided in New Jersey; but was one of the notorious Hatfield band of robbers. He did much service with his companions, and became an expert horsethief. It was computed that between the year 1776 and June, 1782, he stole upwards of one hundred valuable horses from New Jersey, which he sold on Staten Island to the Royal army. It was known that he frequently went within the American lines; but no efforts of scouts or soldiers to seize him proved successful. He was finally written to as by accomplices to the effect that two fine horses were at a certain place, which he could carry off. He went as suggested, in January, 1782, and was shot dead in the vicinity of Woodbridge, by the party who set the trap.

COOKE, REV. SAMUEL, D.D. He was an Episcopal minister, and was educated in England. He came to America as a missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, in 1749. In 1765, he had the care of the churches at Shrewsbury, Freehold and Middletown, in Monmouth County, New Jersey. The Revolution divided and dispersed his flock, and he became chaplain of the Guards, stationed on Staten Island. He made many warm friends among the people here. In 1785, he settled at Fredericton, New Brunswick, as first rector of the church there. In 1791 he was appointed commissary to the Bishop of Nova Scotia. He was drowned while attempting to cross the river St. John in a canoe in 1795. His son attempted to save his father's life, but lost his own also. His wife was Miss Kearney, of Perth Amboy.

CONNER, RALPH. A private in the Staten Island Militia and served as sentry on the Jersey Prison Ship. After the war he went to Newfoundland, and died of old age about 1830.

CORSON, ENOCH. He lived near the Narrows, and was a sergeant in Captain Jones' company of Staten Island Militia. At the conclusion of the war he went to St. John, New Brunswick, and later returned to Staten Island, where he died in 1799.

CORTELYON, AARON. He was one of the Fifty-five who petitioned Sir Guy Carleton for grants of land in Nova Scotia, and removed there in 1783. We are inclined to believe that this was not the Aaron Cortelyon who figured so prominently in the affairs of the Island prior to and during the Revolution. If it was, he must have returned to Staten Island and spent the remainder of his life here.

CROCHERON, ANN. This woman was one of the most noted Loyalists on Staten Island. It is said that she was both beautiful and fascinating, and became an expert agent for the British. She was for a long time admitted everywhere without suspicion, and it was on her information and advice that Sir William Howe and Sir Henry Clinton held more than one council of war in the old Rose and Crown. She was admitted at headquarters, it is related, without being challenged by the guard, her visits being generally at nighttime. She

became a particular friend of Margaret Moneriette, while that remarkable girl stopped in the old Fountain homestead, near the Black Horse Tavern. Ann Crocheron's "refined duplicity" led to the capture of a number of Continental officers whom she enticed to her home, and pretended to be frightened and heartbroken when they were arrested and carried away by the British. It is said that she was to have been married to a British officer, who returned to Staten Island from Yorktown, after the surrender, to make her his wife. He followed her to the grave instead.

CUNNINGHAM, JAMES. He resided on Staten Island "at the Narrows" before the war, and served as a pilot to the fleet under Lord Howe. He went to England and died there in 1784.

DECKER, ISAAC. He was a native of Northfield, and the house in which he lived during the early part of the war stood on the site of the St. James Hotel in Port Richmond. He was a valuable guide and spy for the British commander, and was commissioned a captain of mounted men, being attached to no particular organization. His house was burned down when Lord Stirling attacked the British here, and a stone fort was erected in its place, which was demolished when the present edifice was erected by Judge David Mersereau. Captain Decker went to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, with a portion of his family, where he was granted a town lot, and remained for a time, when he returned to Staten Island. Later he retraced his steps to his adopted home, where he died a very old man. A portion of his family remained on Staten Island, and their graves rest in the shadow of the old Dutch Reformed Church at Port Richmond. Decker claimed that his losses, in consequence of his loyalty to the Crown were fully £3,000, and gave the authorities considerable annoyance before the claim was settled.

DECKER, BENJAMIN. He was a native of Northfield. Went with his family to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, after the war.

BE BOW, JAMES. First enlisted in the Continental army on Staten Island. He suddenly changed his mind and served in the Queen's Rangers. After the war he settled in the Province of New Brunswick, and died there a few years later. His widow, Huldah, died there in 1847, aged ninety-four years.

DE LANCEY, OLIVER. He commanded De Lancey's Brigade of American Loyalists, which was practically organized on Staten Island. He had been a colonel in the French and Indian war. In 1759 he served as a member of the House of Assembly of this colony, and in the following year was appointed a member of the Council. In 1777 the Government attainted him of treason and confiscated his estate. After the war he went to England, and died in Beverley in 1785, aged eighty-six years. In the "Life of Van Schaack," his decease is mentioned thus by a fellow Loyalist: "Our old friend has at last taken his departure from Beverley, which he said should hold

his bones; he went off without a pain or struggle, his body wasted to a skeleton, his mind the same. The family, most of them, collected in town [London]. There will scarcely be a village in England without some American dust in it, I believe, by the time we all get at rest."

DONGAN, EDWARD VAUGHAN. He was the youngest son of Walter Dongan, and his birthplace was the old Dongan Manor House, which stood in West New Brighton until a comparatively recent date. He was Lieutenant-Colonel of the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, and was killed on the Morning Star Road, in Northfield, in August, 1777, in the twenty-ninth year of his age. His grave is beside Trinity Church, New York City.

DONGAN, HENRY. This officer was evidently a relative to Lieutenant-Colonel Dongan, and served as surgeon of the same battalion. His personal history is very meagre. It is believed that he came from Ireland at the commencement of hostilities and returned to his native land when they ceased. His name does not appear in any of the county records after that date. In the cemeteries of St. Andrew's P. E. Church, at Richmond; Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton, and the Moravians, at New Dorp, however, there are long-neglected graves of the Dongans—representatives of the family of the noted Governor. It may be, after all, that the name of Dr. Henry Dongan faded away on a crumbling stone that once marked one of these old graves.

DRAKE, JEREMIAH. He was an ardent Loyalist; but took no part in the Revolution. He left Staten Island in 1783, and settled in the Province of New Brunswick. He died in St. John in 1846, aged eighty years.

DUNN, JOHN. He left the United States at the close of the Revolution and was one of the founders of St. Andrew, in the Province of New Brunswick. He became Comptroller of his Majesty's customs at that port. He died there in 1829, aged eighty-six years. His wife, Elizabeth, was a Prall, and was a native of Staten Island. She died in 1835, aged seventy-three years.



THE OLD BLAKE HOMESTEAD, NEAR
NEW SPRINGVILLE; ERECTED 1668.

DU PUY, WILLIAM. During the war he refused to favor either side, but lost all his property. He joined the Loyalists, going to Nova Scotia, after the war; but returned to Staten Island in the following year. There is no trace of him after his return.

EARLE, DR. CHARLES. Prior to and during the Revolution he occupied a large stone dwelling that stood between New Dorp and Garretsons. He served as surgeon in the Second Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. After the war he went to the Province of New Brunswick,

where he took up Crown lands. In 1793, he was appointed surgeon of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, in which he served for many years. He died at a ripe old age in his adopted home.

FANNING, EDMUND. He was a son of Colonel Phineas Fanning, of Long Island, and was educated at Yale College; studied law and removed to North Carolina, where he was appointed colonel of militia in 1763; two years later he was clerk of the Supreme Court. Subsequently he was a noted man in the colony, and respectable men aver that he was "remarkable for all the vices that degrade the most abandoned and profligate minion." In 1777, he raised a battalion of Loyalists which he organized and drilled on Staten Island, which bore the name of the Associated Refugees or King's American Regiment, and of which he was Lieutenant-Colonel. To aid in the organization of this body £500 were subscribed on Staten Island; £310 in Kings County; £219 in Jamaica, and £2,000 in the City of New York. In 1782 he was in the office of the Surveyor General. He went to Nova Scotia at the close of the war, and on September 23d, 1783, was sworn in as Counsellor and Lieutenant-Governor of that Province. In 1786 he was appointed Governor of Prince Edward Island. He was appointed a Major-General in 1793, Lieutenant-General in 1799, and General in 1808. He died in London in 1818.

FORD, JOHN. The story is told of him that he was a spy and did much service for the British, in consequence of which he was given a lieutenant's commission in Skinner's Brigade. His nature was rude in the extreme. In Philadelphia, on May 3d, 1778, for "conduct unbecoming a gentleman," he was dismissed by order of General Clinton. The name appears in the County records after the war, and it is believed that he remained here until his death.

FROST, JOHN. A man by this name lived in Richmond at the commencement of the Revolution, and was probably a relative of Sheriff Thomas Frost, who suddenly turned in favor of the British. John enlisted in the Queen's Rangers, and deserted. After being away from the Island for a time he returned and joined the Hatfield band. He was here at the close of the war, but suddenly left for parts unknown. The name appears in the list of privates in the King's New Brunswick Regiment, at St. John, in 1802.

GARRISON, HARMON. He was a sergeant in the Staten Island Militia. Went to Nova Scotia in 1783, and died soon of wounds received during the war.

GUYON, PETER. A native of Westfield, Staten Island. After the war, accompanied by his family of five persons, and by one servant, he went to Shelburne, Nova Scotia. His losses, in consequence of his loyalty to the Crown, were estimated at £1,900. He was among the few who remained at Shelburne, and died there about 1825.

HAGGERTY, PATRICK. A native of Ireland, he lived on Staten Island when hostilities commenced. In 1782, he was a lieutenant

in the First Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. After the war he went to Digby, Nova Scotia, and lived a short time. He had no family.

HARRIS, RICHARD. He figured here as a prominent citizen for several years before the war. He is probably the same man who was taken in charge of by the Committee of Safety. He went to Upper Canada with Governor Simcoe, where he soon died.

HATFIELD, CORNELIUS. One of the leaders of the notorious band. He resided alternately on Staten Island and at Elizabethtown. He was a mounted captain in the Loyalists, and frequently engaged in predatory excursions, and was implicated in the murder of Ball. He went to Nova Scotia, but returned to Elizabethtown, where he was arrested, and saved from punishment by the terms of the treaty.

HATFIELD, JOHN SMITH. He was the acknowledged leader of the cruel band during its depredations on Staten Island and vicinity. His home was at Elizabethtown. He joined the Royal forces on Staten Island in 1778. One infamous act of his is well authenticated. A Tory, sent out as a spy by the British, was captured within the American lines, regularly tried by a court-martial, found guilty and executed. This act Hatfield and some other Tories declared to be an outrage, and swore to revenge it by retaliating upon one Ball, who contrary to law was in the habit of secretly supplying the British camp on Staten Island with provisions. The first time Ball came over to Staten Island, after the execution of the spy, he was seized by Hatfield, against the express orders of the British commander, and carried beyond the lines, where Hatfield hanged him with his own hands. The British commander sent a message to the American commander, disavowing the deed, and declaring that those alone who had perpetrated the deed should suffer for it. Hatfield went to Nova Scotia after the war, and in 1788 returned to the scenes of his depredations. He had been indicted by the Essex County grand jury, (in which county Elizabethtown was then located), and on his return to that city was arrested and imprisoned. A witness at the examination testified that he heard Hatfield say that "he hanged Ball, and wished he had many more rebels, as he would repeat the deed with pleasure"; and he also testified that Hatfield had shown him the tree on which he suspended Ball and the place where he buried his victim. While Hatfield was in jail his careless habits almost cost him his life. He was put on trial; but no witness appeared against him, and he was released from prison on bail, when he immediately fled and never returned. This case formed a subject of inquiry and comment, in the correspondence between Mr. Jefferson, Secretary of State, and Mr. Hammond, the British Minister, in 1792, the latter adducing the proceedings against Hatfield as one of the alleged infractions of the treaty of peace.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

THE AMERICAN LOYALISTS—CONCLUDED.



MILLYERD, ASHER. He was a contractor for the British army, and furnished provisions for the troops. He was not a partisan; but as his home happened to be on Staten Island he cast his lot with the Royal cause. The result of the war, however, made the Island an unpleasant place for him to live, and he joined the Loyalists and embarked for Nova Scotia. Soon becoming dissatisfied because of the hardships he had to endure, he attempted to retrace his steps without taking up land from the Crown; but what became of him is not known.

HOUSMAN, GARRET. Resided in Northfield for many years prior to the war; first enlisted in a company designed for the Continental army, but shifted to Colonel Billopp's Staten Island Militia on the arrival of General Howe. He was captured by the Americans, but managed to escape. For a time he aided the Hatfield band in committing depredations. He went to England at the close of the war, and from thence to Upper Canada, where he was murdered by an Indian. While living on Staten Island it is said he was an indolent fellow, and others who bore his name discredited relationship with him. At the time of his death he was making arrangements to return to Staten Island.

HAYCOCK, MORRIS. Born near Willow Brook, Staten Island, in 1755. He enlisted in the Queen's Rangers and became a sergeant. We find him a prisoner of war, at Trenton, New Jersey, in 1779. He was at the surrender of Cornwallis, at Yorktown, Virginia, and went to the Province of New Brunswick, in 1783, with the remnant of his regiment, where he was mustered out. He settled in Sunbury County, in that Province, and was one of the founders of a Church of England parish there. For several years he served as adjutant of the militia regiment of Sunbury County. He was an educated man and became a very useful citizen of his adopted country. He removed to Brier Island about 1799, where he died a few years later. Brier Island is located at the entrance of the Bay of Fundy, in the Province of Nova Scotia, and is an important fishing community. Sergeant Haycock's descendants now reside on that island, where they are fishermen and mariners, and are a hardy and courageous people. The family name has become extinct on Staten Island.

HOUSMAN, GEORGE. Lived at Holland's Hook, and served as a

drummer in a Loyalist regiment. He went to England after the war and served in the British army.

HOUSMAN, JOSEPH. Lived in the Watchogue neighborhood in Northfield, where he was born. Served as orderly to Sir William Howe for a time. He was also guide for some of the British officers during the early part of the occupancy of Staten Island by the enemy. He was captured during General Sullivan's raid, and left behind because of his severe wounds. Nearer dead than alive he was taken to St. Andrew's church, in Richmond, then occupied as a British hospital, where after a time he recovered sufficiently to serve in the army again. This time he was in Captain Shank's company in the Queen's Rangers, and he was with that command at the surrender of Yorktown. He came back to Staten Island on parole; but, becoming involved in a quarrel with a neighbor on account of his attitude in the war, left suddenly for a more congenial place. He went to York, [Toronto], as soon as his old commander, Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe, took charge of affairs as Governor. There is no positive trace of him after that. From time to time the Loyalists returned to their old homes, and as mention is made of Joseph Housman in our county



MARINE HOSPITAL (FORMERLY SEAMEN'S RETREAT), STAPLETON.

affairs a few years later, we take it for granted that he was permitted to take up his abode again amid the scenes of his early life.

INSLEY, CHRISTOPHER. There was a family by this name in Northfield, and we believe this man belonged to it. He enlisted with the Fifth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, but his name disappears in 1778. Among the names of those who went to Upper Canada at the close of the war is that of Christopher Insley.

INSLEY, OZIAS. He resided near Holland's Hook several years prior to the war, but left here when hostilities began. On August 25th, 1780, he appears as an ensign in the First Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, and was afterward promoted to adjutant. He left for Nova Scotia after the declaration of peace; but returned to Staten Island

a few years later, where he died about 1809. His grave was in the old Dutch graveyard at Richmond.

JARVIS, WILLIAM. A cavalry officer in the Queen's Rangers. He was wounded at Yorktown and conveyed to Staten Island, where his wife made her home. After the war he removed to Upper Canada and became Secretary of that Province. He died in York in 1817. His widow spent some time on Staten Island; but died in Upper Canada in 1845.

JONES, ABRAHAM. This gentleman came from an old Welsh family, who were among the original purchasers of land from Governor Dongan on Staten Island. His residence was in a stone house that stood on Richmond avenue, about a quarter of a mile south of New Springville; but now the site of a square, wooden building, built about fifty years ago by Dr. O'Neil, of Brooklyn, and afterwards purchased by Mr. Louis H. Foster. When Captain Jones left the old house it became the residence of Captain Nathaniel Robbins, a member of the Hattfield band, who became notorious for his brutality. Captain Jones commanded a company in Billopp's Battalion of Staten Island Militia, and was a most ardent Loyalist. In 1777, he was elected a Member of Assembly; but was not allowed to take his seat on account of his undisguised sympathy with the British. One night during the war a party of Americans, who had resolved to attempt his capture, crossed the Sound, and made their way, undiscovered, to his home. Rapping loudly at the door, they awakened the captain, who raised the window and inquired what they wanted. "Captain Jones," replied one of them; "hurry down; the rebels are coming, and making for this house." Hastily dressing himself, he came out of the door and inquired where the rebels were. "Here," said the first speaker; "here we are, and you must go with us." He had fallen into the trap prepared for him, and was carried to Trenton, New Jersey, and detained in prison for some time. Captain Jones's social and military position made him the intimate friend of Generals Howe, Clinton, Knyphausen and Carleton, and other royal officers, while on Staten Island. At the close of the war, there is every reason to believe that he took the oath of allegiance to the new government, and thus saved his valuable estates, for none of them were confiscated. After the exodus of Loyalists, however, Captain Jones went to Nova Scotia, where he remained but a short time. On his homeward voyage he became very ill, and died on board his ship, and was buried at sea. A more extended account of Captain Jones and his family will appear in the second volume of this work.

LATOURETTE, RICHARD. While this man may have been related to the numerous family by that name on Staten Island, he seems to have left no record sufficient to identify and locate him. There was, however, a Richard Latourette who served in Captain Alston's com-

pany of Staten Island Militia during the early part of the Revolution, and went to Upper Canada at its close. Whether he remained there or returned to the Island afterwards is unknown. The Latonrettes are an old Huguenot family and each generation has been sure to have its Richards.

LAKEMAN, WILLIAM. It is said of this man that "he served his king loyally, and counselled his neighbors on Staten Island to do likewise." He was a lieutenant in an independent company whose commandant had a roving commission. At times he was attached to Billopp's Battalion of Staten Island Militia. It is known that he left the Island at the close of the war; but where he located remains a mystery. In the muster roll of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, appears the name of William Lakeman, in 1802. We believe this is the Staten Island Loyalist.

LAWRENCE, RICHARD. He was an old resident of Staten Island. In 1776, Sir William Howe appointed him Master Carpenter of the Royal shipyards on the Island, and gave him orders to seize vessels, timber, and naval stores owned by the rebels. He appears to have obeyed with a will. In 1786, he was arrested and tried, at the suit of several persons whose property he had taken during the war. Jonathan Morrill recovered judgment for £230; John Brown, for £280; and Samuel Brown, for £425. Lawrence, from jail in the City of New York, prayed the interposition of John Temple, the British Consul, who communicated with John Jay, Secretary of Foreign Affairs, and the case was submitted to Congress. The point in the discussion that followed was whether the luckless master-carpenter plead the sixth article of the Treaty of Peace, at the trial of the suits. He averred that he did. Mr. Jay, who examined the records of the Court, declared that he did not. The last state paper on the subject was in 1788, and informed the British Minister for Foreign Affairs that the judgments must stand until legally reversed in the ordinary course of judicial proceedings. Lawrence lived for a number of years after that on Staten Island.

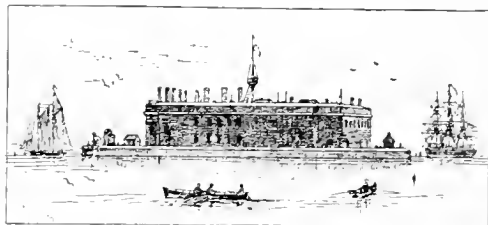
LISK, JOHN. He was a native of Northfield, and belonged to Captain Abraham Jones' company of Staten Island Militia. He was wounded and captured in Stirling's raid. At the close of the war he went with Colonel Billopp to Nova Scotia; but nothing further is heard from him.

LONGSTREET, JOHN. There was an ardent loyalist by this name on Staten Island at the commencement of the Revolution, whose boldness attracted considerable attention. What became of him is not positively known. General Stryker, in his History of the New Jersey Volunteers, (Skinner's Brigade), says: "John Longstreet was a captain in the First Battalion the first year of the war; but was captured on Staten Island and confined in the goal at Trenton, New Jersey. He never returned to the service." There was a Longstreet con-

nected with the Hatfield band, who disappeared mysteriously shortly after the close of the war, and we are inclined to believe that he is the one who served in Skinner's Brigade.

MACCOY, ROBERT. He was of Scotch parentage and was born in South Carolina. After the death of his parents he ran away from his guardian and went to sea, and was wrecked near the Bermuda Islands. Boarding a north-bound ship, he hoped to get back home again; but was wrecked a second time off Sandy Hook. He was the only survivor of the crew, and was washed ashore, nearer dead than alive. He was cared for by some fishermen, and when he had recovered came to Staten Island, about 1765, where he worked among the farmers until the outbreak of the Revolution. He was a daring fellow, and was generally respected by the people of the Island. Cornelius Hatfield gained his confidence, and enticed him to join his gang of bandits. MacCoy soon became one of the most wicked and desperate members of the band, and his outrages were of the most fiendish character. In one of his exploits it is said of him that he entered a house near Holland's Hook, and meeting a woman at the door demanded that her husband should immediately appear and give him some money, which he claimed to know was in his possession. His request was refused, and MacCoy took a sleeping babe from the cradle and placed it on a red-hot stove to punish the mother. When she interfered he knocked her down. Finding that he could not accomplish his desire, he killed both the woman and her babe and departed. The matter was brought to the notice of Sir Henry Clinton; but it could not be solved until nearly a year later, when MacCoy became drunk and quarreled with the husband of the murdered woman, on whom he swore to wreak vengeance similar to that which had befallen his wife. Sir Guy Carleton's attention was then called to the matter, and he ordered an investigation; but the Hatfields succeeded in getting MacCoy away from the Island. MacCoy was with one of the Loyalist organizations at the surrender of Cornwallis, and went to England. A few years later he returned to America and came back to Staten Island, when he attempted to explain away his awful crime. Arrangements were made to lynch him; but a friend informed him of his probable fate, and he immediately departed, just an hour before the "vigilants" reached his stopping place, with rope and guns. He was next heard of as one of the survivors of a wreck off the coast of Newfoundland. Two years later he came back to Staten Island, and disguised himself so effectively that he was not recognized by his most intimate acquaintances. The murder of the woman and babe evidently troubled him greatly, in his latter days, and after becoming the warm friend of the husband, who had become an invalid, he gave him a home for years. His identity was unknown until one day an accident occurred and he was killed. He was thrown from his horse near the Egbertville ravine and his neck was broken.

MONCRIEFFE, JAMES. Lieutenant-Colonel of Engineers in the British army. Like several other British officers at the Revolutionary period, in consequence of having resided in New York for a long time, had become closely attached to this country; and as he was the uncle of General Montgomery and the brother-in-law of both John Jay and Governor Livingston, the Continental leaders entertained the hope that he would espouse the American side. It is stated that the command of the army for the invasion of Canada, subsequently led by his nephew, was offered to him. He adhered to the Crown, and in 1776 was with Lord Percy on Staten Island; consequently we have the natural right to believe that a portion of the innumerable forts erected on the Island during that year were constructed under his supervision. In 1778, he was taken prisoner at Flatbush, Long Island, by a party who went from the Jersey shore in boats expressly to seize him and some other persons of note. The house was surrounded, resistance was vain, and he submitted. In the war in the South he performed the most valuable services to the Royal cause in his particular department. In the saving of Savannah, he was indeed the efficient instrument. General Prevost, in an official dispatch, thus wrote:



FORT LAFAYETTE IN 1861.

"I would mention Captain Moncrieffe, commanding engineer; but sincerely sensible that all I can express will fall greatly short of what that gentleman deserves, not only on this, but on all other occasions, I shall only, in the most earnest manner, request your Lordship taking him into your protection and patronage, to recommend him to his Majesty as an officer of long service and most singular merit; assuring you, my Lord, from my own private knowledge, that there is not one officer or soldier in this little army, capable of reflecting or judging, who will not regard, as personal to himself, any mark of Royal favor graciously conferred through your Lordship upon Captain Moncrieffe."

This unqualified testimonial was not without results, since he "received a very generous donation from his Royal master," and on the 27th of September, 1780, was commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel. Moncrieffe planned the works at Charleston, in the siege of the year just mentioned, and was warmly commended by Sir Henry Clinton for his skill and general good conduct. But at the evacuation he seems to have been guilty of an act which greatly tarnished his military reputation. According to Ramsay, upwards of eight hundred slaves, who had been employed by Colonel Moncrieffe as engineer, were shipped off to the West Indies, as was said and believed, by his

direction and for his personal benefit. Colonel Moneriette died in New York in 1791, and was buried in Trinity Church Yard. He was the father of Margaret Moneriette, who became the wife of Captain Coghlan.

MOORE, DAVID. He was a native of the north of Ireland; he owned and worked a blacksmith shop at Richmond for years before the war; was a sergeant in the Staten Island Militia. He was a most ardent Loyalist, became involved in a quarrel with a neighbor, whom he wounded. Then escaping from the Island, he went to England, where he entered the regular army.

MUNDY, NATHANIEL. It is thought that he was a native of Staten Island. In 1782 he was an officer in the Queen's Rangers. He went to the Province of New Brunswick at the end of the war, and removed to Upper Canada later, where he died.

NICHOLSON, ARTHUR. This is the young officer who, it is said, fought a duel near the deep ravine facing Garretsons, during the war. His antagonist was so badly wounded that he died in the course of a few days. The encounter was the result of a romance. The two officers had sought the hand of a Staten Island girl, who was so shocked at the news of the encounter that she died. Nicholson was born in the town of Sligo, County of Leitrim, Ireland, in 1746, and was appointed cornet in the Seventeenth Light Dragoons—now the Seventeenth Lancers—while that regiment was serving in Ireland. On the breaking out of hostilities in 1775, the high character of that regiment occasioned it to be the first cavalry corps selected to proceed across the Atlantic. It embarked from Ireland, and landed at Boston on the 24th of May, 1775. During the engagement at Bunker Hill a party of the Seventeenth volunteered to proceed dismounted with the re-inforcements sent from Boston to support the troops engaged. Lieutenant Nicholson, who was adjutant of the regiment, accompanied the party, and became a participant in that battle. In March, 1776, the British army evacuated Boston, and sailed for Halifax, Nova Scotia, where the Seventeenth landed and remained about two months. In the early part of June they embarked again and landed on Staten Island, and were actively engaged in all the important movements around New York. At one time the Seventeenth was encamped for a time at Marshland, near the entrance to the Fresh Kill bridge. It was also General Clinton's body guard at New Dorp. The Seventeenth Dragoons was the only British regular cavalry regiment that served in America during the Revolution. It was largely composed of Irishmen, and the arduous services in which it was constantly employed, rapidly depleted its ranks. In 1781, Lieutenant Nicholson was transferred from the Seventeenth to the King's American Dragoons, and became the adjutant. This regiment was encamped near the present Oakwood station, and its headquarters were in the old Brittain homestead, recent-

ly demolished. With this regiment he served until the termination of the war, and in 1783, went to the Province of New Brunswick, where the regiment was disbanded. A large block of land was granted to the officers and men, upon which many of them settled. It is known as the grant to the "King's American Dragoons," and is located on the River St. John, about twenty miles from Fredericton. Lieutenant Nicholson settled at Kingsclear, York County. In 1786, his wife, Ellen Henry, whom he married at Southampton, Long Island, died at Kingsclear. There are many stories told of this officer while on Staten Island.

MANEE, ABRAHAM. He resided in Westfield, but does not appear to have been a land owner. He served in Captain Jones's company of Staten Island Militia, and, after the war, went to Nova Scotia, thence to St. John, New Brunswick, where we lose all trace of him.

MANEE, DAVID. Lived near Fresh Kill and was in the employ of the British Government throughout the war. He went to Canada; but what part is not known.

MANEE, WILLIAM. He served in Captain Jones's company of Staten Island Militia. It is believed that he was lost at sea on the way to Nova Scotia. He was a man highly respected by his neighbors.

MCGILL, JOHN. Had resided on Staten Island previous to the Revolution. In 1782 he was an officer in the infantry of the Queen's Rangers, and at the close of the war he went to the Province of New Brunswick. He soon removed to Upper Canada and became a person of note. He died at Toronto in 1834, aged eighty-three years. At the time of his death he was a member of the Legislative Council of the Colony.

PACKARD, BENJAMIN. He was the last survivor of "Butler's Rangers," which became famous while on and around Staten Island. It was composed exclusively of Loyalists. Packard removed to Canada after the war, and died there in 1857, aged one hundred and one years.

PHAIR, WILLIAM BARRY. He was born on Staten Island March 17th, 1783, and was the eldest child of Andrew Phair, adjutant of the American Legion—an organization raised by Benedict Arnold in 1781. Adjutant Phair went to the Province of New Brunswick, with the Legion, in 1783, and settled at Fredericton, where his son was educated. When the son grew to manhood he was appointed an ensign in the King's New Brunswick Regiment, and remained with it until it disbanded in 1802. On the renewal of the war with France, in 1803, he entered the New Brunswick Fencible Regiment, which was consolidated with the One Hundred and Fourth Regiment of the Line in 1811, and was promoted to lieutenant. He was with his regiment when it made the memorable overland march from Fredericton to Quebec, during the winter of 1812-'13. He retired in 1816, and settled

in Kingsclear, York County. In 1825, he was appointed Postmaster of Fredericton, which office he held until a few days before his death, which occurred on March 12th, 1853.

POILLON, OSCAR. He resided near the shore below Giffords; served in Captain Jones' company of Staten Island Militia. He went to Nova Scotia at the close of the war, and from thence to Montreal, where he died, near the close of the century.

POWELL, ENOCH. He was a pilot for the British in Staten Island waters, and went to England after the war.

PURCELL, JOHN. This name existed on Staten Island prior to the Revolution; but we fail to find it among the records immediately after it. It is probable that those who bore it went with the Loyalists to the various parts of Canada. We find the name in the muster roll of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, at St. John, in 1802.

RANDALL, BORNT G. He lived in a stone house that stood until recently on the Fresh Kill road, a half-mile or so west of Richmond. He served in Captain Alston's company in the Third Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. He was one of the men detailed to burn the Court House and Dutch Reformed Church, in Richmond, at the time General Sullivan was expected to raid the County Seat. For his services, or for some similar fiendishness, Randall was promoted to a lieutenant, and served under Captain Stewart on the gunboat which belonged to the county. He volunteered to serve as a spy and pretended to desert, so that he could enlist in the Continental army at Elizabethtown; but, being preceded by an honest deserter, his plans were all made known prior to his arrival. He was arrested, on stepping ashore at Elizabethtown, but his fate is unknown. The brown headstones that used to stand in Richmond, on the knoll near the Court House, were one by one carried away, until all are gone. One of the last to disappear bore this inscription: "Sacred to ye memory of Bornt G. Randall, a soldier in his Majesty's army, who served his king faithfully on two continents. Deceas'd ye 22d July, 1789: Æ 77 y'rs, 2 mos." The name of Randall was not uncommon on Staten Island in those days. We take it for granted that this stone marked the grave of Lieutenant Randall, of the county gunboat.

ROBBINS, JOHN. This man is generally believed to have been a brother to the infamous Nathaniel Robbins of the Hatfield band, and to have rendered service with those enemies of the American cause. General Stryker says: "John Robbins was an ensign in the First Battalion of Skinner's Brigade in 1777 and 1778, and was captured on Staten Island August 22d, 1777. He was found in Trenton goal some time after the event." There was a John Robbins, a Loyalist, who died in Quebec in 1816.

RYERSS, DANIEL G. He was as neutral as circumstances would permit during the war; but fearing persecution, went to Upper Canada when peace was declared. He died in Toronto in 1814.

RYERSON, MARTIN. There was a lieutenant by this name in the Fourth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. The name also appears in county records prior to the Revolution. It is difficult, however, to connect the two. The name of Ryerson was well represented in the old Dutch graveyard at Richmond.

SAYRE, JAMES. On June 10th, 1783, Mr. Sayre was appointed chaplain of the Second Battalion of Skinner's Brigade. He was the rector of an Episcopal Church in Brooklyn, and also attended to his duties with the battalion on Staten Island. He officiated on various occasions in St. Andrew's Church, at Richmond, which was the only church edifice on Staten Island in which services were held regularly throughout the war. Some time after peace was established, Mr. Sayre removed to St. John, New Brunswick, was a grantee of that city, and then accepted a charge at Newport, Rhode Island. He died at Fairfield, Connecticut, in 1798, aged fifty-three years.

SEAMAN, BENJAMIN. He belonged to an old Staten Island family,



PAVILION HOTEL AS IT APPEARED IN 1830.

and his residence stood until recently near the Westfield entrance to the Fresh Kill bridge. Sabine says of him: "His property was confiscated. In 1774, this gentleman seems to have been moderate in his course, and perhaps feared the popular movements. Such inference I draw from a communication to the Committee of Correspondence of Connecticut, which bears his signature, and in which it is said that 'at this alarming juncture, a general congress of deputies from the several colonies would be a very expedient and salutary measure.'" In July, 1783, he announced his intention to remove to Nova Scotia, and was one of the Fifty-five petitioners for grants of land in that colony. In a Loyalist tract, published at London in 1784, we find it said that he sold his estate at a great price before the evacuation of New York. He may have sold a portion of it; but it is certain that a considerable was confiscated by the Government. He was the father-in-law of Colonel Christopher Billopp, and his remains were interred in the same grave yard with those of Colonel Billopp in St.

John, New Brunswick. He was the last colonial judge of Richmond County.

SEAMANS, THOMAS. Probably this name is spelled incorrectly. The Seaman family was large and influential for many years before the war. Thomas was no doubt a relative to Judge Benjamin Seaman, and like that gentleman, went to Nova Scotia at the end of the war. What became of him is not known.

SEATON, WILLIAM. He was a frequent visitor to Staten Island during the Revolution. Major André and he became personal friends. André wrote his will on Staten Island, on June 7th, 1777, at Richmond. There were no witnesses to it, and it could not be probated; but on October 9th, 1780, Mr. Seaton appeared before the surrogate of New York, and declared that, being well acquainted with André's writing, he believed the instrument to be genuine. In 1782, Seaton was Notary Public and Secretary to the Superintendent of Police in the City of New York. He went to England at the close of the war, and after some years returned to New York.

SKINNER, CORTLANDT. He was one of the most prominent characters on Staten Island during the Revolution, in consequence of his position as commandant of the brigade of Loyalists which bore his name. He was the last Attorney-General of New Jersey, and was an aristocrat of the most pronounced type. He occupied the cozy old Pelton homestead, at the Cove, West New Brighton, as his headquarters, a portion of the time during the Revolution. One of the popular errors which it becomes the duty of the writer to correct, is that "Lord Stirling shot General Skinner at the Cove, and that he died in the hall of the Pelton house." There is no record that General Skinner personally was ever under fire once doing the war. He lived, however, until 1799, and died in England, aged seventy-one years. His mother, and the mother of General Oliver De Lancey were sisters, and were the daughters of Stephen Van Cortlandt. General Skinner's widow died at Belyoir Park, near Belfast, Ireland, in 1810.

SKINNER, PHILIP KEARNEY. Although a resident of Perth Amboy, he became prominently identified with Staten Island before the Revolution. His exploits here during the war were numerous. He was a son of General Cortlandt Skinner, and was commissioned by his father an ensign in the Fourth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, November 10th, 1781. He was, after the war, placed in the British line—the Twenty-third Regiment of Foot—and after various promotions he became, in 1825, a Lieutenant-General in the British army. In the following year, on April 9th, 1826, he died in London.

SIMONSON, JOHN. He was born near Long Neck, [New Springville], Staten Island, and was one of the native troops who first espoused the Continental cause; but, on the arrival of the nicely-uniformed soldiers of the King, with many others suddenly changed his mind and joined the Loyalists. He was a private at first, and was promoted to ser-

geant for his endeavors to capture Colonel Mersereau. In 1777 and '78 he served as ensign [second lieutenant] in the Fourth Battalion of Skinner's Brigade, and on August 25th, 1780, he was commissioned [first] lieutenant in the Third Battalion, in which he continued to serve to the close of the war. He went to the Province of New Brunswick in 1783, with the Loyalists, and settled at Mangerville, Sunbury County, and received a grant of land. In 1793, he was appointed a lieutenant in the King's New Brunswick Regiment, and on May 1st, 1800, he retired on half pay. On retiring from the service he made his home again in Mangerville, where he died on December 22d, 1816.¹ John Simonson's eldest son, John Ness, was born at Fort Howe, February 11th, 1799, and baptized by the Rev. John Beardsley, chaplain of the garrison. His wife, Ann, died at Jacksonville, Carleton County, New Brunswick, in 1850.

SPRAGG, THOMAS. He was an officer in the Royal service, and went to St. John, New Brunswick, at the close of the war and was a grantee of that city. He died at Springfield, Kings County, in 1812. There was a Thomas Spragg in the Staten Island Militia, and it is probable that this is the same man.

VAN BUSKIRK, ABRAHAM. He came from New Jersey, and was a captain in the King's Orange Rangers; he was the son of Lawrence Van Buskirk. He embarked at New York for Nova Scotia in 1783, and perished at sea, at about the age of thirty-three. His wife was Ann Corson, or Corson, who subsequently married Jacob Remsen, and a second time a widow, Lewis Ryas, [probably Ryerss]. She inherited a large and valuable estate near Port Richmond, which was partially wasted by her second husband. She was a woman of good education, address and manners. She died, childless, on Staten Island, in 1825.

VAN PELT, SARAH. Sabine says "she went to St. John after the peace." There is a tradition that a number of women, probably widows, left Staten Island independently at the close of the war. As Van Pelt was a prominent name on Staten Island even at that time, it stands to reason that this woman had resided here.

WOGLUM, ABRAHAM. He was a native of Northfield, and belonged to Captain Jones' company of Staten Island Militia. He was wounded and captured in Stirling's raid. He went with Colonel Billopp to Nova Scotia, and nothing further is heard of him.

WYNANT, ABRAHAM. He was a native of Staten Island. He was imprisoned by the Continental Congress at Philadelphia and Baltimore, in 1776. When relieved he returned to Staten Island. His course thereafter is not known.

¹ Married, on Saturday evening, March 31st, Lieutenant Simonson, of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, to Miss Ann Ness,

daughter of Lieutenant John Ness, of the same regiment.—*St. John Gazette and Weekly Advertiser*, April 6, 1798.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES.



THE resident of Staten Island to-day cannot easily imagine the topographical appearance of the place a century or more ago, and but few indeed are familiar with most of the old names and nicknames that were then in use.

As the population of Staten Island increases the names of its natural features give place more and more to artificial ones; the hills are dug away and avenues laid out across the swamps. It becomes expedient, therefore, to preserve the old, so that even the ever changing maps, that also fall within the laws of evolution, cannot make us forget Duxbury's Point or the Watering Place.

The object of this and following chapters is to record these local Staten Island names—the forgotten names that were once well known, and the nicknames that have from time to time been bestowed on certain streets, hills and hollows. From the days of the Dutch colonists through the times of the British governors and the present rule of the States, about two hundred and fifty years in all, people have been giving names to various parts of the Island. A few of these, from their peculiar fitness, have survived, but many more have been forgotten; or, worst of all, abandoned for less appropriate ones. The old roads are interesting in many ways, and at least an effort should be made to preserve their original names. They can often be identified without the aid of the first maps of the Island, or the Dutch stone houses that were built along them, for they are worn down until they are lower than the fields, or the bases of the stone walls built along their sides.

The meadows are often regarded in the sense of water—a sea of grass—by those who live near them, and if there is a rise of land in the midst of this grass it is called an island. As examples of this kind we have Price's Island, Lake's Island and Poppy Joe's Island.

On the best maps of Staten Island only three or four of the creeks are named, and these often erroneously. Many of the small creeks have no names, but are called "little guts" by fishermen and other frequenters of the meadow lands and shore.

In the following pages the "Land Papers" are often mentioned. The book quoted from is the "Calendar of N. Y. Colonial Manuscripts, indorsed Land Papers; in the Office of the Secretary of State of New York, 1643-1803." It will be seen from a perusal of this volume that

the land on Karle's Neck and on Long Neck was in great demand in 1675 and later, and on one of the oldest maps, published in 1781, the words "well settled" are placed across that portion of the Island. Some names have also been collected from the following maps:

"Map of New Netherlands, with a view of New Amsterdam (now New York), A. D. 1656," by A. Vander Donck. Reprinted in Valentine's Manual, 1852.

"A Draft of New York from the Hook to New York Town, by Mark Tiddeman. Printed for W. Mount and T. Page, upon Tower Hill, London." The original is not dated, but was probably published

early in the eighteenth century. A reprint is given in Valentine's Manual for 1855.

"Bay and Port of New York, Capitol of New York," executed by S. Bellin in 1764 and reprinted in Valentine's Manual for 1861.

"Plan of New York Island, with a part of Long Island, Staten Island, and East New Jersey; with a particular description of the engagement on



PAVILION HOTEL, NEW BRIGHTON, AS IT APPEARS TO-DAY.

the Woody Heights of Long Island between Flatbush and Brooklyn, August 27, 1776, between Gen. Howe and Gen. Putnam. Engraved and published October 19, 1776, by W. Faden, London."

"Long Island. The seat of action between the British and American forces, or an authentic plan of the western part of Long Island, with the engagement of the 27th of August, 1776; containing also Staten Island and the environs of Amboy and New York, with the course of Hudson's river from Courtland, the great magazine of the American army, to Sandy Hook. From the surveys of Major Holland. Sayer and Bennett. London, 1776."

"A sketch of the operations of His Majesty's fleet and army under the command of vice admiral the Rt. H'ble Lord Viscount Howe and Genl. Sr. Wm. Howe, K. B., in 1776. Published according to act of Parliament, Jan'y 17th, 1777, by J. F. W. DesBarres, Esq." Reprinted in Valentine's Manual, 1864.

"A Chorographical Map of the Province of New York in North America * * * by Claude Joseph Sauthier. London, W. Faden, 1779." Reprinted among the maps of the N. Y. Documentary History, Albany, 1849.

"Chart and Plan of the Harbor of New York and the country adjacent, from Sandy Hook to King's Bridge; comprehending the whole of New York and Staten Islands, and part of Long Island and the Jersey shore, and showing the defences of New York both by land and sea. London. J. Bew, 1781." This map appeared in the "Political Magazine," November, 1781, and was reprinted in the "Manual of the Common Council of New York" for 1870.

An account of the environs of New York, bearing the same title as the "Chart and Plan," reads in part as follows:

"Staten Island is in general rough and hilly, but on the south side there is a considerable tract of good level land. On the heights on the side towards New York we have redoubts usually garrisoned with 1,000 or 1,500 men. The Rebel parties frequently steal across the narrow sound which separates it from the Jersey shore, and carry off a straggler or two or plunder the inhabitants. Brigadier-General Skinner, a refugee from the Jerseys, at present commands there. The Rebel General Sullivan made an attack on it in form in 1777, but was repulsed with considerable loss by General Campbell, who was lately taken in Pensacola by the Spaniards."

In the proceedings of the Board of Supervisors, near the close of the former century we find the following:

"A New and Correct Mapp of the County of Richmond, made in the Year 1797, Agreeable to an Act passed by the Legislature of the State of New York, passed the 28th day of March, 1797, by " (no name given). "We the subscribers Supervisors for the County of Richmond have Caused this Mapp, Containing the Outline of the County of Richmond, to be Made According as the Law in such cases has decided.

JOHN TYSEN,	} Sup'r."
DANIEL LAKE,	
ABM. BURBANK,	
BENJ. LARZELERE,	

"1797, Dec. 14: Bernard Sprong for making a map of the towns of Southfield and Westfield and surveying Smoking Point Road. £6. 6. 0.

"Richard Conner for making a map of Castleton and Northfield and service of Clerk of Supervisors. £7. 2. 0."

Various other maps, together with histories and papers, have been consulted in the preparation of this valuable material. Individuals, too, almost without number have been called upon and their assistance secured.

MO-TA-NUCKE, MO-NOCK-NONG, AQUE-HON-GA, EGH-QUA-
OVS. "Early names of Staten Island, the last two meaning, High Sandy Banks." Indian names in New York, by W. M. Beauchamp. "Schoolcraft interprets 'Aquehonga Manacknong,' as far as the place of bad woods. The meaning of 'Eghqualous' is also interpreted the place of bad woods." Bayles, p. 1. Clute, p. 8. "Sujnen" is given as a name for Staten Island in Valentine's Manual, 1852, p. 401.

STAATEN EYLANT. The name given to the Island by Henry Hudson. Clute, p. 8.

GROOTE RIVER, MANHATTENS RIVER, MONTAIGNE RIVER, NOORT RIVER, MAURITS OR MAURITSE RIVER. Early

names for the North or Hudson River. Bayles, p. 46; Old map copied in D. T. Valentine's Manual, 1852. The early navigators considered the mouth of the river to be at the Narrows. The town of Castleton when laid out, was bounded "easterly by Hudson's River." Bayles, p. 326.

SAND BAY. Near the Fort at the Narrows. "Warrant to the attorney general to prepare letters patent for John Belue and John Dove of Staten Island, to keep a ferry at a place called the Sand Bay to run from thence to New York, Long Island and other adjacent places." Land Papers, 1731. (See Dove and Belue's Ferry.)

COEURAET'S BAY, PORT MAY OR GODYN'S BAY. What is now known as the Lower Bay. Bayles, p. 47.

PRINCE'S BAY. On Faden's map, 1779. On map, 1797, and later maps. The name is given "Princess Bay" on chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, and on the map in Bayles' History, which was copied therefrom.

RARITAN BAY. At the mouth of Raritan River. Chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Map in Bayles' History.

ACHTER CULL. Corrupted into Arthur Kill. Same as Staten Island Sound. Clute, pp. 16, 234. Bayles, p. 3. A report of the speech of Pennekek, Sachem in Achter Col (Elizabethtown) is given in Valentine's Manual for 1863. This Pennekek seems to have been a most important Indian and often figures in the treaties made from 1649 to 1655.

HET KILL VAN HET CULL. Old Dutch name for the Kill van Kull, meaning the stream of the bay. Bayles, p. 3. "River Kill Van Kull" is shown on map New Brighton Association, Surveyed 1835, filed 1836, No. 12. Also called "River Kill Van Kull" in the *Staaten Islander*, February 22, 1854.

DUXBURY'S POINT. Where the present ferry house is located at St. George. Faden, 1776 and 1779. Bew, 1781. Bayles, p. 395. Clute, p. 461. Abstract of Title, Thos. E. Davis, 1834, pp. 11, 44. Faden and Bew call it "Ducksbury Point."

BRIGHTON POINT. Same as Duxbury's Point.

VANDERVENTER'S POINT. Located at or just outside of the Narrows. Faden, 1776 and 1779. Clute, p. 229.

EAGLE'S NEST POINT. In an indenture dated February 3rd, 1756, "Between Jacob Bergen of Old Town, Husbandman, Johannes Van Wagenen, Wheel-wright, Cornelius Kroesen and Daniel Corson Esq all of Staten Island in this County of Richmond and in the Colony of New York, Surviving Executors of the last Will and Testament of Jacob Bergen late of Staten Island aforesaid in the sd County of Richmond, Gentleman Deceased, of the one Part and Capt. John Keteltas of the City of New York Merchant, of the other Part," occurs the following: "And also a little Lot of Salt Meadow at Eagle's Nest Point on the West Side of Peter Nowec's Land, to the said Lott of

Land belonging or appertaining, which said Premises was formerly conveyed by the said Mary Brittain to her son Nathaniel Brittain, as by an Instrument in Writing under the hand and Seal of the said Mary Brittain unto him the sd Nathaniel Brittain, Dated the 23 Day of Feby Anno Dom. 1685-6. Reference being thereunto had may more fully and at large appear." The land belonging to Peter Nowee's or Peter New, as he was often called, was just west of the southerly reach of the Old Town Road after leaving the present Richmond Ave. This would fix the location of Eagle's Nest Point on the edge of the meadows below Linden Park and near Old Town or Pole Creek. The eagle's nest was no doubt built by a fish hawk or sea eagle.

GREAT KILL POINT. At Giffords. Once called Brown's Point and now often spoken of as Crooke's Point. Jos. Brown is given as a resident by Dripps, 1850. On map, 1797, it is mentioned as a "Beach of Sand."

FOUNTAIN'S POINT. In Great Kill. Immediately west of the mouth of Lockman's Creek. (See Lockman's Creek.)

LONG POINT. In Great Kill. West of Fountain's Point and immediately west of the mouth of Duck Creek. (See Duck Creek.)

CANAVELLO'S POINT. In Great Kill. West of Long Point. Named after C. A. Canavello.

MONEE'S POINT. On Smith's map of 1836 this name is placed opposite the shore lying between Arbutus Lake and Seguin's Pond. On the very small map of the Island, published by Eddy, 1812, the name is also given. It is probably a corruption of the family name of Mance.

SEGUINE'S POINT. The first point to the east of Prince's Bay.

WARD'S POINT. Near Tottenville. Still called by this name. On the map of 1797 the position of Caleb Ward's house is shown.

BUTLER'S POINT. An occasional name for Ward's Point; originally Billopp's Point.

BILLOPP'S POINT. At the western end of the Island. Faden, 1779. Proceedings, Natural Science Association, Vol. III, p. 54. Clute, pp. 100, 103. Bayles, p. 3.

ELLIS' POINT. First point northwest of Kreischerville.

STORER'S OR HUGHES' POINT. A short distance to the north of Ellis' Point. The line fence between the Storer and Hughes farms extends to this point. Sometimes called Story's Point.

SMOKING POINT. The first point southwest of Rossville. Land Papers, April 5th, 1681. So called on recent maps. "Smoaky Point" of Bew, 1781. " * * * a place called Smoker's point " is mentioned in Land Papers, 1702. "Daniel Perrine of Smoking Point " is mentioned in a mortgage recorded at Richmond, Liber B p. 92.

CEDAR POINT. Often mentioned in the Land Papers, of which the following is a sample: "80 acres of land lying upon the northwest

side of Staten Island, with 3 acres of meadow fronting, and 7 acres of meadow at ye west end of ye Island of meadow, against Seadar Poynte, laid out for Elias Puddington." 1676. The "Island of Meadow" lies at the mouth of Fresh Kills.

NEVER FAIL POINT. The extreme point of Karle's Neck where Main and Richmond Creeks meet. It is called Never Fail Point because the oysters planted in its vicinity are always good.



BELMONT HALL, NEW BRIGHTON, FORMERLY DUFFY'S MILITARY ACADEMY.

CEDAR BUSH POINT. On the north side of Richmond Creek and not far from Never Fail Point.

FIRST, SECOND AND THIRD POINTS, OR UNCLE IKE'S POINTS. On the north side of Richmond Creek and southeast of Cedar Bush Point.

TURTLE POINT. Not far from the site of the old Fresh Kills bridge.

POINT NO POINT. On Long Neck near Island Creek and nearly opposite the mouth of Peter's Creek. When viewed from a distance there appears to be a considerable point at this part of Main Creek, but upon a nearer approach the point is not apparent. This is due to the gradual bend of the shore, which leads the boatman in a wide curve about what is in consequence named Point No Point.

DU PUY'S POINT. The southerly point at the mouth of Peter's Creek.

LONG AND SHORT POINTS. Parts of the irregularly shaped peninsula of meadow lying between Dock and Flowk Creeks on Karle's Neck. Long Point is the farthest west.

ROBBIN'S OR WINANT'S POINT. At the mouth of Dock Creek and southeast of Freeman Winant's Swamp. Capt. Nathaniel Robbins was a notorious individual who resided many years ago in New Springville and after whom Robbins' Corner was named. He rendered considerable assistance to the British quartered on the Island during the Revolution. Clute, p. 114.

BLACK POINT. "116 acres, situated on the northwest side of Staten Island and known by the name of Black Poynt, laid out for John Tunisson, by Phillip Welles, surveyor." Land Papers, 1680. Probably near Old Place.

STEEP POINT. Projects into Staten Island Sound between Old Place Creek and Mark's Creek. Some of this point has been dug away in order to make the Sound more navigable.

LAMBERT'S, COLLYER'S OR BOWMAN'S POINT. The point of Staten Island nearest to Elizabethport, New Jersey. Called Lambert's Point during the Revolution and later Collyer's Point. Map of property at "Bowman's Point" was made in 1869. In the *Richmond Republican* of October 9th, 1830, there is an advertisement of an

auCTION sale of a piece of land, " Bounded northerly by the road leading from Mersereau's Ferry to the Old Point."

DE HART'S POINT. The first prominent point east of Bowman's and a part of the old DeHart farm. The knoll of upland at the end of the Shore Road, near Holland's Hook meadows, is said to have also been called DeHart's Point (Bayles, p. 3), but this seems to be an error.

DE HART'S COVE. East of DeHart's Point. Usually called Johnny DeHart's Cove.

PEGGY'S POINT. Southwest of the railroad trestle near Western Avenue. It is a point of higher land in the meadow. Peggy's Point is named after Judge David Mersereau's sister who married a Post. Judge Mersereau was prominent on the Island during the first part of this century. A man by the name of Page bought Peggy's Point and the surrounding meadows, and when he became old and decrepit he deeded the land to his relatives in consideration that they take care of him for the remainder of his days. Their care taking, however, according to the neighbors, was of a very poor quality, and the old man finally died in the wood shed.

BEULAH. The sandy point or dune that extends along one side of Old Place meadow reaching northward nearly to Old Place Creek. Though termed Beulah in a spirit of irony, to a naturalist it is well named and is anything but desolate. Also known as the Big Hummock.

SPEAR'S OR SPIRIT POINT. A point of slightly raised upland projecting southwestward into the meadow near the head of Old Place Creek. Mrs. Prior, wife of Andrew Prior, the first miller of Old Place mill, committed suicide by jumping into the creek at this point. It is sometimes called Spirit Point.

MERSEREAU'S POINT. An old name for the point at what is now Port Richmond, to which Mersereau's Ferry ran. Minutes of the Common Council, July 21, 1823.

UPPER OR PELTON'S COVE. At the Bend in the Shore Road between Davis and Bement Avenues. Once known as Rolph's Cove, and during the Revolution as Kruzer's Cove.

LOWER COVE. Located near the foot of Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton. An old name.

BUTLER'S COVE. At Ward's Point near Tottenville.

THE COVE. East of Butler's Cove, on the edge of the " Meadows " and the " Cedars."

WOGLOM'S COVE. Between Smoking and Ellis' Points on the Sound.

ROSS' COVE. The bend in the shore at Rossville near the old Ross (now Lyon) homestead. Winant's or Ross' Brook flows into this Cove.

BROOK ST. BROOK. Once flowed to the bay at the Watering

Place—the present Tompkinsville—a pure stream, but now a dirty, garbage transporting torrent in wet weather, and dry in summer. Mentioned in the Abstract of the Title of Thomas E. Davis to certain Lands in Castleton, p. 11, (1834) as “the creek which flows through the Marine Hospital ground.”

JERSEY ST. BROOK. Once the overflow of the Hessian Spring but now in the same condition as the Brook St. Brook. (See Hessian Spring.)

GORE'S BROOK. Rose near the head of Vanderbilt Ave., flowed through the Gore farm and emptied at Stapleton. Once a well known brook.

NEW CREEK. At South Beach. Many years ago a creek emptied near the Narrows following nearly, if not the same course as the present Old Town or Pole Creek. The mouth of this old creek became closed and New Creek was opened—hence the name. This must have happened previous to the making of the map in 1797. Not many years ago, the Boulevard was built a little up from the high tide mark and New Creek was bridged, but in many places owing to the washing away of the shore only a trace of the road remains. New Creek is very erratic as regards at least a portion of its course, and for many years previous to the winter of 1883-4 emptied a considerable distance to the southwest of its present mouth. There was a point formed which each year grew longer, until at last the stream flowed so slowly that in the winter mentioned it froze, and the upland became flooded. When spring came the water broke through straight to the ocean, and now another point is being slowly formed. In 1797 the creek is portrayed as emptying straight to the ocean, without any accompanying point, but on the maps of 1850, 1859 and 1872 the point is shown.

OLD TOWN OR POLE CREEK. Northeast branch of New Creek. The brook which is the head waters of this creek, rises near Sand Lane at the Old Town, and flows parallel to South Beach.

PERINE'S CREEK. A north branch of New Creek. The brook from Van Wageningen's Pond, or Woodside Lake, flows into this creek.

BARTON'S OR SEAVER'S CREEK. A northwest branch of New Creek. The brooks from Reed's and Mersereau's Valleys, after joining, flow into this creek.

BARNES' CREEK. A westerly branch of New Creek, into which the Moravian Brook flows.

TYSON'S CREEK. “Petition of Obediah Holmes, for a warrant to survey and lay out a certain piece of land lying in the county of Richmond, adjoining to the land of the petitioner, upon the head of Tyson's Creek.” Land Papers, 1686.

TAYLOR'S OR MORAVIAN BROOK. Rises in the swamps northeast of the Woolsey Pond on Todt Hill and flows through the Moravian Cemetery and the old Taylor farm into Barnes' Creek, a branch of New Creek. Report Staten Island Improvement Com., p. 46.

STONY BROOK. The brook from which Stony Brook settlement got its name. It is the brook, now usually dry, that flows southward across the Amboy Road toward Great Kill. (See Bridge Creek.)

CREEK OF GRANCEES. "Description of a survey of a lot of land lying upon the south side of Staten Island, with 5 acres of meadow adjacent to ye creek of Grancees, and 5 acres of moore to ye north east of Seadar Poynte, laid out for Theo. Davison." Land Papers, 1676.

PYSE CREEK. "Communication of Stephen Hesiott to the governor in relation to a certain piece or parcel of land on Staten Island, at the head of Pyse Creek, next adjoining to Peter Johnson and Wm. Johnson's lots." Not dated but placed in the Land Papers between Jan. and March, 1684.

MUDDY DITCH. Near the Mill Road at Oakwood. "B'n N. by Mill road, E. by land of A. S. or A. V. Connor or A. O'Connor, S. by beach and bay of New York and W. by Muddy Ditch. 8 acres." Advertisement, State Tax Sale, Dec., 1890.

GREAT KILL. Mentioned in the Land Papers in 1676; on Map of 1797 and on all later maps.

BASS CREEK. At Great Kill. On Map of 1797 and later maps, but now nearly obliterated by the subsidence and washing away of the beach. This name is also applied to a branch of Main Creek and to a small creek on the Sound between Hanne's and Mark's Creeks.

MILL CREEK. At the head of Great Kill. Smith, 1836. Dripps, 1872. The creek on which Lake's tide mill is located. Its upper part is called Holmes' Creek.

FLAT CREEK. Small creek between Mill and Lockman's Creeks. Smith, 1836.

LOCKMAN'S CREEK. Next large creek west of Mill Creek. A small creek near by, rarely shown on maps, is called Flat Creek. Lackaman's Creek is shown by Smith, 1836.

DUCK CREEK. Next creek west of Lockman's. Smith, 1836.

WOLFE'S BROOK. Flows into Wolfe's Pond, which lies north-east of Seguine's Point.

LEMON OR SEGUINE'S CREEK. Empties into Prince's Bay to the west of Seguine's Point. Seguine's Creek is mentioned in the *Richmond Republican*, April 24th, 1830.

LITTLE NORTH RIVER. A name for Lemon Creek which lies north and south. It is mentioned in a deed as the west boundary of the old Seguine farm. The Prince's Bay Road leading to Seguine's Point, was once the private lane to the homestead. June 1st, 1895, a large number of tomcod and smelt from the United States fish hatchery were placed in the "Little North river at Prince's Bay."

SANDY BROOK. Rises to the northeast of Wood Row Road and empties into Lemon Creek. Named on Map, 1797.

JACK'S OR BUTLER'S CREEK. Butler's Brook flows from Brown's Pond, near Light House Hill, into Butler's Creek at Prince's

Bay. In recent years the creek has been improved and is now usually spoken of as the Canal. Black Jack Ward, a negro in the service of the Butler family for many years, once lived near by and the creek at that time generally bore his name.

UNCLE ED. WOOD'S BROOK. Rises on the Wood property close to St. Paul's Church on the Amboy Road, and flows southerly to the Cove, east of Ward's Point.

MILL CREEK. Extends from Richmond Valley Station to Staten Island Sound. Map in Bayles' History.

'GENE'S OR TAPPEN'S CREEK. Northwest of Kreischerville. Named after Eugene Androvette. On the map of 1797 it is called Tappen's Creek, and the older residents also know it by that name. Asher and Abraham Tappen are mentioned on old grave stones in a homestead burying ground, just south of the creek.



ST. MARK'S HOTEL, NEW BRIGHTON, RECENTLY DEMOLISHED.

OAKLEY'S CREEK. A small creek on the easterly side of Smoking Point.

ROSS' OR WINANT'S BROOK. Rises between Shea's and Winant's Lanes and flows into Ross' Cove at Rossville.

KILL-FISH BROOK. Flows from Mt. Tobey, the Lyster Pond, &c., and empties into Slaght's Creek at Valley Forge. Another branch rises more to the northeast.

SLACK'S (SLAGHT'S) CREEK. First Creek north of Rossville. One branch reaches the Fresh Kills Road at Valley Forge.

BENEDICT'S CREEK. Second creek north of Rossville. The Benedict farm fronts the Fresh Kills Road and extends on to the meadows at Benedict's Creek. This is said to have been formerly known as Winant's Creek.

MOORE'S OR KETELTAS' BROOK. Rises in the woods near Journeay Road and flows across the Fresh Kills Road through Owl's Hollow into Wagner's Creek.

DEAD MAN'S CREEK. On Dead Man's or Burnt Island. Empties into Little Fresh Kill.

FRESH KILLS. Mentioned in Land Papers, 1676; on map, 1797, and on all later maps.

LITTLE AND GREAT FRESH KILL. Fresh Kills divides at Burnt Island, which lies at its mouth, the northern arm being known as Little Fresh Kill, and the southern as Great Fresh Kill.

JESSE BEDELL'S OR WAGNER'S CREEK. First southerly branch of Fresh Kills, after passing Burnt Island. It bends about Lake's Meadow Island.

RICHMOND CREEK. East branch of Fresh Kills. Karle's Neck Creek or Michean's Creek are old names for this.

HENRY BEDELL'S MILL CREEK. A branch of Richmond Creek leading to the old Bedell Mill at Marshland, or Green Ridge.

BETTY HOLMES' OR TAYLOR'S BROOK. Rises near Annadale and flows northerly into Benham's Creek, a branch of Richmond Creek.

BENHAM'S BROOK. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, p. 91. Same as Betty Holmes' Brook. Flows into Benham's Creek, a branch of Richmond Creek. On the Fresh Kills Road between Betty Holmes' or Benham's Brook and Gifford's Lane, is the haunt of Rooney's ghost. Willows grow on both sides of the road and holes have been cut into their trunks and rails fitted between the trees, thus making them serve as fence posts. A small stream flows along the road side by the willows, and Rooney, it is alleged, fell into this little two inch brook and was drowned. His ghost, they say, now prowls up and down the road.

LEWIS' CREEK. An old name for Benham's Creek.

RICHMOND OR SAW MILL BROOK. Flows through the ravine at Egbertville and empties into Richmond Creek near St. Andrew's church. The Blood Root Valley branch rises near the highest point (Dongan Knoll), and the west branch rises in the Mills Dale.

KETCHUM'S MILL POND BROOK. Rises in the Mills Dale near the old road to Richmond, now sometimes called Egbertville Road, and flows through the Ketchum Mill Pond into Richmond Creek. This brook and its branches have been only slightly affected by artificial changes and are among the most rural on the Island.

SIMONSON'S BROOK. Rises in the woods to the north of Springville Road (Poverty Lane), near the center of the Island, and flows southerly into Simonson's Creek, a branch of Richmond Creek.

JOHN BEDELL'S OR SIMONSON'S CREEK. Empties into the north side of Richmond Creek opposite Benham's Creek.

MAIN CREEK. North branch of Fresh Kills.

NECK OR LONG NECK CREEK. The branch of Main Creek into which Willow Brook flows. Map, 1797. Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec., 1890. Smith, 1836, calls it "Beck Creek."

DOCK OR NEW SPRINGVILLE CREEK. Branch of Main, and next considerable creek southeast of Neck Creek. The one in which New Springville dock is located.

VREELAND'S CREEK. A branch of Dock Creek into which Vreeland's Brook flows.

ESEK'S CREEK. Branch of Dock Creek; also known as Blake's Creek.

FLOWK CREEK. Branch of Main, and next creek southwest of Dock Creek. Mentioned in *Richmond Republican*, Jan. 24th, 1829. There is also a creek southeast of Travisville known as Long Neck Flowk or Little Flowk Creek. These creeks were no doubt named after the fish allied to the flounders, known as the flowk or fluke. The true flowk is a European fish. The present day fishermen do not know why these two creeks are so called, but the above explanation seems probable.

PETER'S CREEK. Branch of Main, and next creek southwest of Flowk Creek. Named after Peter Du Puy. "Peter Dupuy's Creek" is mentioned in *Richmond Republican*, January 24th, 1829.

PRALL'S CREEK. The south arm or branch of Peter's Creek.

LA TOURETTE'S CANAL. Extends from Peter's Creek north-eastward to the upland.

BASS CREEK. Small creek between Peter's and Flowk creeks.

FLAT CREEK. A branch of Richmond Creek and near Never Fail Point.

WRECK CREEK. On Long Neck. Empties into Fresh Kills near Burnt Island. So called because an old wreck was once lodged there.

FACTORY CREEK. Next creek west of Wreck Creek. Extends toward the Linoleum factory.

FORK CREEK. A forked creek on Long Neck that empties into Fresh Kills to the east of Wreck Creek.

MARSHALL'S CREEK. Next considerable creek to the east of Fork Creek. Sometimes called Marsh Creek.

ISLAND CREEK. On Long Neck near Price's Meadow Island. Empties into Main Creek east of Marsh Creek. Peter's Creek on Karle's Neck is nearly opposite. Sometimes called Shrimp Creek.

LITTLE FLOWK OR JONES' CREEK. Branch of Main Creek; the one that bends toward Price's Meadow Island from the northeast.

NEW SPRINGVILLE BROOK. Rises near the corner of the old Saw-Mill or Conner Road and the Manor Road, and flows across Jones' or Rockland Road through New Springville into Dock Creek. This brook once turned a mill wheel in New Springville village.

VREELAND'S BROOK. Rises near Sign's Road and flows south-westerly through Vreeland's Swamp at Union or New Springville Road into Vreeland's Creek, a branch of Dock Creek.

WILLOW BROOK. Rises near the highest point of Staten Island and flows southwesterly into Main Creek.

CORSON'S BROOK. Rises near the Willow Brook Road, flows through the Corson farm and empties into Willow Brook near Bull's Head. Beers, 1874.

CANNON'S OR LANDING CREEK. Lies between Chelsea and Travisville. Andrew Cannon is mentioned as having 161 acres on Long Neck in the Land Papers, 1686. Abram Cannon's Creek is mentioned by Bayles, p. 129. Named on map 1797. Lately called Chelsea Creek.

LIBERTY DITCH. Cannon's Creek, like most meadow creeks, contains several lengthy twists or turns, and in 1860, or thereabouts, when a piece of the meadow was purchased for manufacturing purposes, a short cut was made across one of these loops, which, from the spirit of the times, received the name of Liberty Ditch.

SAW MILL OR MAGGIE MERRILL'S CREEK. North of Chelsea. One of its branches crosses the Watchogue Road. A saw mill was formerly located on this creek.

FLAT BROOK. Flows through the low, flat woodland lying between Merrill's Road and the Turnpike into Saw Mill or Maggie's Creek. (See Flat Brook, a branch of Old Place Creek.)

DADDY'S CREEK. On the Sound. Next creek north of Saw Mill Creek.

HANNE'S OR BALL'S CREEK. On the Sound. Next creek north of Daddy's.

BASS CREEK. On the Sound. Small creek next north of Hanne's Creek.

PRALL'S RIVER. The arm of the Sound between Dongan's Island and Staten Island. Advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

THOMAS CREEK. Flowed into Fresh Kill.



QUARANTINE HOSPITALS, TOMPRINSVILLE, DESTROYED BY FIRE IN 1858.

MARK'S CREEK. First large creek south of Old Place Creek. Empties near Buckwheat Island. Mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

OLD PLACE OR TUNISSEN'S CREEK. Old Place Creek is shown on recent maps. Sometimes called "Tunis Creek" by fishermen, &c. Tunissen's Creek is mentioned in *Richmond Republican*, April 25th, 1829; in the *Staten Islander*, September 19th, 1857, and in an old deed of 1687, recorded in Richmond, Liber B, p. 95.

OYSTER OR DEEP CREEK. A north branch of Old Place Creek, that reaches nearly to Bridge or Lawrence Creek. Oyster Creek is mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

OYSTER CREEK. "Petition of Hans Lawrence of the county of Richmond, praying a warrant for a survey of a piece of land on Staten Island, containing about 40 acres; together with a small island of meadow, of about 2 acres, lying at the mouth of Oyster Creek, for which he has a patent." Not dated, but placed in 1697 of the Land Papers.

SEDGE POND CREEK. First southerly branch of Old Place Creek.

VROOM CREEK. Second southerly branch of Old Place Creek. Walling, 1859. Advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

HUCKLEBERRY CREEK. Third southerly branch of Old Place Creek. Reaches to Beulah Point.

BRAISTED'S CREEK. A southerly branch of Old Place Creek, that reaches to that part of Lambert's Lane sometimes called Bloomfield Road.

FLAT BROOK. Flows north across Lambert's Lane into Old Place Creek. (See Flat Brook, a branch of Saw Mill or Maggie's Creek.)

LOG BROOK. Flows westerly across South Avenue into Old Place Creek. A few logs once laid across the brook and served as a bridge, hence the name.

OLD PLACE BROOK. Rises near Quarry Hill on the Old Place Road and flows across South Avenue into Old Place Creek.

LAWRENCE OR BRIDGE CREEK. Said to have been also called Back Creek because it lay back of some of the farms that fronted on the North Shore. It empties into the Kill Van Kull at Bowman's Point. The brook that flows into the south branch of this creek is sometimes called Stony Brook.

Bridge Creek is mentioned in connection with the war of the Revolution as follows: "It is imagined that another expedition is determined upon against Staten Island under command of Mr. Philemon Dickenson, who has assembled near four hundred men about Elizabeth Town; boats and scows are also prepared, with a floating raft, to cross Bridge Creek, and thereby secure a retreat to the point." Bayles, p. 196. Also mentioned in Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec., 1890.

DAM-MEADOW CREEK. A branch of Bridge Creek. The Dam-meadow and Dam-meadow Creek are crossed by the railroad trestle just beyond Arlington. The meadow is nearly encircled by higher land, covered with a growth of timber, and owing to this isolation has also been called the Pond-meadow. It is bounded on the southwest by Peggy's Point.

NEWTON'S CREEK. Empties into the Kill Van Kull between Bowman's and DeHart's Points. Many years ago a man by the name of Newton widened this creek so that he might get boats up to his ketchup and pickle preserving establishment, situated near the Shore Road.

DEHART'S OR BOWMAN'S BROOK. Bends about the high sand dune or Gerty's Hill at Holland's Hook, and flows into Newton's Creek. Near the bridge where DeHart's Brook crosses the Shore Road, Sukey Rowland claimed that she was caught by the Devil many years ago and had her tongue pulled. She was a gossip and her stories with oft telling grew apace, so that her good neighbors became angry with this monger of tales whose tongue was so very long.

PALMER'S RUN. The brook forming the boundary line between Castleton and Northfield, and named after John Palmer. Land Papers, 1680.

MILL BROOK. Same as Palmer's Run. Land Papers, 1680. Now called Bodine's Creek.

GREAT SWAMP DITCH. An old water way. It formerly conducted water from Willow Brook at Bull's Head to the Butcherville branch of Palmer's Run.

STINKING BROOK. A branch of Palmer's Run, that crosses the Turnpike and receives the waste of the Four Corners' brewery. At this writing, it is remarkable for its growth of *Alga* and *Vorticella*.

CLOVE VALLEY BROOK. Flows from the Clove Valley ponds to Palmer's Run at the Mill Pond meadow, West New Brighton.

THE CANAL. Dug from the Clove Valley Brook to the Factory Pond at West New Brighton. Abandoned in 1894 and has since been filled in.

BOILING SPRING BROOK. Flows into the Factory Pond. (See Boiling Spring.)

LOGAN'S SPRING OR HARBOR BROOK. Flows into the Kill Van Kull at Livingston. (See Logan's Spring.) "The stream known as Harbor Brook, on Henderson Avenue, at the premises of the Sailors' Snug Harbor," is mentioned in an advertisement in *N. Y. Evening Sun*, September 12th, 1895.

THE NECK. Tottenville is sometimes referred to as being on "the Neck."

KARLE'S NECK. "Description of a survey of 80 acres of land at ye head of ye meadows between Long Neck and Karle's Neck, upon Staten Island, with 6 acres of salt meadow and 4 acres of fresh in ye cove to the north of Sedar Poynte, laid out for Jon. Bissell." Land Papers, 1676. St. Andrew's Church is described as being on Karle's Neck, at the head of Fresh Kills, in the Land Papers, 1713, and in Bayles' History, p. 395. "Charles Neck" is mentioned in Bayles' History, p. 129, and is shown by Smith, 1836. Karle's Neck was sometimes called Short Neck to distinguish it from Long Neck.

LONG NECK. Separated from Karle's Neck by Main Creek. The land on which Linoleumville now stands. Mentioned in the Land Papers in draught of patent granted to John Garretsen in 1675.

DANIELL'S NECK. "Description of a survey of 120 acres of land lying upon the west side of Staten Island, to the north of Long Neck, and to the south of Daniell's Neck, laid out for Jonsia Cronsoon, by Phillip Welles, Surveyor." Land Papers, 1685. Mentioned again in 1697 in connection with the petition of Richard Merrel; also in Bayles' History, p. 129.

TUNNISSEN'S NECK. An old name for the Neck between Old Place Creek (Tunissen's Creek) and Bridge Creek. Old Place is located on this Neck.

LOUSE ISLAND. When the Quarantine was situated at Tompkinsville the washing for the immigrants was carried on in the "wash house" on Louse Island. In building the American Docks, Louse Island and the vicinity were filled in. The island is shown but not named on Blood's map, 1845.

HOFFMAN ISLAND (UPPER QUARANTINE). SWINBURNE OR DIX ISLAND (LOWER QUARANTINE). Artificial islands off the shore from South Beach.

TOM BELL'S ISLAND. A wooded point projecting into the meadows between Garretson's station and the South Beach on the southwest side of Seaview Avenue. Sometimes called Tom Bell's Woods. This wood is said to have been much frequented by foxes about fifty years ago.

POPPY JOE'S ISLAND. A meadow island covered with cedar trees, between Barnes' Creek and South Beach. This name is used in old deeds. The sandy beach is approaching this island quite rapidly. In the *Richmond Republican*, June 19th, 1830, the following mention is made of "Poppy Joe's Island, which formerly did belong to Thomas Walton, deceased, and the said Thomas Walton did convey the same to Isaac Cubberly, of Staten Island, deceased, and the said deceased Isaac Cubberly, did bequeath the same in his last will and testament to his son Isaac Cubberly, his heirs and assigns for ever, which said tract of land and salt meadow lying on the south side of the said Island, and fronting the beach or strand, and begins on the north side of the said tract of land and meadows, by a creek called the New Creek. * * * " "Poppa Goes Island" is depicted on an old map of which the following is the title: "At the Request of Dr. Nicholas Lozier I have Surveyed All His Lands and Meadows now in his Possession And Find the Contents to Amount of 141 Acres of Land and Meadows as p. Mapp. Surveyed Jan'y 12th, 1793, by Bernard Sprong."

EGYPT. A meadow island between Barnes' and Bartons' Creeks, southwest of Grant City.

OYSTER ISLAND. In Great Kill. Shown but not named on Chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Named on Dripp's Map, 1872.

BURNT ISLAND. On the 10th of June, 1778, three boats laden with American soldiers landed between Blazing Star [Rossville] and "Burnt Island" in the mouth of Fresh Kills, and surprised the British picket. Bayles, p. 202. This island is referred to several times in the Land Papers as "Ye Island of Meadow against Seadar Poynte." On the map of 1797 it is marked "Island of Salt Meadow."

DEAD MAN'S OR NOAH'S ISLAND. Same as Burnt Island. These names are used by fishermen of the present day.

EDSALL'S ISLAND. "Description of a survey of several small pieces of salt meadow, on the northwest side of Staten Island, near the Fresh Kills, beginning at the southernmost branch of the Fresh Kills, where it joins the sound; thence southward to Jacob de Muffes his creek, including a peninsula of meadow called Edsall's Island, laid out for Christopher Billipp, by Ro: Fulerton." Land Papers, July 6, 1687.

LAKE'S ISLAND. Mentioned in advertisement, *Staaten Islander*, September 9th, 1857. The rise in the meadow to the east of Burnt or Dead Man's Island and probably the same as Edsall's Island. Thoreau in a letter written on Staten Island, July 21, 1843, says: "Last Sunday I walked over to Lake Island Farm, eight or nine miles from here, where Moses Prichard lived, and found the present occupant, one Mr. Davenport, formerly from Massachusetts, with three or four men to help him, raising sweet potatoes and tomatoes by the acre." Possibly the "Lake Island Farm" of Thoreau is not Lake's or Edsall's Island.



ST. ANDREW'S CHURCH, RICHMOND, ORIGINALLY ERECTED IN 1713.

PRICE'S ISLAND. A hummock of land in the salt meadow south of Travisville on Long Neck. E. Price is given as a resident by Dripps, 1850.

DONGAN'S ISLAND. Large island of meadow in the Sound near Chelsea. On Dripp's map of 1850 it is marked Dongan's Island, but on the later maps it is corrupted into "Duncan's Island." Called Prall's Island on map in Bayles' History. The "great island of salt meadow, near the Fresh Kills, and opposite to Long Neck, laid out for John Palmer by Phillip Wells, surveyor," is mentioned in the Land Papers in 1687, and is Dongan's Island. The patent to Palmer was approved at a council held March 31st, 1687, Governor Dongan being present, and on the 16th day of the following April, John Palmer and Sarah, his wife, conveyed the same territory to Thomas Dongan. Nearly opposite to this Island on the New Jersey shore, are the "Rotten Meadows."

RALPH'S ISLAND. The following is from the *Richmond County Mirror* of 1838: "Executors Sale. James Bodine Sen'r deceased. * * * * Also two lots of salt meadow, No. 1 containing 10 acres, situated in the town of Northfield in said county at a place called the

‘ Old Place; ’ bounded south by Tunison’s Creek, on the west by meadow of Wm. Blake, on the north by upland of Mrs. Prior, and on the east by meadow of Jacob Bodine, conveniently situated and of a good quality. No. 2 containing 4 acres, situate as aforesaid, being on the opposite side of the said creek, and nearly surrounded by water—called ‘ Ralph’s Island.’ ” This meadow-island lies south of Mr. Kinsey’s residence on the Old Place Road, and is no longer surrounded by the creek, which has changed its course. It is, however, still a meadow-island, as the former bed of the creek is not entirely filled up, but supports a rank growth of water-loving vegetation, that in summer encircles this small piece of meadow.

BUCKWHEAT ISLAND. Small meadow-island in the Sound north of Dongan’s Island. It is near the mouth of Mark’s Creek: Clute, p. 8. It is related that a canal boatman ran ashore on this Island in the night, and in mentioning the accident, said he had grounded on “ Pancake Island.”

SCHUTTER’S, SHUTTOR’S, SHUTER’S, SUTER’S OR SHOOTER’S ISLAND. Opposite Mariners’ Harbor. Mentioned in the Land Papers, 1676. Bew, 1781. Richmond County Clerk’s office, Liber B. of Deeds, p. 63. Bayles, p. 326. Clute, p. 66. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES—CONTINUED.



ROBYN'S RIFT. "A reef in the bay at the mouth of the Kill Van Kull was once frequented by seals, to which the Dutch gave the name Robyn; hence the name 'Robyn's Rift,' which has, by careless usage, become 'Robbin's Reef.'" Bayles, p. 3, 681. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, Bay and Harbor of New York.

OYSTER BANKS. West of Robbin's Reef, between Cavan's Point and Constable's Point, N. J. Bew, 1781, shows "Oyster Bay and Banks," and Des Barres, 1777, shows "Oyster Banks."

BAXTER'S LEDGE. Between St. George and Robbin's Reef. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey.

LAW'S REEF. The name applied to what remains of the old stone dock to the west of the present St. George Ferry slips, and at one time owned by George Law.

LIGHTNING ROCK. A considerable mass of outcropping Tremolite on the shore near to where the present St. George Ferry slips are located. The rock was much worn by the waves, a prominent crevice ran across it, and a large portion had been broken off, probably by glacial action, and transported several yards southward. It was the popular tradition that these changes had been brought about by lightning, hence the name.

DENYSE'S OR BLACK-FISH ROCK. Near the shore at Brighton Point (St. George) and about three hundred feet east of Lightning Rock. The place was well known to fishermen some years ago, but has now been filled in.

WHITE ROCK. The name of the rock to which Isaac Decker piloted the first British soldiers, who landed on Staten Island during the Revolution. Bayles, p. 242. The outcrop of granite on the shore, now nearly covered by the filling in for the Tompkinsville railroad station, was called the White Rock during recent years, and it is quite likely the place where Decker landed the soldiers.

SPLIT ROCK. A large split rock seen at very low tide off the shore at the foot of Hannah Street, Tompkinsville.

SUGAR LOAF ROCK. A prominent boulder, the shape of a sugar loaf, near the paper factory, at the corner of Prospect Street and the Turnpike. It now occupies a cleared field, but was once surrounded by woods, and was then a point of pilgrimage for the boys of the period.

BROGAN'S ROCK. A large, flat rock on the shore south of Pennsylvania Avenue, Clifton. Named after Brogan, a boatman.

SEAL ROCKS. The name of several drift boulders at Prince's Bay under Light House Hill, on which seals are occasionally seen in winter.

NIGGER-HEAD ROCK. A large boulder at the foot of the bluff at Light House Hill, Prince's Bay, and known as a land mark among fishermen.

STRAWBERRY ROCK. Off the shore near the foot of Central Avenue, Tottenville. This rock received its name from the circumstance that strawberries once grew about it, before the shore had washed away.

POLLY FOUNTAIN'S OR JACOBSON'S BAR. Just outside of the Narrows. The Jacobson and Fountain farms were at the Narrows and lay side by side. The bar is also occasionally spoken of as Keteltas', after the old Keteltas farm, that extended to the South Beach at the Old Town Road. Beers, 1874.

CRAVEN'S SHOAL. Off South Beach, northeast of Hoffman Island. Chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Map, Bayles' History.

NEW CREEK SHOAL. Near the mouth of New Creek.

WEST BANK. Hoffman and Dix Islands east of South Beach are on West Bank. Chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Bellin, 1764. Bew, 1781.

BARNES' LEAD. Off South Beach between New Creek and the Elm Tree Light at the foot of New Dorp Lane.

GREAT KILL SHOAL. Southeast of Crooke's Point. This is what is called Old Orchard Shoal on the government chart (Great Kill Shoal not being mentioned), but according to oystermen, &c., the true Old Orchard Shoal is further to the west nearly opposite Huguenot. The Old Orchard, now washed away by the ever encroaching sea, is said to have been situated just west of Arbutus Lake. "Kill Shoal" is shown by Smith, 1836.

OLD ORCHARD SHOAL. The Old Orchard Shoal Light is situated a little over two miles southeast of Crooke's Point. Chart, U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. (See Great Kill Shoal.)

MIDDLE GROUND. The shallow area south of the channel at Prince's Bay. So called by oystermen, &c.

ROUND SHOAL. A name for Middle Ground, or at least its upper portion. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey.

OYSTER BEDS. Same as Middle Ground and Round Shoal. Smith, 1836.

TEXAS. Southeast of Ward's Point, between the Channel and Middle Ground. The water is several feet deeper than on Middle Ground. A well known locality among fishermen, &c.

MILL CREEK SHOALS. In the Sound at Mill Creek, Tottenville.

KREISCHERVILLE FLATS. In the Sound off Kreischerville.

BIG, GREAT OR STORER'S BEDS. The Great Beds Light is situated southwest of Ward's Point. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Fishermen call the wide and shallow part of the Sound north of Ellis Point, Great Beds, Big Beds or Storer's Beds.

STORY'S FLATS. Mud flats in the Sound between Ellis and Smoking Points. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. These flats should be called Storer's after the old Staten Island family of that name who owned the upland.

LEWIS' BEDS. Oyster beds in Lewis' or Benham's Creek.

PERINE'S HOLE. A deep place in Perine's Creek, a branch of New Creek.

KING-FISH HOLE. Situated off Elm Tree Light. Known to fishermen by this name because the King-fish or Barb sometimes occurs there in great numbers.

DEEP HOLE. In Prince's Bay. Seventy-four feet deep. Another deep hole is in the Sound near Tottenville, and is forty-eight feet deep. Still another deep hole is just below where the Fresh Kills bridge crosses Richmond Creek.



FOUNTAIN HOUSE, WEST NEW BRIGHTON;
ORIGINALLY ERECTED IN 1750.

SHANNON'S HOLE. A deep place in the Sound between Slack's Creek and Benedict's Creek.

GARRETSON'S BAR. Near (above) where the old Garretson or Fresh Kills bridge crossed Richmond Creek.

SEA-DOG SHOAL. Situated near the northerly end of Dongan's Island. Shown, but not named, on map 1797.

FORT HILL. The hill crossed by Westervelt Avenue, New Brighton, and named from the several British forts located thereon in Revolutionary time. Clute, p. 93. Mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, December 1890. Map of property at Fort Hill, Staten Island, filed 20th July, 1853. No. 116.

QUALITY HILL. An old nickname for Fort Hill, applied to it by the residents of Thrifty Valley. Dutch Hill is a more recent name.

GOAT HILL. An old name for Fort Hill. The unfenced portion was formerly used as a goat pasture.

VINEGAR HILL. The southerly slope occupied by Monroe and Montgomery Avenues, New Brighton. This was also known as "The Orchard," because Gov. Tompkins' apple orchard was located there. "The Orchard" is shown on Blood's map, 1845.

CORK HILL. A later name for Vinegar Hill. The Cork Hill boys and the boys from Rocky Hollow used to march against each other some years ago and indulge in "Wild Irish" stone fights. They were imbued with an excess of local pride.

REDOUBT HILL OR MOUNT TOMPKINS. The prominent hill back of Tompkinsville, on which British earthworks were located during the Revolution, the remains of one of which are still to be seen. "The Pavilion at Mount Tompkins" is mentioned in advertisement by Caleb T. Ward in *Richmond Republican*, March 1st, 1828. Mount Tompkins is mentioned in the *Staten Islander*, June 11th, 1856. Redoubt Hill is mentioned in the *Staten Island Star*, Dec. 14, 1895.

PAVILION HILL. The same as Mount Tompkins. A great Sunday resort thirty or forty years ago. Called "Mount Pavilion" in *N. Y. Herald* of 1835. Blood, 1845. Now occasionally called Cow Hill.

WARD'S HILL. The next hill southeast of Pavilion.

MOUNT MARION. Same as Ward's Hill. Blood, 1845.

FIEDLER'S HILL. Rises from the Turnpike west of Pavilion Hill.

TURNEY'S HILL. At the present Hill Street, between Jersey Street and York Avenue, New Brighton.

GRIMES' HILL. Rises from the Richmond Road back of Stapleton.

CAPO DI MONTE. Old name for Grimes' Hill. Blood, 1845.

SIGNAL HILL. An old name for Grimes' Hill. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, pp. 45, 82, 88, 90. The British maintained a number of signal stations on the Island during the war of the Revolution, one of which was located on this hill.

SCHAEFER'S HILL. The steep ascent at the top of Targee Street, Stapleton. A recent name.

JACKSON'S HILL. A recent name for the prominent hill rising from the Richmond Road opposite Osgood Avenue, Stapleton, and at present used as a common. It is a part of Grimes' Hill.

POLE HILL. Near Grimes' Hill. Now known as "Morning Side."

BOYD'S HILL. An old name for the high ground along the Richmond Road near the head of Wright Street, Stapleton.

PROSPECT HILL. At the corner of Bay and Prospect Streets, Stapleton. On Blood's map, 1845. Now removed.

HAMEL'S HOOFDEN. The Narrows. "These Hoofden, or headlands, were named after Hendrick Hamel, one of the directors of the West India Company." Bayles, pp. 47, 83. Mentioned in 1630 in the Indian deed of the Island to Michil Pauw. *Manuel of the City of N. Y.*, 1869.

LITTLE FORT HILL. Near the site of the present fort that commands the Narrows. Bayles, p. 259.

CONCORD DOWNS. This name has been applied to the large tract of naked, hilly land lying between the Finger Board Road and the Richmond Road. It was once covered with trees. The same character of country, though wooded, extends to the Old Town Road. The Downs are now much used by golf players.

FOX HILL. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, pp.

88, 90. Southwest of the present Rosebank railroad station. This and Mayer's Hill are the most prominent of the Concord Downs.

MAYER'S HILL. The Finger Board Road bends about this hill. Beers, 1874.

ROGUERY HILL. A murder was once committed on a small elevation over which the Finger Board Road passes, and which from that circumstance received the name of Roguery Hill, and the road became known as the Roguery Hill Road, until the guide post, showing the road to Richmond, was erected, when it received its present name. Clute, p. 232.¹

TODT OR TOAD HILL. Rises from the Richmond Road at Garretsons, the present Dongan Hills post office. It was not called Todt Hill before the Revolution, but the name began to be used during the latter part of the war. Bayles, p. 246. Clute, pp. 8, 226. In the *Staaten Islander*, for August 30th, 1856, there is an article on the origin of the name "Todt Hill." It is there stated that in one of the early encounters between the Indians and the Dutch settlers several of the latter were killed on the hill, which in consequence received the name of Todt or Death Hill. In the next number of the paper a correspondent, writing from "Cockroach Alley, Snailville," declares the proper name to be "Toad Hill," and relates this story: "In days of yore, a young man paid his 'distresses'—for so they were regarded—to a young lady who resided on the hill. In order to offend him and cause him to discontinue his unwelcome visits, she privately dropped a toad or two—young ladies were not afraid of toads in those days—into his capacious pockets, where they remained until they became offensive. This circumstance became known, and afterwards, whenever a youth was seen wending his way towards the hill, his jesting friends would advise him to take care of his pockets if he was going to Toad Hill." Map of property on "Toad Hill" filed Feby. 4th, 1857, No. 157. "Todt or Toadt Hill" is mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

IRON HILL. Same as Todt Hill. "Description of a survey of 120 acres of land lying in the vicinity of the Iron Hill, upon Staten Island, laid out for Peter Lakeman, by Phillip Welles, surveyor." Land Papers, 1685. The "Iron Hills" are mentioned in the patent to John Palmer of 5,100 acres in 1687. Bayles, p. 115. Clute, pp. 24, 226. (See New Lots at Old Town.)

YSERBERG OR IRON MOUNT. "Description of a survey of 176 acres of land upon Staten Island under the Yserberg (or Iron Mount) for Louis Lakeman by Jas: Corteljan, surveyor." Land Papers 1676.

¹ A continued story appeared in the *Staaten Islander* during January and February, 1854, entitled "The Stranger's Revenge; or, The Haunted Swamp of the Finger Board Road. An Historical Legend of Staaten Island, by a new contributor." The Roguery Hill murder figures as a feature of this tale. It is said that

several robberies were also committed on the hill. Among "lands to be sold without reserve," mentioned in advertisement in *Richmond Republican*, March 21st, 1829, is "a farm containing 20 acres in the aforesaid town of Southfield, bounded on the road leading from Roguery Hill to the Narrows."—Wm. T. Davis.

OCEAN HILL. The highest part of Staten Island along which Ocean Terrace Road runs. Map in Bayles' History.

DONGAN KNOLL. The highest point of the Island overlooking Willow Brook valley and beyond. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, pp. 63, 88, 89.

CAMP HILL. A knoll southwest of the Black Horse Tavern, near the Amboy Road, and called Camp Hill by the British soldiers during the Revolution. Proceedings Natural Science Association, Vol. IV., No. 7.

KELLETT'S HILL. Near Egbertville Ravine and the old saw mill pond. Named after J. P. Kellett, the proprietor of the Richmond Hill hotel. Proceedings Natural Science Association, Vol. I., p. 62.

MEISSNER'S HILL. A later name for Kellett's Hill, which is now traversed by Meissner Avenue. Named after Frederick Meissner. Kellett's or Meissner's Hill is really only a part of Richmond Hill.

RICHMOND HILL. North of Richmond village. Shown by Driggs, 1850. Mentioned in Simcoe's Military Journal and the *Staten Islander*, February 28th, 1857. Also called Latourette's Hill.

CROCHERON'S HILL, FORT HILL, OR LOOK-OUT PLACE. The cedar-covered hill west of Richmond village, where the old British fort is located. Geib's Hill is a later name.

KETCHUM'S OR CEMETERY HILL. The last hill in the range that commences at Brighton Point and terminates suddenly at Richmond Creek. A better view may be had of the meadows from the top of this hill than from Look-Out Place. For over a hundred years the crown of the hill has been used as a family burying ground.

FOREST HILL. Lies parallel to Richmond Hill being separated by the Mills Dale or Buck's Hollow. The Forest Hill Road extends along the crest of this hill.

KITE OR HEIFER HILL. That part of Forest Hill over which the road from New Springville to Richmond (Poverty Lane) passes.

CRIPP'S BACK. A hill crossed by the Annadale Road, between Washington Avenue and Fresh Kills Road. The following occurs in notice of auction sale in *Richmond Republican*, January 22, 1831: "All that certain lot of land called Cripp's Back, formerly owned by Nicholas Journeay, deceased, situate in the town of Westfield, in the county of Richmond, beginning at the east corner thereof at Cripp's Back Bars, so called."

INDIAN HILL. On the Amboy Road, where joined by Washington Avenue, between Eltingville and Annadale. In the records of the laying out of the road leading from Darby Doyle's Ferry to Billopp's Ferry (part of the Richmond Road and all of the Amboy Road) made in 1774, Indian Hill is mentioned. LaForge's Hill is named as being more to the eastward, probably near the southerly turn of the Amboy Road at Eltingville, and Moore's Hill is named as near Sandy

Brook. (See Proceedings Natural Science Association, Vol. V., p. 14.) "Johnson's Hill and LaForge's Hill, near the church of the Huguenots," are mentioned in the *Staaten Islander*, February 25th, 1854.

BUNKER HILL. An old name for the high bluff at Prince's Bay where the lighthouse now stands. Map, 1797. A rather high conical hill at Huguenot, west of Arbutus Lake, is now known as Bunker Hill.

SEGUINE'S OR LIGHT HOUSE HILL. The hill on which Prince's Bay light is located. Chart U. S. Coast and Geodetic Survey. Red Bank Light. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874.

RED BANK. The bluff at Prince's Bay. Colton, 1846. Driggs, 1850. Walling, 1859. Driggs, 1872. Map in Bayles' History.

NEDDIE WARD'S OR WARE'S HILL. Close to and north-west of Pleasant Plains railroad station and traversed by the Rossville or Bloomingdale Road.

CANADA HILL. The prominent hill back of the railroad station at Richmond Valley, Westfield.

SAND RIDGES. West of Beach Avenue at Richmond Valley, Westfield. These ridges were occupied by the Indians in old time, and at present a number of interesting hybrid oaks grow in the adjacent lowland known as Decker's Swamp.

CROCK'S OR HOPPING'S HILL. A prominent knoll on the north side of the Amboy Road, Tottenville.

BURLAL RIDGE. The knoll near the Billopp House at Tottenville from which many Indian remains have been exhumed.

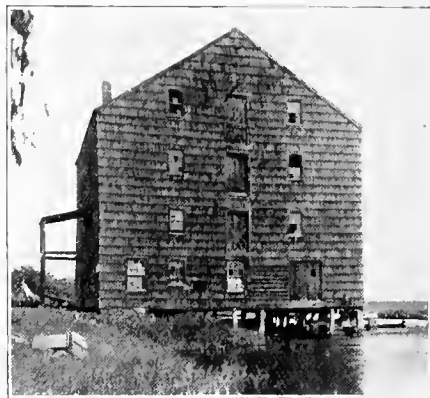
THE BLUFF. At Tottenville, near the end of the Amboy Road.

CHESTNUT HILL. The northern part of Kreischerville (Androvetteville) and traversed by the Fresh Kills Road. The following may refer to same Chestnut Hill: "Description of a survey of a lot of land containing 81 acres with 8 acres of meadow, situate in the middle or body of Staten Island, upon a ridge known by the name of Chestnut Hill, laid out for Joseph Arosmith, by Phillip Wells, surveyor." Land Papers, 1683.

VAN ALLEN'S OR McCOMBER'S HILL. The southern part of Kreischerville. The Fresh Kills Road passes over this hill.

KREISCHER'S HILL. At Kreischerville, opposite the brick works.

ANDROVETTE'S HILL. Near Kreischerville, on the south side of Gene's Creek.



OLD PLACE MILL, RECENTLY DESTROYED BY FIRE.

CEDAR HILL. Near Kreischerville, on the north side of 'Gene's Creek. It is a rather high sand hill covered with cedars.

BURYING HILL. A small sand knoll southwest of Smoking Point, near Rossville, supposed to have been used as an Indian burying ground.

MOUNT TOBEY. The hill on the westerly side of Swaim's or La-Forge's Lane at Valley Forge, Westfield.

POMPEY'S KNOLL. A sand dune, close to the Sound, between Cannon's or Landing Creek and Chelsea. Pompey was a darkey and lived on this knoll many years ago.

SAILOR'S HILL. A long sand hill on the southerly side of Decker Avenue (a name for the western end of Merrill Avenue) near Chelsea Road and Saw Mill Creek. The hill received its name from the circumstance that a sailor was buried there many years ago.

BIG HUMMOCK, OR BEULAH LAND. The long sand hill that extends along the meadow at Vroom and Old Place Creeks.

LITTLE HUMMOCK. A smaller dune to the southeast of the Big Hummock.

BATTLE HILL. A sand dune on the southerly side of Bridge Creek, where it is crossed by Western Road. One of the numerous skirmishes between the British and the Americans from New Jersey occurred here during the Revolution. A trench was dug on the creek side of the hill in which the killed were buried. A part of Battle Hill is now occupied by the dwelling and garden of the Rev. Jas. E. Kenny.

AUNT GERTIE'S HILL. A high sand dune on the old De Hart farm, to the east of Newton's Creek, at Holland's Hook.

QUARRY HILL. The trap rock quarry, known as the Upper Quarry, near Graniteville, is on this hill. Bayles, p. 433. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859.

BURGER'S HILL. At Burger and Castleton Avenues, West New Brighton. A well known locality among the boys some years ago, who used to sleighride down Burger's Hill.

NANNY-BERRY OR SUNSET HILL. A hill nearly covered with black-haw bushes and cat-briers, near where Bard Avenue meets the Clove Road. The open ground on this hill is locally known as the Common.

HICKORY CORNER. Several old fences met on the highest point just east of the upper part of the present Bard Avenue, where also stood a hickory tree, and the hill-top, in consequence, was known as Hickory Corner.

HARBOR HILL. The high ground at the head of Clinton Avenue, New Brighton.

OCEAN TERRACE. The high land between the Clove Valley and the Richmond Road along which the Ocean Terrace Road now runs.

Map of property on 'Ocean Terrace' filed 19th September, 1860 No. 181. (See Ocean Hill.)

SMITH TERRACE. On Boyd's Hill, Stapleton.

UPPER TERRACE. The hill-side at St. Mark's Place, New Brighton.

LOWER TERRACE. Below the Upper Terrace. A part of Richmond Terrace or Shore Road.

BRIGHTON HEIGHTS. Same as Upper Terrace. The "Brighton Heights Dutch Reformed Church" is situated on the corner of Tompkins Avenue and Fort Place. Clute, p. 260.

KNYPHAUSEN HEIGHTS. The high land above Tompkins Avenue. General Knypphausen's Hessians were encamped around the British fort situated on these heights, the remains of which may still be seen.

CASTLETON HEIGHTS. The high land north of the Moravian Cemetery and east of Egbert Avenue. Walling, 1859. The town of Middletown was created by an act of the State Legislature in 1860 and was formed from parts of Southfield and Castleton. The hills once called Castleton Heights are now in Middletown. Thoreau in 1843, used to date his letters at Castleton. He lived on the Richmond Road. The residence of Alderman J. Y. Cebra, on the Turnpike and Cebra Avenue, was also called "Castleton Heights." Blood, 1845.

HUGUENOT HEIGHTS. At the corner of Woodrow Road and Huguenot Avenue. Dripps, 1872.

CHELSEA HEIGHTS. On the Turnpike, near Signs Road. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874.

THRIFTY VALLEY. An old name for the low ground through which Monroe and Montgomery Avenues now pass.

THE CLOVE. The old Dutch and the present name of the cleft in the hill through which the Clove Road finds its way into Clove Valley. Clute, p. 232. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, p. 45. The Turnpike Road traverses Clove Valley from northeast to southwest.

LITTLE CLOVE VALLEY. Reaching southward from the Little Clove Road.

MARTLING DALE. A part of the Little Clove Valley. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, pp. 64, 88.

THE GLEN. At the northwest end of Britton's Pond, near where the mill once stood. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, p. 64.

MANOR DALE. That portion of the Valley of Willow Brook near the Manor Road. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, pp. 64, 88.

MILLS DALE OR BUCK'S HOLLOW. Extending from near the old mill at Egbertville along the northerly side of Richmond Hill to Ketchum's Mill pond. Rept. Staten Is. Imp. Com., pp. 64, 88.

EGBERTVILLE RAVINE. Lies between Kellett's Hill and Egbertville Road, near Egbertville. Richmond or Saw Mill Brook flows through this ravine.

BLOOD ROOT VALLEY, BLACK HORSE RAVINE, OR VALLEY OF DEAD MAN'S CREEK. This deep shaded ravine lies west of Egbert Avenue, about a quarter of a mile from where it joins the road to Egbertville. It is called by the first of these names because the Blood Root grows there in abundance; by the second, on account of a tradition that a messenger between the British forts used to ride in the days of the Revolution through the valley, and by the third, from the circumstance that a dead man was once found by the brook side.

VALLEY OF THE IRON HILL OR MERSEREAU'S VALLEY. There is to be found in the history of the county a pleasing anecdote of the rescue of a young lady by her lover, Mersereau, from the hands of an unscrupulous British officer, who was quartered on the Island during the Revolution, directly opposite the junction of the road from Garretson's station with the old Richmond Road, then called the King's Highway, in a deep ravine, penetrating some distance into Todt Hill. This is still one of the most beautiful spots on the Island; the hill sides are mostly wooded, a pleasant meadow with old apple trees occupies the bottom of the valley and the perennial spring flows as in the days of the Revolution. The neighbors and local historians had no name for this place and so the writer of this article, some years ago, called it Mersereau's Valley. Lately a very appropriate name for this valley was discovered in the survey for Hansse Christophell, made in 1685. It is there called the Valley of the Iron Hill, the Iron Hill being an old name for Todt Hill. (See New Lots at the Old Town.)

REED'S VALLEY. A fork of Mersereau's Valley. It contains a brook which joins the one that flows from the hermit's spring. (See Reed's Basket-willow Swamp.)

PLEASANT VALLEY. Commences near the head of Vanderbilt Avenue, where it joins the Richmond Road, and extends up the hill toward the Serpentine Road.

ROCKY HOLLOW. The hollow back of Stapleton through which the old Richmond Road runs. It is below Signal or Grimes' Hill. Bayles, p. 307. Rept. Staten Is. Imp. Com., pp. 45, 82, 89.

POVERTY HOLLOW. A hollow at Clifton into which Maryland and St. John's Avenues lead.

MEANS' HOLLOW. A low piece of ground in Rossville near the corner of Shea's Lane and Fresh Kills Road through which flows a small brook.

OWLS' HOLLOW. Crossed by the Fresh Kills Road about one half mile west of Green Ridge. Moore's Brook flows through Owl's Hollow into Wagner's Creek.

JAN. TUNISSEN'S VALLEY. "Description of a survey of Jan. Tunissen's valley on the Kill van Kull (Staten Island) amounting to 24 acres. Pieter Cortelyou, surveyor." Not dated but placed in 1696 of the Land Papers. Probably in the vicinity of Holland's Hook which is situated on the old Tunissen grant.

WATERING PLACE. The name of a large spring that existed until thirty or forty years ago near the bluff at the south-



VREELAND HOMESTEAD, BUTCHERVILLE; ERECTED IN 1674.

erly end of the present railroad tunnel at Tompkinsville, where ships used to procure a supply of water before going to sea. The name was also applied to the vicinity of this well known spring. Called "Wels" by Bellin, 1764. Clute, pp. 113, 460, 683. Bayles, pp. 85, 192, 241, 326. Map, 1797.

HESSIAN SPRING. In the valley east of Jersey St., New Brighton. Bayles, p. 82. Clute, p. 32. "Hessian Springs" are located by Blood, 1845, and by Sidney, 1849. In the "Abstract of the Title of Thomas E. Davis to Certain Lands in Castleton," p. 18, (1834) occurs the following: "* * the said part of the second part, his heirs and assigns shall have * * the spring called the Hessian Spring, being upon said block or square, number sixty, for the purposes of watering the village of Tompkinsville and the premises hereby conveyed, or for any other purpose, and forty feet square of land surrounding and including said spring for the purpose of erecting thereon buildings and machinery for raising said water."

CRUSER OR BOILING SPRING. Near Bement Ave., West New Brighton. Bayles, pp. 6, 116. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. I, p. 62. Boiling Spring brook flowed into the Factory Pond.

LOGAN'S SPRING. Near the northerly side of Silver Lake, in the adjoining valley. Named after Logan, an Indian. Clute, p. 6. Blood, 1845. Sidney, 1849. Logan's Spring brook flows through the Dike to the Kill Van Kull at Livingston.

HORSE-SHOE SPRING. Occupies a horse-shoe shaped depression in Clove Valley, southwest of Silver Lake.

UPPER QUARRY SPRING. On the side of Quarry Hill, Graniteville. Beers, 1874.

HUDSON'S SPRING. Thirty years ago a fine spring issued from beneath the stone wall at the corner of the Shore Road and Vander-

bilt Avenue, Clifton. It has now entirely disappeared. The tradition is that Henry Hudson, as he sailed past the Island, sent a boat ashore to procure water, and that he got it at this spring.

MORAVIAN SPRING. In the Moravian Cemetery and now covered by the artificial lake. *Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association*, Vol. IV., p. 52.

MINERAL SPRING. At Freeman Winant's Swamp, near Union or Springville Road. One of the springs that flow into the small pond made by the Crystal Water Co. It owes its name to the considerable amount of iron found in the water, which at one time was taken as a cure for rheumatism.

VAN BUSKIRK SPRING. On the Van Buskirk farm at Garrettson's Road, Northfield.

NEW SPRINGVILLE SPRING. In New Springville village.

INDIAN SPRING. To the west of Willow Brook Road, not far from Corson's Brook. Sam and Hannah, the last Indians resident upon the Island, are said to have lived for some years near this spring.

FRESH POND. Mentioned in Palmer patent in 1687. Bayles, p. 115. Same as Silver Lake. Clute, p. 59. Blood, 1845. Dripps, 1850.

TUSHY'S POND. At the corner of the present Cebra and Ward Avenues, Middletown. Has been dry for many years.

WESTERVELT'S POND. Once situated in the low ground in Thrifty Valley through which Monroe and Madison Avenues now run. It received the drainage of Vinegar (Cork) Hill, where the Orchard was located.

DUCK POND. Near the corner of the present York and Brighton Avenues, New Brighton. Now filled in.

HARBOR PONDS. In property of Sailors' Snug Harbor. One lies north and one south of Castleton Avenue.

SEXTON'S POND. An artificial extension of Boiling Spring Brook on the Sexton property, Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton.

BARRETT'S POND. A small pond in the Barrett Nursery grounds at the head of Burger Avenue, West New Brighton.

BRITTON'S UPPER POND, BRITTON'S POND OR CLOVE LAKE (MILL POND), MARTLING'S POND OR RICHMOND LAKE, RESERVOIR OR BROOK'S POND, SCHOENLAN'S POND. A series of artificial ponds in the Clove Valley represented on most maps of the Island. The last mentioned has lately been drained.

BLAKE'S OR BROOK'S POND. Artificial pond near the corner of Prospect Street and Manor Road. Walling, 1859. The dam of this pond gave way during the great storm of Sept., 1882, and the torrent demolished the brick and stone bridge at Post Avenue. The dam was not rebuilt.

IRON MINE PONDS. The abandoned iron mines near Four Corners, now filled with water.

VAN BOSKIRK'S OR FACTORY POND. Connected with the N. Y. Dyeing and Print Works, West New Brighton. It is now filled in and it is proposed to lay out several streets upon the newly made land. "Mill Pond, of the N. Y. Dyeing and Printing Establishment, formerly known as Van Boskirk's Pond," is shown on map filed March 20th, 1850, No. 70.

RESERVOIR OR BARRETT'S POND. Back of the Dye Works on Cherry Lane, West New Brighton. Beers, 1874.

BODINE'S POND. Formed by the damming of Palmer's Run and used for many years by various milling industries. The pond was drained some years ago and the wells of the Richmond County Water Co. have been sunk in the remaining marsh. Mill Lane (Columbia Street) and Pond Road (Jewett Avenue) skirted the edges of this pond.

RED LAKE. Between the Morning Star Road and Simonson Avenue, Port Richmond. The pond was formed in the depression made by excavating clay for the Northfield brick works. These works were abandoned some years ago and the pond has lately been drained.

CAPE HENLOPEN. Fifty years ago a small pond on the east side of Van Pelt Avenue, not far from the present Erastina Station, was known as Cape Henlopen. Gradually the name became changed, so that to-day the children about the place know the little pond as Cape Malorea, even sometimes calling it Kate Malorea. At present it contains no cape, but there may have been one in old days, or perhaps its general shape suggested to the fancy of some seafaring resident of Mariners' Harbor the name of Cape Henlopen.

FALSE POND. A small pond several hundred feet east of Cape Henlopen and near Simonson Avenue. It seems to have been known as Paul's Pond, after Paul Mersereau.

LONG POND. A very small pond north of Cape Henlopen. It has been known by this name for many years.

SANDY LEER. Apparently an old name for this, is the Flag Pond, but of late years it has been called Sandy Leer, because an individual by that name once lived on Simonson Avenue, and the pond was back of his garden.

LOG POND. Near Old Place at South Avenue. Log Brook flowed through this small pond which is now drained.

DEAD MAN'S OR SNAKE POND. A small pond on the southerly side of Old Place Road near the bend, and not far from Spirit Point. It is called Dead Man's Pond, because a murdered peddler was thrown into it many years ago.

SEDGE POND. Sedge Pond Creek extends from the Sedge Pond on the Salt Meadows to Old Place Creek.

MERSEREAU'S, CHARLES WOOD'S OR OLD PLACE MILL POND. This pond was constructed in 1804, by David Mersereau, who built the tide mill on Old Place Creek. Bayles, p. 559. Charles Wood's Mill Pond is mentioned in the *Richmond Republican*, February 28th, 1829.

CLIFTON LAKE. Near New York Avenue, in the grounds formerly belonging to Mark Birmingham. Beers, 1874.

FORT POND. In the Fort grounds at the Narrows, near the end of Richmond Avenue.

CONNOR'S OR DUER'S POND. On what was once the Keteltas farm, at Richmond Avenue, Clifton. Beers, 1874. Now filled in.

LILY OR LULING'S POND. On the westerly side of the railroad track between Arrochar and Fort Wadsworth stations.

LEAVITT'S POND. Between Vanderbilt and Simonson Avenues. On what was once the Geo. Leavitt property.

FROG POND. Near Vanderbilt Avenue, in Leavitt's Woods. Now drained.

ON THE CONCORD DOWNS, which are composed of impervious drift material, there are many ponds and swamps. Fifty-two are shown on Vermeule & Bien's map. They are nearly all called ponds by the neighbors, but are, as a rule, only ponds by courtesy, most of them being overgrown with swamp-loving vegetation. The largest of these ponds are here mentioned.

BRADY'S LITTLE POND. On the edge of the Downs, a few feet to the southeast of Simonson Avenue. Also called Duck Pond.

THE SWAMP OR CLIFTON PARK POND. On the edge of the



DANIEL D. TOMPKINS.

Downs, a few hundred feet to the northwest of Simonson Avenue. Clifton Park is shown by Walling, 1859. The pond still has a few trees about it and is used for skating, being more of a pond than a swamp. The Bogie of the newspapers appeared in this pond in July, 1895, and attracted many people by its loud singing. It was probably an escaped specimen of the ordinary "Jug-of-run" bull-frog, that is common enough in parts of New Jersey, but has not, so far, been reported from the Island. Goose Pond is a small pool a few feet to the west of the Swamp and connected with it.

WOOD POND. Lies several hundred feet to the southwest of the Swamp. This small pond has been known by this name for at least fifty years. A still smaller pond near by and to the west is known as the Black Pond.

RADCLIFF'S POND. Northwest of the Swamp and near Vanderbilt Avenue. Now drained.

CHERRY POND. A small pond between the Swamp and Radcliff's Pond. It is now nearly drained. A cherry tree stands on its margin.

ELMORE'S POND. Near the corner of Simonson Place and Oder Avenue.

IPE'S POND. Lies northeast of Steuben Street, and is the largest of the Swamp-ponds of the Concord Downs.

MILLER'S OR HOBLES'S POND. Near Steuben Street, Concord.

FRONKEL'S POND. Close to and southwest of Steuben Street, Concord. Contains an island.

FEST'S POND. Adjoins Fronkel's Pond.

GOTTSCHALK'S POND. Lies southwest of DeKalb Street, Concord. Gottschalk is a too difficult name for many of the neighbors, who have corrupted it into Gunshot.

ISLAND POND. On Fox Hill. A small pond.

WILLOW POND. Included in the bend of the Finger Board Road. Five willows grow on its margin.

BRADY'S POND. Large artificial pond close to railroad track at Grasmere. It occupies the site of the Haunted Swamp. (See Haunted Swamp and Brady's Little Pond.)

WIDMAYER'S OR TRACK POND. Lies close to the railroad track at Grasmere, nearly opposite to Brady's Pond.

WOLFE'S POND. At the shore, below Prince's Bay, northeast of Seguin's Point. Wolfe's Brook flows into this pond.

SALT POND. Close to Light House Hill, at Prince's Bay. So called because the tide flows into it. It has of late years become a marsh.

BROWN'S POND. An old name for a small pond northwest of Light House Hill, Prince's Bay. It is now on the Mt. Loretto grounds and used as an ice pond.

ELLIOTT'S POND OR THE RINK. Near the Amboy Road and Elliott Avenue, Tottenville. This was formerly a swamp, but is now a favorite skating place in winter, hence, one of the names.

THREE MUSK-RAT PONDS. Southeast of Elliott's Pond and near Uncle Ed. Wood's Brook.

LONG POND. To the east of the Three Musk-rat Ponds. Lately enlarged.

WEUR'S MILL POND. At Mill Creek, Tottenville. Walling, 1859.

LYSTER'S OR LAFORGE'S POND. Partly on the Lyster and partly on the LaForge farm, near Mt. Tobey, at Valley Forge. Now nearly drained. The outlet of this pond is a branch of Killifish Brook.

BOGGY MEADOWS. Hollow near the Smith Infirmary, through which Brighton Avenue now passes. A name of thirty or forty years ago. Duck Pond was a feature of the locality.

LOGAN'S SPRING SWAMP. Near Silver Lake. (See Logan's Spring.)

CLOVE LAKE SWAMP. In the Clove Valley and crossed by the Turnpike Road. Often mentioned in connection with the natural history of the Island.

BLOODGOOD'S SWAMP. Near Sand Lane, south of Richmond

Avenue, Clifton. Wm. Bloodgood is represented as owner of considerable land by Blood, 1845.

GARRETSON'S OR SHARROTT'S SWAMP. North of the Finger Board Road, close to where it is crossed by the track of the Staten Island railroad.

LINDEN PARK SWAMP. Below Linden Park, near Garretson's Station. Branches of Perine's Creek drain this swamp. Often mentioned as a locality in connection with the flora of the Island.

HAUNTED SWAMP. By placing a dam near the Finger Board Road, and with the aid of the railroad embankment, this swamp has been converted into Brady's Pond. It received its name from the robberies and murder committed on its edge, on Roguery Hill. (See Roguery Hill.)

REED'S BASKET-WILLOW SWAMP. In the hills, near the Richmond Road at Garretsons. The Reeds, father and son, were basket makers; they grew willows in this swamp and resided in a small house on its margin. In a fit of despondency, after having parted with his property, the younger Reed burned the house to the ground.

BEN WILLIAMS' HAUNTED OR MAGNOLIA SWAMP. To the west of the Amboy Road, between Oakwood and Giffords. "A very worthy old stage driver, named Ben Williams, running a line of stages over the route nearly parallel with that which had been selected for locating the railroad, remarked, on learning that such a road was in contemplation, 'Make a railroad! Where will they get passengers from? I have run my stages for five years, and am not half full most of the time.' " "Hand-book and Business Directory of Staten Island," p. 13.

WOODSIDE LAKE. Near the Finger Board Road and in wet weather connected by a brook with Brady's Pond. Beers, 1874.

VAN WAGENEN'S POND. An old name for Woodside Lake.

OLD TOWN POND. A small pond on the north side of the Old Town Road near the railroad track. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. IV., p. 7.

BUTLER'S POND. South of the railroad track between Garretson's station and Grant City. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. II., p. 75.

WOOLSEY POND. On the old Woolsey place on Todt Hill, close to the Four Corners Road.

JOHNSON'S POND. Near Tyson's Lane, New Dorp. Once a considerable pond, but drained some years ago. Named after Anthony Johnson. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859. Dripps, 1872.

BLACK POND AND MOORE'S POND. On the south side of the Richmond Road, near Moore Street, Richmond. Both have been drained. A bog remains on the site of Black Pond, where cranberries grow in some abundance.

KETCHUM MILL POND. West of Richmond. Mill no longer in existence. Clute, p. 101. Often mentioned in Rep't Staten Is. Imp.

Com. Another mill pond was once situated further up Ketchum's Brook, on the southeast side of Forest Hill Road. The remains of the old dam may still be seen.

HALL'S GUN FACTORY POND OR WILLOW BROOK POND. An artificial pond at Willow Brook. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859.

STANDRING'S POND. Close to and southeast of the Gun Factory Pond. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874.

CROCHERON MILL POND OR BULL'S HEAD POND. Near Sign's Road at Bull's Head. The mill is no longer in existence.

SAW MILL POND. Near Egbertville. Both mill and artificial pond are gone.

GEIB'S MILL POND. At the old tide mill on Richmond Creek below the hill where the British Fort was located. It was formerly known as the Crocheron Mill Pond. Dripps, 1850. The mill was advertised for sale in the *Staaten Islander* during 1857.

MILL POND AT GREEN RIDGE. An arm of Richmond Creek dammed in order to form a head of water for the old Henry Bedell tide mill. Beers, 1874. Bedell's Mill Pond was once called Seguire's Pond, advertisement *Richmond Republican*, October 4th, 1828; also Michéau's Pond, advertisement *Staaten Islander*, September 9th, 1857.

LAKE'S MILL POND. A tide mill pond at Great Kill that used to operate the old Lake mill, which has lately fallen into ruins.

CLAY PONDS. Some of the clay diggings at the brick works near Green Ridge have become filled with water and are locally known as the Clay Ponds.

SEGUIRE'S POND. At the shore, below Amadale station. This was one of the most beautiful ponds on the Island before the timber was cleared away from its margin.

LA TOURETTE'S POND OR ARBUTUS LAKE. At the shore below Huguenot station on the old La Tourette farm. The Trailing Arbutus or May flower used to grow in considerable abundance in the vicinity and gave to the pond its latter-day name, which is sometimes corrupted into Brutus Lake. A bulkhead recently built has caused the sand to form at the shore end of this pond and prevents the salt water from entering it.

BOYLSTED'S SWAMP. Shown by Bew, 1781, but made to cover so much territory that its position is uncertain. The Haunted or Magnolia Swamp, however, appears to occupy a portion of the ground.

DECKER'S SWAMP. West of Beach Avenue, at Richmond Valley, Westfield. The Sand Ridges form the western boundary of this swamp.

CHRISTOPHER'S SWAMP. Near the Billopp House, Tottenville.

ELLIS' SWAMP. Crossed by the Fresh Kills Road at Kreischer-ville. Gene's Creek extends into this swamp.

FREEMAN WINANT'S SWAMP. Southwest of Union or New Springville Road, on the edge of Neck Creek meadow. The Crystal Water Company has located wells at this point.

CROCHERON'S SWAMP. Southwest of Union or New Springville Road, on the edge of Dock Creek meadow. New Springville Brook flows through this swamp.

VREELAND'S SWAMP. On both sides of Union or New Springville Road, between Crocheron's and Freeman Winant's Swamp. Vreeland's Brook flows through this swamp into Dock Creek.

GREAT SWAMP. Extends from the present Graniteville to New Springville. Mentioned in the patent to Palmer in 1687. Bayles, p. 115. Chute, p. 59.

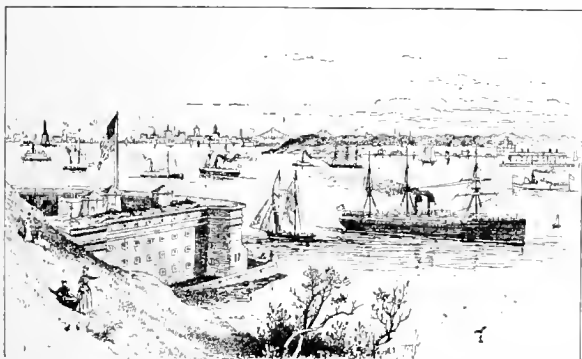
LONG CREPLEBUSH. "Petition of John Shadwell, of the county of Richmond, praying that 8 or 10 acres of land, lying between his lot and the long creplebush, in said county, may be surveyed in order that he may obtain a patent for the same." Land Papers, 1702. There was a Cripple Bush on New York Island, as appears from the following: "One Lott of Ground Lying and being near the Crupple Bush." *New York Weekly Journal*, December, 1734. "Bestevaer's Cripple Bush, was the Dutch name for what was afterward called Beekman's Swamp, covered by the present Ferry, Gold and adjacent streets." "Bestevaar's Cripplebush, or the Old Man's Swamp." Valentine's Manual, p. 469, 1856; p. 545, 1860 and 1864.

HILLEKER'S SWAMP. Crossed by Merrill Road, near Watchogue.

PINE TREE SWAMP. Near Lambert's Lane, Watchogue, and north of Hilleker's Swamp. Also known as Magnolia Swamp. Pine Tree Swamp is mentioned in the *Richmond Republican*, March 18th, 1831.

THE SWAMP. A local name for the small swamp on Bard Avenue, near where the Morgan residence now stands.

FLATS. The best known are the Stapleton Flats (Bayles, p. 304), located at the foot of Prospect Street. They were made by digging away Prospect Hill and filling in along the shore. The level ground at Brighton Point (St. George) was also once known as the Flats.



FORT RICHMOND IN FORT WADSWORTH ON THE NARROWS.

BAKER'S FIELD.

At Montgomery and Mouroe Avenues, New Brighton. A well-known children's play ground about 1870.

THE FRESH MEADOW. In Logan's Spring Valley, north of Silver Lake. Named in the Palmer or Dongan patent, in 1687 (Bayles, p. 115); also in deed

of Dongan's trustees to Hendrick Hendrickson. In the Phillip Welles patent the Fresh Meadow is mentioned as near a "great rock stone."

GREAT PLAIN. Said to have been the comparatively level tract to the east of the Great Swamp. The following is from a notice of sale at public auction contained in the *Richmond Republican*, Feb'y 5th, 1831: " * * all that certain tract or parcel of land, situate, lying and being in the county of Richmond and state of New York, and in the town of Castleton, at or near a place formerly called soldier's lots, in the rear of the land patented to Cornelius Corson and others, on the great plain."

LITTLE PLAINS. "Petition of Samuel Blachford, praying that a lot of land lying upon ye little plains, adjoining to ye soldiers lots on Staten Island, may be laid out for him." Land Papers, 1683.

NEW DORP PLAINS. The level country about New Dorp Lane, Higginson, 1860. Report Staten Is. Imp. Com., pp. 74, 79. *Staten Islander*, Feb'y 16th, 1856.

GREAT KILL MEADOW. At Great Kill, and mentioned in advertisement in *Richmond Republican*, May 29th, 1830. The wet land along the edge of the meadow is locally known as "The Bogs."

THE MEADOWS. A local name for the low land between Ward's Point and the Cove, Westfield.

FERTILE PLAIN. Between Benedict's Creek and the Fresh Kills Road. Walling, 1859. Named on the various editions of Colton's Road Map of Staten Island.

BUCKRAM FIELD. The field south of the Dye Works at Broadway, West New Brighton. Soldiers were encamped there during the last war.

BUTT FIELD. Near the Morning Star Road, at Red Lake. Well known to the neighbors as a ball ground, and called the Butt Field, because in one portion of it there are stones and stumps, the latter, however, now mostly removed.

OLD BLUE-BENT FIELD. The public school building on Andros Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, stands on part of the Old Blue-Bent Field. The name was applied to a tract of sandy land where the blue-bent or beard-grass (*Andropogon*) still grows in abundance, and where the Indians lived in old time, as evinced by their implements still to be found in the field.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

OLD LOCATIONS—NAMES AND NICKNAMES—CONCLUDED.



INDIAN, DECKER'S, RYERS', HILLEKER'S AND MER-SEREAU'S FERRIES. At what is now known as Port Richmond. Clute, pp. 221, 309. Bayles, pp. 172, 202-246, 560, 684. Decker's Ferry is on Bew's map, 1781, and is mentioned under date of 1777 in Valentine's Manual, 1863. Ryers' ferry is on map, 1797, and on Eddy's map of 1812. John Ryers ran an opposition to John Hilleker's ferry. David Mersereau bought out both of these ferries. In the County Clerk's office there is a "Map of Land at Irington or Mersereau's ferry, Staten Island," surveyed, 1842 (No. 28).

DACOSTA'S FERRY. Placed on Bew's Map, 1781, to the west of the Dutch Church, at what is now Port Richmond.

SCHUYLER'S FERRY, ELIZABETHPORT AND STATEN ISLAND FERRY. In 1762 Adoniah Schuyler operated a ferry between Elizabethtown Point and the Island. Bayles, p. 684. In 1851 the Elizabethport and Staten Island Ferry Co. was organized and service maintained for a period.

DE HART'S FERRY. Located 500 to 600 feet east of the New Brighton landing at the foot of Jersey St. In 1747 Jacob de Hart petitioned Gov. Geo. Clinton for letters patent for a public ferry. He had operated the ferry for some time previous to his petition.

BEEK'S AND CORSEN'S FERRIES. On May 15, 1747-8, a petition in opposition to De Hart was presented by neighboring property owners. "John Beek and Jacob Corssen have for some years past, used to carry travellers from their lands to the City of New York and to the opposite shores of New Jersey * * *."

COMES' FERRY. In 1747, Solomon Comes having purchased De Hart's farm before any decision upon De Hart's petition had been reached, renewed this petition: "Petition of Solomon Comes for a ferry between Staten Island and New York, &c." "Petition that his ferry between Staten Island and New York, may be declared a public ferry." Land Papers, 1747, 1748. Comes' petition was granted.

VAN TUYL'S OR VAN TYLE'S FERRY. To the west of Comes', formerly De Hart's, ferry. "Petition of Otto Van Tyle and others, against granting Jacob de Hart a patent for a ferry between their land and the river, and the land between high and low water mark (Staten Island) with caveat." Land Papers, 1747.

GOZEN RYERSON'S FERRY. At the east end of Staten Island at the entrance to the Kills. Bayles, p. 683. In the minutes of the Common Council for March 29th, 1785, there is a memorandum stating that the Staten Island ferry was sold for the term of three years, from May 1st, 1786, to Gozen Ryerson for £20 per annum payable quarterly.

STILL HOUSE LANDING. Named from a distillery built by Capt. Thomas Lawrence on a small wharf at the present New Brighton landing at the foot of Jersey St. Bayles, p. 82. Director Kieft founded a brandy still on the Island in 1640, which was the first manufactory of spirituous liquors in America.

SOME OTHER NORTH SHORE FERRIES were the New Brighton Ferry, maintained by Thomas E. Davis, Griswold and Nathan Barrett, who ran the steamboat "New Brighton" in 1837 or 1838; George Law's ferry from 1859 to 1864; the North Shore Staten Island Ferry Co., purchasers of George Law's ferry, 1860 to 1877; New York and Staten Island Steamboat Co., successors to the last mentioned company, from 1877 to 1884, when the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company commenced operations.

WATSON'S, DUCKET'S, DARBY DOYLE'S, WM. LEAKE'S, COLE'S AND VAN DUZER'S FERRIES. According to Faden's map of 1776, Doyle's ferry was at the present Stapleton, at or near the Basin. Cole's ferry is often mentioned in the accounts of the Revolution. It was at the end of the Richmond Road, at its junction with the present Bay St., and later became known as Van Duzer's ferry. Property belonging to Edward Perine and wife is described in 1801 as: "Beginning from south side of Main road leading from Van Duzer's Ferry to Richmond Town at the northeast corner of John Bodine's land," &c. Van Duzer's periauger ferry seems to have been in operation from before 1788 to 1817. It is shown by Eddy, 1812. The old Van Duzer homestead has only recently fallen into ruins. "Vanduzer's Old Landing" is shown by Dripps, 1850. Bayles, pp. 143, 185, 202, 242, 326, 683, 684.

VANDERBILT'S PERLAUGER FERRY. Plied between what is now Stapleton and New York from about 1800 to 1817. This ran in opposition to Van Duzer's Ferry.

DOVE AND BELLUE'S FERRY. "The statement in the petition and the Governor's warrant that there was a public road leading to the 'place on the easternmost part of Staten Island called Sand Bay, very convenient for travelers and transporting of goods and the posts,' taken in connection with an ancient map of Staten Island made by S. Bellin in 1764, found in Valentine's New York City Manual for 1861, page 597, shows quite conclusively that the Staten Island end of this ferry was at the foot of Cliff Street, just south of the present Quarantine officer's station in Clifton, about a mile below Vanderbilt or Clifton Landing, and on the line of the present Fingerboard Road, which undoubtedly formed in those days part of the Old Amboy Road over

which the posts traveled on their way from the mainland to the city." Mayor, &c., of New York against Starin, &c., Argument for Defendants, p. 6. (See Sand Bay.)

NARROWS FERRY. "Silvanus Seamans, who keeps the upper ferry, at the Narrows, on Staten Island side, having good boats for that purpose, proposes, besides the proper attendance at the said ferry, constantly to keep a passage boat to go from thence to the city of New York, which will certainly set out every Tuesday and Friday, and return the same day if possible, and at any other time, if passage or freight presents. All gentlemen and others may depend on the best usage and care, either of themselves, horses or goods of any kind; he also keeps very good entertainment for men and horses. On either of those days the boat may be found in New York by inquiring at Mr. John Cregier's, a corner house at the Old Slip." *N. Y. Weekly Post Boy*, July, 1745. (Reprinted in Valentine's Manual, 1862.) The "Narrows Ferry" is marked on Faden's map, 1776. Frederick Simonson owned a ferry at the Narrows in 1777. Bayles, pp. 143, 171, 681, 684. "This is to inform the public that John Lane now keeps the ferry at Yellow Hook on Long Island, six miles below New York Ferry, and has provided good boats, well fitted with proper hands, and will be ready at all times, wind and weather permitting, to go to Smith's Ferry, on Staten Island with a single man only. N.B.—Travelers are directed to observe in going from Flatbush to Sand Ferry, to keep the marked trees at the right hand." Reprinted in Valentine's Manual, 1855, p. 571, from an old newspaper of 1753.

TOMPKINS' OR QUARANTINE LANDING. The ferry landing at Tompkinsville (see Quarantine). "The Steam Boat Bolivar, Capt. Oliver Vanderbilt, and the steam boat Nautilus, Capt. Robert Hazard, will take passengers to and from New York to the Quarantine Dock, Nautilus Hall, Mount Pleasant Garden, Planter's Hotel, and Union Garden, Staten Island, and start as follows: Leave Staten Island at 7 a. m., at 8 a. m., at 10 a. m., at half past 12 p. m., at half past 2, at half past 4, and at 6 o'clock. Leave Whitehall, New York, at 8 a. m., and at 10 a. m., at half past 12 p. m., at half past 2, at half past 4, at half past 5, and at 7 o'clock. Fare each way, 12 and a half cents." Advertisement in *Richmond Republican*, June, 1828. "For Freight or Charter.—The fast-sailing Periauger, New York, of 34 tons, will take in freight or passengers for New York or the adjacent country, on the most moderate terms. For freight or passage apply to John Kettletas, Tompkinsville." Advertisement in *Richmond Republican*, December 22d, 1827. Tompkins' and Staples' Ferry is mentioned in advertisement in *New York Herald* of 1835. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. III., p. 60.

FIRST, SECOND AND THIRD LANDINGS. Before the present rapid transit system, Tompkinsville Landing, at the foot of Arietta St., was often called First Landing; Stapleton Landing at the foot of

Canal St., Second Landing, and Clifton Landing, near the foot of Vanderbilt Ave., Vanderbilt's or Third Landing.

VANDERBILT'S LANDING. Near the foot of Vanderbilt Avenue, Clifton. Named after Cornelius Vanderbilt. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874. A name in much use until recent years.

SOME OTHER EAST SHORE FERRIES were Tompkins' & Brown's Steamboat ferry, operated from 1817 to 1827; the Fulton Bank ferry, from 1827 to 1833; Richmond Turnpike Co.'s ferry, from 1833 to 1845; C. Vanderbilt's ferry, from 1845 to 1855; Jacob L. Smith's ferry (dease in his name), from 1856 to 1867. George Law was chief owner in the Smith ferry and sold it to the Staten Island Rail Road Company in 1863 or 1864, who continued its management until the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company got control.

SEGUINE'S LANDING. At Seguire's Point, Westfield. Mentioned in advertisement in the *Richmond County Mirror*, Aug. 11th, 1838.

AMBOY, BILLOPP'S, DOTE'S (DOTY'S) AND BUTLER'S FERRIES. At Tottenville. "These are to inform all persons that there is a ferry settled from Amboy over to Staten Island, which is duly attended for the convenience of those that have occasion to pass and re-pass that way. The ferriage is fourteen pence, Jersey currency, for man and horse, and five pence for a single passenger." Reprinted in Valentine's Manual, 1862, p. 715, from an old newspaper of July, 1737. Amboy Ferry is on Bew's map, 1781. Bayles, pp. 143, 681, 684. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. III, p. 54. Map, 1797. (See Philadelphia Turnpike.)

TOTTEN'S LANDING. At the foot of the present Main or Totten St., Tottenville. Dripps, 1850.

ELTING'S LANDING. At the present Kreischerville. Dripps, 1850.

BLAZING STAR FERRY. Generally called "Old Blazing Star," was formerly known as Smoking Point. About 1835, it was changed to Rossville, in honor of Colonel Ross, who located there and built the neat residence now known as the Lyon mansion. Notice of the change is made in the *Richmond County Mirror*, 1837. Mentioned in Clute, p. 73. Bayles, 192, 682. On Map, 1797.

NEW BLAZING STAR FERRY. On Long Neck, where the present Linoleumville is situated. Bayles, pp. 192, 682, 684. Map, 1797. (See Philadelphia Turnpike). The "New Ferry" is shown by Eddy, 1812. "Ferry at Blazing Star. Francis B. Fitch respectfully informs the Public that he has once more started the above Ferry, for which he has built a first-rate Scow, and as soon as the traveling will warrant, he intends adding a Horse-Boat, and no exertion or expense on his part will be wanting to secure public patronage. The Turnpike to Quarantine (it being only seven miles) is now in complete order, as also the Turnpike to New Brunswick, twelve miles. The road to Rah-

way, Milton, Westfield, etc., is also in good repair. *Blazing Star*, Nov. 24th, 1827." *Adv. in Richmond Republican*, Nov. 24, 1827.

Under the colonial government, Richmond County was divided in March, 1688, into Castletown, Northfield, Southfield, and Westfield. Under the State government, act of March 7th, 1788, these divisions were again made and their boundaries fixed. The town of Middletown was not organized until 1860. As might be supposed, portions of the boundaries of the original four towns were fixed by some of the old roads. Thus, on the map of 1797 the west boundary of Castletown (now the west boundary of Castleton and Middletown) is shown as a single road leading from the present Watchogue Road to the Richmond Road, and is described as leading to Houghwout's Mill, and "as it runs along by Richard Conners to the Tavern called the Rose and Crown, on the said Road leading to Richmond-Town." This single road, which extends in a general way north and south, has received different sectional names. Thus, the part from the Watchogue Road to Willow Brook is known as the Willow Brook Road (Beers, 1874); the following southeasterly stretch as the Summer Field Road (Beers, 1874); then the southwesterly stretch as the Manor Road, and then the following southeasterly stretch as the Saw Mill, Conner or Egbertville Road. This naming has come about by the opening of new roads that are direct continuations of parts of the old zigzag highway, leaving it as a whole, a short cut to nowhere.

KING'S HIGHWAY. The Richmond Road. Bayles, p. 223. "Petition of Jacob Galliot and others, of Richmond county, for a warrant to lay out a cartway from their lands to the King's Highway." Land Papers, 1707. This road is described in 1801 as "main road leading from Van Duzer's Ferry." "Richmond Road to Quarantine" is shown on map of property purchased by the Staten Island Association, filed in March, 1839, No. 22; also on other maps of about the same date. "Road from Richmond Village to the Quarantine" is shown on map of the John Britton farm, filed Oct. 29th, 1853, No. 125.

RICHMOND PLANK ROAD FROM VANDERBILT'S LANDING TO ROSSVILLE. "Map of the Richmond Plank Road from Vanderbilt's Landing to Rossville, 10.297 miles, J. B. Bacon, Surveyor, Staten Island," 1853. Filed 30th June, 1853, No. 114. The roads leading into this highway are the following, the names in parenthesis being additional to those given on the above mentioned map: Shore Road. (Bay Street. Beers, 1874.) Old Richmond Road. Clove Road. Fingerboard Road. Old Town Road. Castleton Road. (Four Corners Road. Beers, 1874.) New Dorp Lane. Amboy Road. Manor Road. (Saw-Mill, corner of Egbertville Road.) Gifford's Lane. Port Richmond Plank Road. (Seaside Avenue. Beers, 1874.) South Side Road. (Annadale Road.) Road to South Side. (Journeay Avenue. Beers, 1874.) Washington Avenue. Killi-fish Road. (Swain's, or Laforge's Lane.) Woodrow Road. (Shea's Lane, road to Woodrow, &c.)

On several maps filed in 1843 and 1854, appears the "Richmond Plank Road," the "Plank Road from Vanderbilt's Landing," or the "Richmond Plank Road to Vanderbilt's Landing." In the *Staten Islander* of Jan. 23d, 1856, it is stated that the Richmond Plank Road Company has paid 14 per cent., and is now paying a dividend of 20 per cent.

SHORE TRAIL. The Shore Road or Richmond Terrace. Said to have been an Indian trail. The road formerly ran all the way around the shore from Mariner's Harbor to the old Tompkinsville Landing, but when the Quarantine hospitals were built, that end of the road was closed. "Shore Road to Mersereau's Ferry" is shown on map of Simonson's property, filed June 18, 1834. No. 6.

HALEY'S LANE. An old name for Davis Avenue, West New Brighton.

PARKER AVENUE. An old name for Davis Avenue. Given by Walling, 1859. Shawmut Avenue was a proposed name for Davis Avenue. (Beers, 1874.)

ELLIOTT PLACE. An old name for First Street (Beers, 1874), now Livingston Place, at Livingston.

MILL LANE. The present Columbia Street. Bayles, pp. 5, 207. Clute, p. 97.

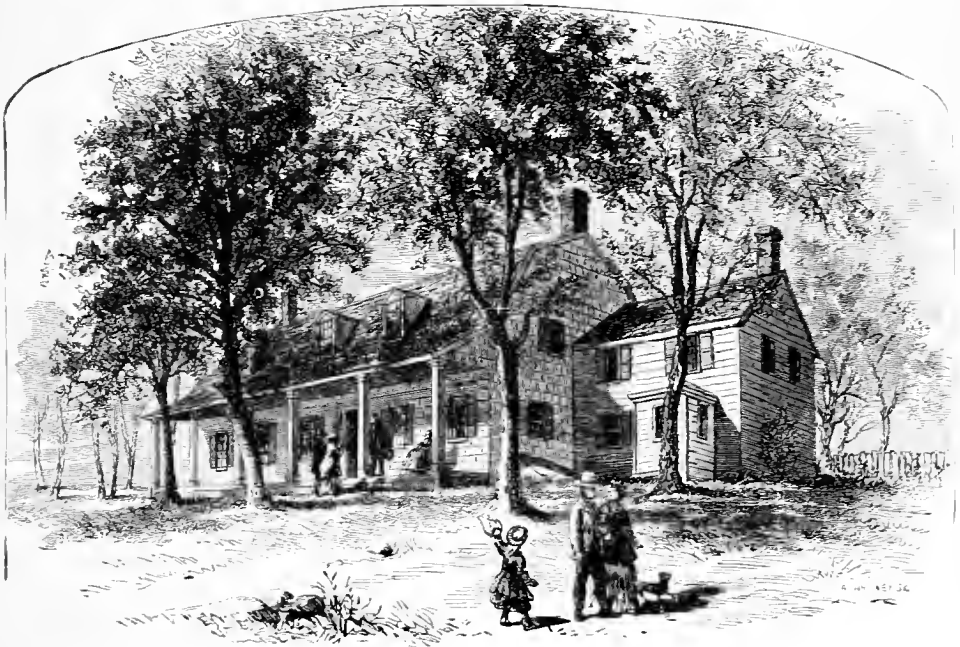
POND ROAD. The present Jewett or Division Avenue. Beers, 1874. Bayles, p. 5.

LITTLE POND ROAD. Same as Little Clove Road. Driggs, 1872.

ELLINGWOOD ROAD. Many of the iron mines on Ocean Terrace were situated on the Ellingwood property and the Ellingwood or Iron Mines Road lead to them from the Little Clove Road. The northern portion of the Ocean Terrace Road of the present maps represents a part of the old Ellingwood Road. The Douglass Road, the most tortuous private or public highway on the Island, was also partly on the Ellingwood property. Beers, 1874. Advertisement State Tax Sale, 1890.

PHILADELPHIA TURNPIKE. Report Staten Island Improvement Commission, p. 73. Same as Richmond Turnpike, which was once the post and stage road to Philadelphia. That portion of the Turnpike, from its present junction with the Little Clove Road to the head of what is now known as Jewett Avenue, is represented on the map of 1797. The remainder of the road, both to the east and west of this section, was laid out in 1815 and 1816 by the "Richmond Turnpike Company," as appears from the following, copied from the session laws of 1815, act of March 31st, page 119. "Be it enacted &c. that all such persons as shall associate themselves together for the purpose of making a good and sufficient turnpike road in the most direct and practical route from a point on the easterly side of Staten Island within one mile of the marine hospital or Quarantine Ground in the County of Richmond to the westerly shore of said Staten Is-

land at such point on the said westerly shore as may be in the most direct line from the place of beginning to the City of New Brunswick in the State of New Jersey, and a branch of said road in the most direct route to Amboy Ferry shall be and hereby are created a body corporate and politic by the name and style of Richmond Turnpike Company." The Session laws of 1817, page 17, Dec. 1, declares that it shall not be necessary for the Richmond Turnpike Co. to make a branch to Amboy Ferry from the road already completed by them leading from the Bay of New York to the New Blazing Star Ferry and they are thereby released from the same. The New Blazing Star Road is shown on map finished Oct. 12th, 1793, and filed Feb'y 7th, 1852, No. 89. The Turnpike was sometimes called the Governor's Road, that is, Gov. Tompkins' Road, because he was instrumental in having it laid out.



OLD MORAVIAN CHURCH AND PARSONAGE, AT NEW DORP.

LONG NECK ROAD. Rept. Staten Is. Imp. Com., p. 73. Same as Richmond Turnpike.

OLD BURYING HILL ROAD. At Travisville. Extends from Cannon Avenue past what is now Sylvan Cemetery, to the Turnpike.

CHURCH ROAD, PORT RICHMOND PLANK ROAD, STONE ROAD. Road leading from Port Richmond to New Springville. Known at first as the Church Road, then as the Port Richmond Plank Road, then as the Stone Road, and now called Richmond Avenue. This old highway is a direct continuation of the Morning Star Road at Graniteville, and it is to be regretted that when the change of name

was made, that Morning Star was not preferred. Map of the Port Richmond and Fresh Kills Plank Road. Filed 15th March, 1852. No. 95. "Port Richmond and Fresh Kills Plank Road Company. The annual election of a Board of Directors of this Company will take place at the office of the Company at Marshland, on Wednesday, March 5th, at 12 M. By order of the Board of Directors. Dated, Marshland, Feb'y 6th, 1856. H. I. Seaman, Secretary." Advertisement in *Staaten Islander*, March 1st, 1856. "B'd N. by Springville Cemetery, E. by Stone road, and S. & W. by land of Cortlandt Crocheron and others; with house, $8\frac{1}{2}$ acres." , Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec., 1890.

GARRETSON'S ROAD. Dripps, 1872.

SOUTH BROADWAY. Beers, 1874. Garretson's Road or South Broadway, also once known as a part of the Port Richmond and Fresh Kills Plank Road, is the road leading from New Springville to Green Ridge. Garretson's toll bridge across Richmond Creek fell into ruins some years since. It connected Eltingville or Seaside Avenue (Plank Road, Higginson, 1860) in Westfield, with the Church or Port Richmond Plank Road (Stone Road) in Northfield. The Port Richmond and Fresh Kills Plank Road and the Plank Road from Vanderbilt Landing, are shown on map of land, belonging to Obadiah Bowne, Esq., situate in Westfield, Richmond Co., N. Y. Filed Nov. 9th, 1853. No. 128. Garretson's Road is occasionally called Bridge Avenue, and also the Old Turnpike. (See Fresh Kills Bridge.)

MORGAN'S ROAD. Previous to the construction of Garretson's Road or South Broadway, there was an old road leading along the edge of the meadow on the westerly side of Karle's Neck. Several of the farms were occupied at that time by members of the Morgan family, and we have called it Morgan's Road. When the Plank Road was built the old one fell into disuse, and is now grass grown, and, as a highway, neglected.

WATCHOGUE, BUTCHERVILLE OR SNAKE ROAD. Starts where the Pond Road (Jewett Avenue) meets the Turnpike and runs a serpentine course to the Church or Stone Road. That portion from Four Corners to the Willow Brook Road is laid down on the map of 1797 and is among the oldest roads of the Island, but as far as observed is not named on the maps, though generally known as the Watchogue or Butcherville Road. It is sometimes referred to as the Snake Road on account of its serpentine course.

KRUSE ROAD. That part of the Willow Brook Road between the Watchogue Road and the Church Road or Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond. It is one of the oldest roads on the Island and is on the map of 1797. Beers, 1874, calls it the "Kruse or Wilson Brook Road."

GUN FACTORY ROAD. A name for the Willow Brook Road. The gun factory was at Willow Brook and is shown by Dripps, 1850.

Walling, 1859. Gun Factory Road is mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

NEW ROAD. An extension of the Willow Brook Road, by which name it is generally known.

FOREST HILL ROAD. An extension of that part of the Willow Brook Road known as the New Road. It is crossed by Jones or Rockland Avenue, and is called by Beers, 1874, the Port Richmond Road. "B'd by Rockland Avenue, E. by land of Judge Gildersleeve, S. by land formerly of Samuel Decker and W. by Forest Hill Road; with house. 7 acres." Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec. 1890.

MANOR ROAD AND EGBERT AVENUE. Only a part of what is now known as the Manor Road, which derives its name from the Dongan Manor, is on the map of 1797. It is said to have been laid out at an early period. Bayles, p. 118. This road runs southerly from West New Brighton through Castleton Corners to its junction with the road from Todt Hill, then westerly to Bradley's Road and then southerly again to the Egbertville Road. Beers, 1874. That portion from Bradley's Road to the Richmond Road (including the Egbertville or Saw Mill Road) is the old 1797 highway, and is sometimes referred to as the Manor Road. (See Richmond Plank Road from Vanderbilt's Landing to Rossville.) That portion from Bradley's Road to the Egbertville or Saw Mill Road, is occasionally called Rosewood Avenue (Higginson, 1860), and also the Poor House Road. The Manor Road is shown on the map of Rose Hill Park (Unkart property) filed 20th of October, 1870. No. 294. Egbert Avenue is a direct southerly continuation of that section of the Manor Road leading directly from Castleton Corners, and is therefore often, in error, called the Manor Road. It, however, forks from the Manor where the latter turns to the west and it joins the Egbertville Road mentioned above, about a mile further to the east. Dripps, 1850, calls it Egbert's Avenue. It is Egbert Avenue of Walling, 1859, and Beers, 1874.

PETTICOAT LANE. Jones' Road or Rockland Avenue, in Northfield. Jones' Road once joined that part of the Willow Brook Road known as the New Road, much further to the north than it does at present, coming out near what is now the poor house farm.

SAW MILL OR CONNER ROAD. Old names for the road commencing at the corner of Rockland Avenue and the Manor Road, and extending to the Richmond Road, at Egbertville, and now sometimes called the Egbertville Road. (See Manor Road.) The saw mill was located on Saw Mill Brook, and was operated by Richard Conner, whose residence stood near by. This road is shown but not named on map, 1797. The original town of Castleton was bounded by the "road leading to Haughwout's Mill," (Bayles, p. 326) which is evidently this and a part of the present Willow Brook and Manor Roads. This and the later constructed Jones' Road (Rockland Avenue) taken

as one, is called Richmond Road, by Higginson, 1860. "Connor Avenue" is mentioned in advertisement State Tax Sale, 1895.

POVERTY LANE. The road "from Springville to Richmond," Beers, 1871. New Springville Road. This is one of the old roads and is on the map of 1791.

DOCK ROAD. Leading from New Springville dock to the Stone Road. Not named on the maps. A branch of this road, called Morgan's Road, extends southward along the edge of the meadow. When Garretson's Road was opened, this part was abandoned and is now a grass grown lane.

EGBERT'S LANE. Described in 1788 as being the western boundary of the town of Southfield; now Gifford's Lane. Bayles, p. 327.

LAMBERT'S LANE. Leads from the Stone Road to Watchogue and is named on most maps of the Island. It was called after Lambert Merrill, a carpenter by trade, whose housekeeper, Nancy Juson, according to the firm belief of the neighbors, was a veritable witch.

THE LONG, LONG LANE THAT HAS NO TURNING. A nickname for Merrill Road, Watchogue, that for nearly a mile is perfectly straight.

OLD PLACE ROAD. Leads from Graniteville to Old Place. Now sometimes called Washington Avenue.

OLD QUARRY ROAD. Leading from the quarry on Quarry Hill, Graniteville, to the shore. Shown by Dripps, 1850, and Walling, 1859.

SAND ROAD. An old name for Van Pelt Avenue, Mariners' Harbor.

NEW ROAD. An old name for the Harbor Road, Mariners' Harbor.

THOMPSON'S ROAD. South Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, was once well known as, and is still occasionally called Thompson's Road. "South or Thompson Avenue" is shown by Walling, 1859. The name South Avenue was given it in 1817 when a map of the property was filed at Richmond.

WESTERN ROAD. Leading from Holland's Hook to Old Place. This road has been known as Collyer's Road, Bowman's Road, the New Road and the Meadow Road.

DUNBURY ST. Named after Ellis Duxbury, and an old name for Tompkins Avenue. "Duxbury Street or road leading from the Quarantine to the north shore," is mentioned in the Abstract of the Title of Thomas E. Davis to Certain Lands in Castleton, pp. 12, 38.

FOUNTAIN ST. Named after Garrit Fountain and now known as South Street. Mentioned in the Abstract of the Title of Thomas E. Davis to Certain Lands in Castleton. Livingston Street and Thompson Street are also mentioned in the Davis abstract, but they were never laid out.

LAWRENCE ST. An old name for Stuyvesant Place and part of Richmond Terrace. This street and Daniel Street, which occupied

nearly the same ground as the present Wall Street, are mentioned in the Davis abstract, but the names were changed on the New Brighton Association Map, filed in 1836.

WASHINGTON CRESCENT. Shown on map of the New Brighton Association, as occupying nearly the same site as the present crescent-shaped Hamilton Avenue. Madison Street, lying east of Jay Street, Nassau Street and Catlin Avenue, are also shown on this map. They have never been laid out.

RICHMOND STREET. An old name for St. Paul's Avenue, Tompkinsville. Blood, 1815. (See Mud Lane.)

GORE STREET. Now called Broad Street, Stapleton. Clute, p. 270.

COURSEN AVENUE. An old name for Vanderbilt Avenue, Clifton. This road passes through what were once the Coursen and Metcalfe farms. Coursen Avenue is shown on "Map of Property Purchased by the Staten Island Association, Situated at the Narrows, Staten Island, near New York." Filed March, 1839. No. 22.

WOOD ROAD. Blood, 1815. Dripps, 1872. An old name for St. Mary's Avenue, Clifton. "Wood Road" was also used in the sense of a locality.

ROGUERY HILL ROAD. An old name for the Finger Board Road. Clute, p. 232.

CLIFTON AVENUE. A proposed name for the Finger Board Road on map of Oaklands, filed Dec. 21st, 1857. No. 159.

BEACH AVENUE. A proposed name for New Dorp Lane on map of Oceanville, filed April 19th, 1853. No. 110.

FOX AVENUE. An old name for the present Broadway leading from the Amboy Road, between Annadale and Huguenot, to the shore.

WOODVAIL ROAD. Leading from the Amboy Road to the shore. Beers, 1874. Mr. Wood owned property on one side of this road and Mr. Vail on the other, and in laying out the highway they combined their lands and names.

SHARROTT'S ROAD. Old name for Prince's Bay Avenue (not Prince's Bay Road). Beers, 1874.

SEGUINE'S ROAD. Dripps, 1872. Same as Prince's Bay Road. Beers, 1874.

WINANT'S LANE. Now known as Annadale Road. An old road; on map, 1797.

SWAIM'S OR LA FORGE'S LANE. Leads from Valley Forge to the Woodrow Road. Called Killi-fish Road on "Map of the Richmond Plank Road from Vanderbilt's Landing to Rossville."

SHEA'S LANE. Still so called on the maps but efforts have been made to change the name to New York Avenue and later to Rossville Avenue. Sometimes referred to on maps, &c., as "Road to Woodrow."

FERRY ROAD. An old name for Shea's Lane. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. III., p. 53.

BLOOMINGDALE ROAD. An old name for the road leading from Pleasant Plains to Rossville, now known as the Rossville Road. The part nearest Rossville is also called the Red Road.

BENTLEY DOCK ROAD. An old name for Bentley Road Tottenville. Beers, 1874, calls it Bentling Road.

GREEN RIDGE AVENUE. A proposed name for Journeay Avenue, Westfield.

SUNNY OR LOVERS' LANE. Hamilton Avenue, New Brighton.

LOVERS' LANE. Tree-shaded Pendleton Avenue; also, First Street, New Brighton.

MUD LANE. St. Paul's Avenue, Edgewater. Bayles, p. 420. St. Paul's Avenue was once called Richmond Street. Blood, 1845.



THE "EDWARDS" OR "SCOTT" HOMESTEAD, WEST NEW BRIGHTON.

PIG ALLEY. First Street, New Brighton. Also called Lovers' Lane. Honeymoon Row (the name needs no explanation) extends along the south side of this endearing little street.

COD-FISH LANE. Fifth Street, New Brighton.

DUCK LANE. Nautilus Street, Clifton.

RED LANE. Lincoln Avenue or First Avenue, Grant City, Southfield. Probably owes its name to the fact that much oxide of iron is contained in the soil which gives the road a red color.

THE GLEBE. A farm in Castleton, of 200 acres, bequeathed to St. Andrew's church by Ellis Duxbury in 1718. Bayles, pp. 242, 395. This farm included the present St. George landing (Duxbury's Point), the Light House Department grounds, the old Quarantine and the vicinity.

QUARANTINE. Central Avenue, New Brighton, passes through

what was once the Quarantine of the port of New York, established on Staten Island in 1799. Blood, 1845. Dripps, 1850. The Lazaretto of Eddy, 1812. (See Philadelphia Turnpike.) The *Richmond Republican*, for March 29, 1828, contains the following advertisement: "Quarantine and Richmond Stage. The public is respectfully informed that a Stage will commence running to and from the Quarantine ground and Richmond, on Saturday, the 29th of March inst., and will leave Richmond every morning at half past 6 o'clock, so as to take the Steam Boat for New York at 8. And will leave the Quarantine, for Richmond, every afternoon on the arrival of the Boat from New York, until further notice. Good Stages and horses and a careful driver have been procured. Fare each way 37½ cts., intermediate distances, 6 cts. per mile.

D. DENYSE, }
J. FOUNTAIN, } Proprietors."

The steamboat landing at Tompkinsville was often called Quarantine Landing.

WATERING PLACE. The present Tompkinsville (See Springs, Ponds and Swamps.)

THE BASIN. At the foot of Clinton Street, Stapleton. Walling, 1859. Beers, 1874. A well-known locality. The present docks extend much further into the bay, and the old Basin has in consequence lost its importance.

MERRY'S WELL. Capt. Merry lived on Beach Street, Stapleton, a number of years ago, and on his grounds, near the road, there was a very fine old well from which the neighbors were in the habit of drawing water.

SIGNAL HOUSE. Located at the Narrows. Bew, 1781. Also called the Look Out.

FLAG STAFF. Located at the Narrows on map of 1797. Same as Signal House. Bayles, p. 209. Clute, pp. 20, 113.

THE TELEGRAPH. Same as Signal House and Flag Staff. Bayles, p. 241. Smith, 1836. Capt. Barnett's house is mentioned in advertisement in *Richmond Republican*, Feb'y 23d, 1828, as "on the bank of the river about a half mile north of the Telegraph at Fort Richmond, and about 20 minutes' walk from the Quarantine Ground." The Telegraph is mentioned by Thoreau in letter of July 21st, 1843, and pictured on an old print of about the same date. "Clifton and Telegraph Stage" is advertised in *Staten Islander* during 1856 and 1857.

ELM TREE. A large tree that stood at the foot of New Dorp Lane, from which the present Elm Tree Light was named. On the map of 1797 is the following indorsement: "Large Elm tree standing by the shore, a mark for vessels leaving and going from New York to Amboy, Middletown and Brunswick." Elm Tree, with a picture of a tree, is given both by Smith, 1836, and Dripps, 1850. Old Elm Tree

"where the Huguenots landed," is mentioned by Thoreau, letter of July 21st, 1843.

THREE ELMS. On South Beach, northeast of the Elm Tree Light. A locality among present-day fishermen. Two of the elms are now dead as a result of the encroachment of the sea. The trees are said to have been planted many years ago by the elder Barnes.

SOUTH BEACH. An old name for the sandy south shore of the Island. The name now includes the summer resort.

SOUTH SIDE OR SOUTH SHORE. South side of the Island. South Side is named as a Post Office in the N. Y. State Manual for 1872. In the Manual for 1873, Sea Side is mentioned in its place and is still the official name of the place.

NORTH SIDE OR NORTH SHORE. North side of the Island. Letters remaining in the North Shore Post Office, J. J. Clute, postmaster, are advertised in the *Staten Islander*, Jan. 10th, 1857. The North Shore post office was situated, at least for a time, in the brick building on the north side of Richmond Terrace, close to the present West New Brighton railroad station. West New Brighton post office is first mentioned in the N. Y. State Manual for 1871.

EAST SHORE. From Brighton Point to the Narrows.

UP SHORE AND DOWN SHORE. The terms "Up Shore" (same as North Shore) and "Down Shore" (same as East Shore) were formerly in common use and are still occasionally employed by the railroad officials. Bayles, p. 3.

WEST QUARTER. Applied to Westfield. The towns were at one time known as West Quarter, South Quarter, North Quarter, and the Manor.

SANDY GROUND. Applied to what is now Rossville and its vicinity.

MANOR OF BENTLEY. The grant of 1,163 acres of land at the southwest end of the Island, now Tottenville, was named after Christopher Billopp's vessel, the "Bentley," in which he sailed around Staten Island in less than twenty-four hours, and thus secured it to the Duke of York. Bayles, p. 102. (See Bentley Post Office and Arentsville.)

THE MANOR. Same as Cassiltown, Castle Town, or the later corrupted Castleton. The Manor of Castletown was the name of Gov. Dongan's country seat on the Island, and was called after the place of residence of the family in Comty Kildare, Ireland. The present Manor Road leads through a portion of the old Manor possessions. Bayles, pp. 95, 118, 261, 326.

DONGAN CEDARS OR DONGAN WOODS. Near Four Corners. Clute, p. 122.

THE CAVE. A hole in the Serpentine Rock nearly opposite to the point where the Little Clove Road joins the Turnpike. It was dug by Housman and his negro servant shortly after the Revolution, in their search for gold.

TANGLE-WOOD. An old name for the tangled growth of bushes, young trees and cat-brier, on the westerly side of Bard Avenue, where it is crossed by Castleton Avenue. Part of this growth still remains on the southwest corner.

THE CAUSEWAY. Constructed over Pabner's Run and connecting Castleton and Northfield. The Shore Road at the Causeway formerly ran several yards further north, where Bodine's lumber yard is now situated. Walling, 1859. In 1774 when the road from "Darby Doyle's ferry to Elizabeth Town Point" was laid out it was stated that it should go "over the Mill Dam as the Road now runs to the Dutch Church."

THE DIKE. The embankment on which the Shore Road passes over the meadow lying between Sailors' Snug Harbor and Livingston. Logan's Spring or Harbor Brook runs through this dike.

LONG DIKE. Extending from Bowman's Point toward the Corner Stake Light at the mouth of Newark Bay.

OLD FRESH KILLS BRIDGE. Also known as Plank Road Bridge, Draw Bridge (Walling, 1859), Garretson's Bridge and Long Bridge. In December, 1856, an advertisement appeared in the *Staten Islander*, stating that "the bridges and the causeway over the Fresh Kills Creek and Meadows from the Fresh Kills to DePuy's Corner at Springville" would be sold at public auction on the 20th of the month. In the issue of Dec. 31st, 1856, under the heading of "That Bridge," appears the following: "The Pt. Richmond and Fresh Kills Plank Road Bridge, which was recently offered to the county for \$2,000 has been sold at auction to Mr. Jacob Garretson, for six hundred and one dollars." Mr. Jacob C. Garretson subsequently offered (*Staten Islander*, Jan. 3d, 1856) to place the bridge and causeways leading thereto in good condition, provided the towns of Northfield and Westfield would each pay \$633.33. (See Church Road and Garretson's Road.) The County has recently had a new bridge built on the site of the old one.

THE BEND. A bend in the Shore Road (Richmond Terrace) between Davis and Bement Avenues.

IRON MINES. Located principally on Ocean Hill, near Ocean Terrace Road, and on Todt Hill near Todt Hill Road.

FOUR CORNERS IRON MINES. Just east of Jewett Avenue, near the Turnpike. The abandoned diggings, now filled with water, are known as the "Iron Mine Ponds."

CLAY BEDS. At various places on both sides of Fresh Kills Road at Kreischerville and Green Ridge. There are also clay beds on the Prince's Bay side of the Island.

OLD FORTS. The Dutch had their block-house at the Narrows; Washington his lookout, from whence came the tidings that the British fleet was near; the British their earth-works, and lastly the Union its more massive forts. A part of this eminence was once known as

"Little Fort Hill." Many earth-works were thrown up along the shores of the Island, by the British, in the days of the Revolution. Fifteen of these redoubts have been located, and all but four have disappeared. One is near Richmond, another on Pavilion Hill and two others still on Fort Hill overlooking New York Bay.

THE FORT. The name usually applied to the United States fortifications at the Narrows. Blood, 1845, shows forts Richmond and Tompkins located on the State Land; Walling, 1859, forts Richmond and Tompkins, and battery Hudson; and Beers, 1874, forts Tompkins and Wadsworth.

STATE LAND. At the Narrows. Where the United States fortifications are now located. State Land is shown by Blood, 1845. Also at Prince's Bay.

BURNT HOUSE. On the edge of the meadow at Great Fresh Kill and southwest of Lake's Meadow Island. The ruins of the Burnt House were plainly in sight from the Kill, and were for many years a land mark among boatmen. "Burnt House" is shown by Dripps, 1850.

BLEAK HOUSE. A nickname for the Livingston residence, now the railroad station at Livingston. It was so called because of its exposed position.

COMMON WOODS. An old name for a tract of woodland near the Amboy Road and crossed by what is now Prince's Bay Road. Mentioned in old deeds.

COMMONS. At Chelsea. "B'd N. by land of John Simonson, E. and S. by the Commons and W. by Chelsea Road; with house $\frac{1}{4}$ acre." "B'd N. by land of Eder Freeland, E. by land of Charles Mersereau, S. by land of N. J. Egbert and W. by the Commons, 5 acres." Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec. 1890. The open fields near the corner of the Mill Road and New Dorp Lane are locally known as the Commons. (See Sunset Hill.)

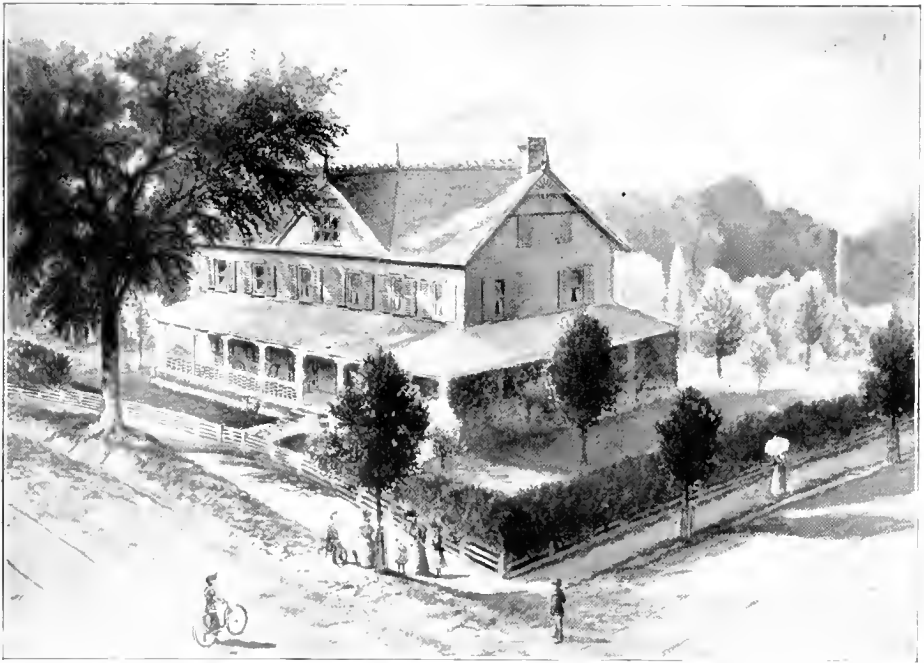
JONES' WOLF-PIT. Abraham Jones owned a farm on what is now known as Jones' Road or Rockland Avenue, and his nearest neighbor lived over on the Willow Brook Road. A path led north-east through the woods to this neighbor's dwelling, and when the families visited in the evening, they were obliged to carry fire-brands to frighten the wolves. Not far from the path, Jones dug a wolf-pit, that may still be seen. In order to entrap the wolves, the pit was covered with dead sticks and leaves, and a piece of meat suspended from an overhanging sapling. The animals would jump for this, and fall through the frail support into the deep hole. The local history states "that in 1698 Thomas Stillwell received fifteen shillings for a wolf, and Cornelius Tysen received one pound for a wolf's head. Different bounties were offered for animals of different sex and age, as was the custom in many counties of the state." Bayles, p. 31. Many years ago, the land was cleared about the Wolf-pit, but it is now covered with woods again and is known on the farm as the "Wolf-pit

Section." There is also the "Big White-wood Section," and the "Fox-hole Section," this last being so named because in old time foxes were in the habit of digging their burrows in this particular part of the wood.

THE SIGNS. A mysterious black dog, as large as a horse, is said to have frequented a place called the "Signs." Bayles, p. 147. This locality is reported to have been at the present Signs Road, near Bull's Head.

HAUNTED WOODS. On Old Town Road. Bayles, p. 147. There was also a Haunted Woods along the Amboy Road. (See Haunted Swamp.)

HAUNTED BRIDGE. On road to Amboy. Bayles, p. 147.



BODINE'S INN, CASTLETON CORNERS, ERECTED ABOUT 1785.
The late residence of Thomas W. Keene.

HAUNTED HOUSE. On the John J. Crooke grounds at Giffords. Named on Dripps' map, 1872.

THE PINES. A local name for a pine grove along the railroad track between Richmond Valley and Tottenville.

THE CEDARS. There are several places known by this name on the Island. One is the hill top near Griswold Avenue, northeast of Silver Lake, a cleared place among the cedars being used as a ball ground; also the upper part of Bement Avenue that once extended through cedars. A third is the Jones' property on Prospect Avenue, New Brighton. Blood, 1845. Walling, 1859. Still another is at Tottenville to the east of Ward's Point.

THE OLD COMP. The name applied in a general way to the country lying between Kreischerville and the Amboy Road.

CAMPS. During the Rebellion the following^{*} camps were located on the Island: Washington, Arthur, Vanderbilt, Yates, Lafayette, Leslie, McClellan, Herndon, Morrison, Low, Ward, Scott, Decker and Sprague.

STONY BROOK SETTLEMENT. Second on the Island, and situated near where the Amboy and Richmond Roads meet.

DOVER. Shown by Bellin, 1764, as occupying the site of what has sometimes been called Stony Brook.

CUCKOLD'S TOWN, CUCKLESTOWNE. Early name of Richmond, the county seat.

SOLDIERS' LOTS. Situated near the Willow Brook (Kruse) and Watchogone Roads. These are among the oldest roads on the Island. The Soldiers' Lots are mentioned in the patent to Palmer in 1687. Bayles, pp. 115, 143. Also mentioned in the Land Papers in connection with the petition of Samuel Blachford. (See Little Plains and Great Plain.)

DUTCH FARMS. Now called Concord. Maps of Concord were filed in County Clerk's office in 1853 and 1861.

NEW LOTS AT THE OLD TOWN. Mentioned in the survey for Abraham Lutine, Land Papers, 1685. At least a part of the New Lots extended along the present Richmond Road, adjacent to where it is joined by the Old Town Road.¹

OUDE DORP OR OLD TOWN. The present Old Town Road leads from the Richmond Road toward the beach, where the original Oude Dorp was situated. Dankers & Snyter state that this settlement consisted of seven houses in 1676. Bayles, pp. 64, 87. Clute, p. 16. Bew, 1781.

NIEUWE DORP OR NEW TOWN. The original New Dorp was located at the foot of New Dorp Lane, near the shore. Its position, as well as that of Old Town, is shown on the oldest maps of the Island. Bayles, p. 87.

GOVERNOR'S LOT. "Description of a survey of 124 acres of land lying at ye New Dorp, on Staten Island formerly called ye Governor's

¹ Some interesting information is contained in the following survey:

"In Obedience to the Command of the Honorable Coll Thomas Dongan Governor General of all his Royall Highnesse Territories in America &c. I have surveyed and laid out for Hane Christophell a Certaine Tract of Land lying in the New Lotts of the old Towne in the County of Richmond being purchased out of a Tract of Land Granted to Poeter Bellew as by a Dutch Ground Breecife beginning on the South west side of a small Run of Water in the Valley of the Iron Hill which is the North West Corner of the first purchase of Thomas Stilwell and runs by his line South East three Degrees East three hundred and twenty Rodd to the Meadow and is in breadth upon a Right angle forty six Rodd and then in

Length by the line of Nathaniel Brittan North West three Degrees West, but the land of Nathaniel Brittan was laid out Northeast and South East but it was by a Compass that Varied three Degrees East ward two hundred sixty four Rodd to the Highway, by the side of the Iron Hill and is in breadth upon a Right Angle forty six Rodd to the South west Corner of the Land of Thomas Stilwell the whole being bounded to the Northeast by the Land of Thomas Stilwell to the South East by the Meadow and South West by the Land of Nathaniel Brittan and Northwest by the Highway by the hill side Containing in all Eighty three acres three Quaraters and thirty two Rodd and likewise to have Meadow Ground proportion able performed this 4th Day of April 1685 by Phillip Welles Surv'r."

lot, laid out for Obadiah Holmes, by Ro. Ryder Surveyor." Land Papers, 1677.

VALLEY FORGE. On the Fresh Kills Road, between Rossville and Green Ridge. The LaForge farm lies on the westerly side of Swain's or LaForge's Lane, which meets the Fresh Kills Road in a pleasant little valley through which flows Killifish Brook to the meadows. The last part of the name LaForge and the valley suggested the historic name of Valley Forge, which thus came to be applied to a vale on Staten Island.

FRESH KILLS. The present Green Ridge.

MARSHLAND OR MARSHFIELD. Same as Fresh Kills or Green Ridge. Marshland Post Office is mentioned in the N. Y. State Manual for 1874; in 1876 Green Ridge had taken its place.

KLEINE KILL. An old name for Marshland or Green Ridge, meaning the Little River. Proceedings Nat. Sci. Association, Vol. III., p. 53.

LONG NECK VILLAGE. Walling, 1859. Now Linoleumville and Travisville. Long Neck Post Office is named in the N. Y. State Manual for many years, but was discontinued in 1866.

KARLE'S OR CHARLES' NECK SETTLEMENT. The present New Springville. Bayles, p. 579. Smith, 1836.

HOLLAND'S HOOK VILLAGE. Corrupted into Hollin's or Howland's Hook. On the shore, west of Mariners' Harbor. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859. Clute, pp. 181, 233. "Hollandshook" is mentioned in advertisement in the *Richmond Republican*, June 18, 1829, and the *Mirror*, Sept. 8, 1838.

JACKSONVILLE. This was a name for Holland's Hook. It was the intention of a syndicate in 1828 to make it a summer resort. The project was killed by the panic that followed that period.

OLD PLACE. Situated in Northfield, on what was once called Tmussen's Neck, between Tmussen's or Old Place Creek and Bridge Creek. The name arose in this way: Religious services were once held in a house along the road, but the structure becoming dilapidated a new place was selected, which, however proved to be less convenient, so the earlier building was repaired and services were resumed at the "old place." Old Place, or more properly that portion of it now known as Summerville, was once called Skunk Town. Fortune Crocheron, who had been a slave, made a business of catching skunks and extracting the grease, which was sold as a cure for croup. After his death, the place gradually lost this name.

SUMMERVILLE. A proposed name for Old Place. Clute, p. 234. Summerville is located in Beers' Atlas, at the corner of Washington Avenue and the Harbor Road. Old Place is also shown further to the west.

WATCHOGUE. Situated a mile south of Old Place. Owing to the similarity of the name Watchogue to the Long Island town of Pat-

chogue it has been thought that like the latter, it was of Indian origin. This, however, is a mistake, and the original name, which was Watch Oak, was acquired in the following way: The hamlet was first called Merrill Town, owing to the number of families of that name living in the vicinity. Among them was Isaac Merrill, who owned a large farm, a portion of which was covered with oak timber. A man by the name of Brunsen was a neighbor of Merrill's. He was a smart man and is said to have been most clever in defending himself in court, in which, for one reason and another, he had considerable practice. Among other accomplishments, he could write with both hands at once, and, when he thought no one was looking, he could steal Merrill's oak trees as well. This was known to Merrill, and when a neighbor called one day and asked for a certain farm hand, Merrill told him he was out "watching oaks." The Merrill farm was called in time "Watch Oak Farm"—the place where they watched the oaks. This has been corrupted into Watchogue, and this, finally, changed to Bloomfield. According to Beers, 1874, the "Watch Oak Road" leads from Chelsea to Bloomfield. Clute (p. 228) maintains that this name is of Indian origin.

BUTCHERVILLE. On the Watchogue, Butcherville, or Snake Road, between the Willow Brook and the Stone Roads. Butcherville Road is mentioned in Adv. State Tax Sale, Dec., 1890.

GRANITE VILLAGE. Located in Northfield. Dripps, 1850. Higginson, 1860. Graniteville. Walling, 1859.

CENTERVILLE. Old name for Castleton Corners. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859. Higginson, 1860.

FOUR CORNERS. Same as Castleton Corners. Castleton Corners Post Office is first mentioned in the N. Y. State Mannal for 1872.

ROBBINS' CORNERS. At New Springville, where the Stone Road meets Poverty Lane. The residence of Nathaniel Robbins, a notorious character during the War of the Revolution.

MORGAN'S CORNER. The present Egbertville was known by that name in 1838, according to an advertisement in a local paper. The hamlet known as Morganville to-day is located on the Manor Road about half a mile north of Egbertville.

PHOENIXVILLE. A name for Bull's Head. Beers, 1874. Clute, p. 231.

LONDON BRIDGE. A name for Bull's Head during the Revolution. Clute, p. 231. Also mentioned in notice of Sheriff's Sale in *Staaten Islander*, Jan. 25, 1854.

BRISTOL OR NEW BRISTOL. Old name for Port Richmond. Clute, p. 221. In the *Mirror*, March 17th, 1838, there is an article on the improvement at "Mersereau's Ferry or New Bristol." New Bristol is shown by Burr, 1852. Cyrene is said to have been a proposed name for Port Richmond. The name "Port Richmond" was given to the place by the late Rev. Dr. James Brownlee.

IRRINGTON. Map of land at Irrington or Mersereau's Ferry, Staten Island, Filed Aug. 6, 1842. No. 28.

CITYVILLE. The Cityville post office was located at Factoryville (West New Brighton) as appears by the following heads of notices published by the same postmaster: "List of Letters remaining in the City Ville Post Office, June 30th, 1835." D. V. N. Mersereau, P. M. *Free Press*, July 11th, 1835. "List of Letters remaining in the Post Office at Factoryville, Sept. 30th, 1835." D. V. N. Mersereau, P. M. *Free Press*, Oct. 10th, 1835. On the 1st of January, 1839, Nathan Barrett, postmaster, published in the *Mirror*, a list of letters remaining in the Cityville Post Office. (See North Shore.) Cityville is shown by Burr, 1852.

FACTORYVILLE. West New Brighton. Map of the Village of Factoryville, owned and laid out by N. Barrett. Town of Castleton, S. I. Filed Aug. 20th, 1836. Factoryville or Castleton is given by Dripps, 1850. The steamboat landing at Factoryville was called Castleton Landing. Walling, 1859. Higginson, 1860. Bayles, p. 264.

ELLIOTTVILLE. Foot of Bard Avenue; the present Livingston. Dripps, 1850. Dripps, 1872. Named after Dr. S. M. Elliott, oculist. On Walling's map of 1859 there is a bird's eye view of Elliottville.

SOUTH ELLIOTTVILLE. On Bard Avenue, south of Castleton Avenue. Walling, 1859.

BRIGHTON PARK. Placed between Franklin and York Avenues by Higginson, 1860. This property is commonly spoken of as Hamilton Park. Beers, 1874.

JACKSON PARK. Corner of Franklin Avenue and Third Street, New Brighton.

FIEDLER'S PARK. On the Turnpike, near Pavilion Hill. Dripps, 1872.

BAY CITY. Map of the proposed village of Bay City, including Tompkinsville and Stapleton, was filed 15th February, 1859. No. 164.

WASHINGTON SQUARE. The park at Stapleton. Map filed June 5th, 1867.

PROSPECT SQUARE. At Stone Street and the Richmond Road, Middletown.

BAY VIEW POST OFFICE. At Clifton. Named in the N. Y. State Manuals from 1858 to 1863 inclusive, after which it was discontinued. Joseph Feeny was postmaster in 1858 and James Kelly for the succeeding five years.

NEW-BERRY VILLE. Near Concord and traversed by the track of the Staten Island Railroad. Map of New-Berry Ville filed June 3d, 1853 (No. 113), showing Military Parade Ground and Columbian Park as portions of the property.

CLIFTON PARK OR PAGODA. At the head of Simonson Avenue, Clifton. Shown on map of New-Berry Ville, filed June 3d, 1853. The park is shown by Walling, 1859. "Simpson Gordon, Florist, &c., Vanderbilt Ave. near the Pagoda," advertises.

OAKLANDS. At New York Avenue, Tompkins Avenue and the Finger Board Road. "Clifton Avenue or Finger Board Road" is shown on the map filed Dec. 21st, 1857.

LINDEN PARK. Between the Old Town Road and Garretsons. The old Burgher farm.

GRAND VIEW PARK ON CASTLETON HEIGHTS. Along the Todt Hill Road, Middletown. On map filed Dec. 22d, 1869, the Todt Hill Road is called Grand View Avenue, and Hillside, Crown Point, Park Place and Annfield Place are given as names for sections of the property.

OCEAN VIEW. On the Richmond Road near Grant City. The Samuel Barton farm. An Ocean View of later date, is at Giffords.

RICHMOND PARK. On the Richmond Road between Egbertville and Richmond. Dripps, 1872.

SEA VIEW PARK. The Sea View Park Association owned the one half mile race course near the present New Dorp railroad station. Beers, 1874. There was also another race course at the foot of New Dorp Lane. The old Fair Grounds.

OCEANVILLE. At New Dorp Lane. Map filed April 19th, 1853.

OCEANA. At New Dorp Lane, near the shore. Dripps, 1850. Higginson, 1860.

CEDAR GROVE. Near Oceana, at the foot of New Dorp Lane. Dripps, 1850. Higginson, 1860. Dripps, 1872.

COURT HOUSE. Old name for the railroad station at Oakwood.

NEWTON. The present Giffords. Dripps, 1850. Higginson 1860.

CLARENDON. Near the shore at Great Kill. Shown as a locality by Higginson, 1860. Dripps, 1850, gives Clarendon as the residence of E. R. Bennet; the White House, as the residence of W. H. Vanderbilt; Huguenot Farm, as the residence of Dr. E. Clark; Mooreland, as the residence of T. W. C. Moore; Wheat Sheaf Farm, as the residence of W. A. Seely; Hay Hill, as the residence of C. E. Leveridge; and Oakland, as the residence of the landscape architect Frederick Law Olmsted. All of these farms were on the South Side, from New Dorp Lane to the present Eltingville.

LEMON CREEK POST OFFICE. Mentioned in the N. Y. State Manual for 1859. In 1861 Prince's Bay Post Office had taken its place.

HAWTHORNE PLACE. Near the shore at Red Bank and west of the Prince's Bay light house. Shown as a locality by Dripps, 1850.

ALGERNON. "Map of the Staten Island North and South Shore Railroad." Filed Jan. 9, 1883, No. 394. The terminal station of this proposed railroad, at the shore near Eltingville.

UNCLE NICK LOT. "Subdivisions of the Uncle Nick Lot, Annadale, S. I. Property of Mrs. Anna S. Segnine."

BLOOMING VIEW. The present Huguenot. Colton, 1846. Dripps, 1850. Walling, 1859. Bayles, p. 436. It is possible that what is sometimes called the Bloomingdale Road (now Rossville Road) should be

Bloomingview Road, but the first mentioned name is the one said to have been in use.

UNIONVILLE. Between Tottenville and the Billopp House.

BENTLEY. A name for the post office, at what is now called Tottenville. The N. Y. State Manual mentions Bentley Post Office in 1861; in 1862, Tottenville is named in its place.

ARENTSVILLE. A proposed name for Tottenville. The "*Arents-ville Times*" was published for a short time.

BIDDLE GROVE. At Tottenville. Map of the Biddle Grove Property. Filed June 30th, 1870. Beers, 1874.

CHARLESTOWN. A name for Kreischerville.

ANDROVETTEVILLE. A name for Kreischerville. The place is the residence of many members of the old Staten Island Huguenot family of Androvette. "Androvettetown is beautifully located near the margin of the river. It contains a mine of wealth both as regards purity of clay and pretty ladies." *Staten Islander*, March 8th, 1856.

ALLEN OR VAN ALLEN TOWN. The southern part of Kreischerville on Van Allen Hill. Named after the Van Allen family. An effort is being made to change the name of that part of the Fresh Kills Road which extends from Van Allen Town to Tottenville, to River Side Avenue.

BOGARDUS CORNERS. At Woodrow, where the Woodrow Road and the Rossville Road meet. Named after Charles Bogardus, Sr.

POMONA GROVE. At Grove Avenue, Port Richmond. Map filed Nov. 19th, 1869.

LOWVILLE. At Cedar Street and Granite Street, Elm Park, Northfield. Named after Daniel Low. Map filed June 28th, 1849. No. 63.

THE PARK. A local name including the dwellings facing Port Richmond Park.

TUXEDO. A nickname for a part of New Brighton; the end of Brighton Avenue, &c. A part of the Duck Pond district.

RAG-PICKER'S ROW. Several small houses on Minthorne Street, Tompkinsville, received this nickname many years ago. The corner one was occupied by Thomas Clark and in consequence of its position was known as Clark's Point.

THE NOOK. Angle formed by the meeting of Quin and Harrison Streets, Stapleton.

BATTLE ROW. A nickname for McKeon Street, Stapleton.

THE LAWN. A local name for the large field at the corner of Vanderbilt Avenue and Bay Street, Stapleton. Sometimes called Vanderbilt's Lawn, after its owner.

CARROLL TOWN. Five or six small dwellings in a wooded hollow on Tompkins Avenue, and the present railroad track between Fort Wadsworth and Arrochar stations. Named after "Mattie" Carroll, a carter.

THE GOOSE PATCH. The open field between Westervelt Avenue and Jersey Street, New Brighton, now traversed by Crescent Street.

SILENT VILLAGE. For a number of years there were only a few small houses at the top of Davis Avenue, West New Brighton, and the settlement received the name of the Silent Village.

THE COTTAGES. Some years ago, a number of small dwellings were built near the corner of Lafayette Avenue and the present Second Street, New Brighton, and the vicinity became known as "The Cottages." Later the neighborhood grew more wealthy, better dwellings were erected, including the Village Hall, and the district in consequence changed its name to "The Capital." "New Brighton Cottages" are located on Blood's map, 1845.

THE ORCHARD. A district of West New Brighton traversed by Barker Street. It was probably the site of Gov. Dongan's orchard. The hill side (See Cork Hill) occupied by Gov. Tompkins' orchard, was known by the same name.

WAPP'S PARK. A play ground bounded in part by Prospect, Bement and Burger Avenues, West New Brighton.

YELLOW ROW. A number of squalid yellow painted houses, on the west side of Broadway, near the Dye Works, West New Brighton, were once known as the Yellow Row.

CORK TOWN. A portion of West New Brighton village.

DECKER TOWN. A nickname for Travisville, because so many people by the name of Decker reside in the place.

JUMPING-OFF PLACE. A nickname for the end of the Shore Road at the Bluff, at Holland's Hook.

MERRILL TOWN. An old name for Bloomfield. (Watchogue.)

NEW PARIS OR FRENCH TOWN. Nickname given to Grant City because so many French families reside there. This place has been misnamed Grand City on the railroad time tables for the past few years. There was a sign near the railroad track several years ago, that read "Grand City." In Beer's Atlas, Grant City is also called Ocean View. This is, however, an error, Ocean View being the name of adjacent property.

SEAMAN TOWN. A nickname for a row of houses in Richmond Village.

PARADISE OR THE GARDEN OF EDEN. Where Tompkins Avenue crosses Richmond Avenue, Clifton.

TIPPERARY CORNERS, NEW DUBLIN OR YOUNG IRELAND. Nicknames for Egbertville.

AFRICA OR LITTLE AFRICA, SANDY GROUND, HARRISVILLE. Africa is a nickname for a negro settlement, near the Rossville Road, Westfield. Harrisville is the official name of the place. "At Harrisville, W. of Rossville road, b'd N. by lands of P. A. Ash, E. by lands of R. H. or Robert Dixon, S. by lands of Thomas Jefferson or Leven Purnell and W. by lands of Aaron Close."

FIDDLER'S GREEN. A nickname of a small district on Journeay Avenue, not far from Green Ridge. It was the residence of Reynolds, the fiddler.

THE PLAINS. A local name for Pleasant Plains, Westfield.





